PAMELA;

OR,

VIRTUE Rewarded.

In a SERIES of

FAMILIAR LETTERS

FROM A

Beautiful Young DAMSEL

To her PARENTS:

And afterwards,

In her EXALTED CONDITION,
BETWEEN

HER, and Persons of Figure and Quality,

Important and Entertaining Subjects,
In GENTEEL LIFE.

Published in order to cultivate the Principles of VIRTUE and RELIGION in the Minds of the YOUTHS of BOTH SEXES.

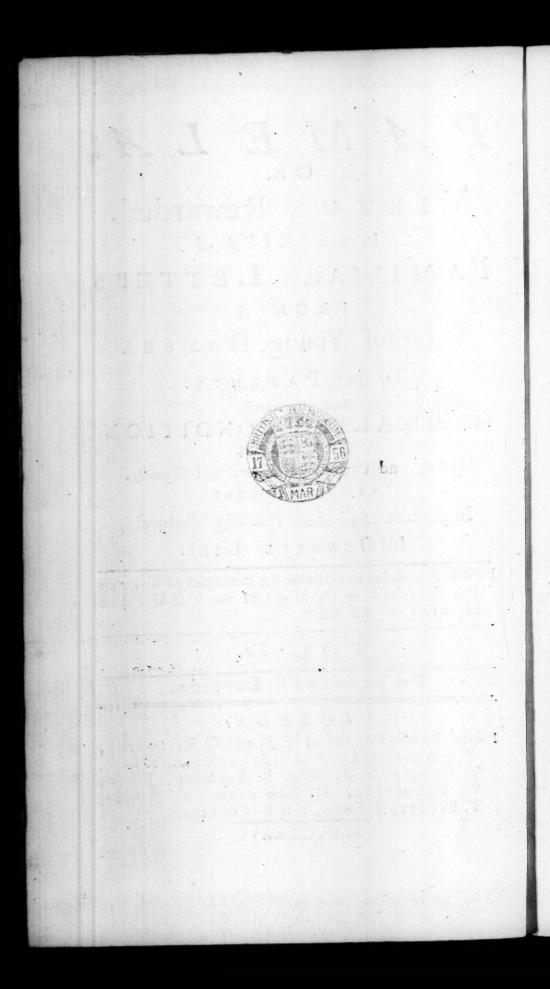
VOL. IV.

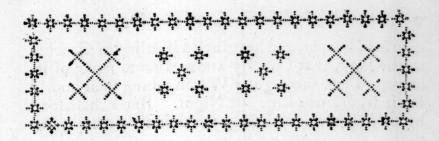
The ELEVENTH EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for W. Strahan, J. F. and C. Rivington, W. Johnston, T. Caslon, S. Crowder, B. Law, T. Cadell, S. Bladon, R. Baldwin, J. Bew, W. Goldsmith, G. Robinson, T. Davies, T. Becket, J. Knox, and B. Collins.

M.DCC.LXXVI.





PAMELA;

OR,

VIRTUE Rewarded.

In a Series of FAMILIAR LETTERS.

VOL. IV.

LETTER I.

My Dear Father and Mother,

KNOW you will be pleased to hear that we arrived safely in Town last I was Night. We found a stately, well-furnish'd, and convenient House; and I had my Closet or Library, and my Withdrawing-room, all in complete Order, which Mr. B. gave me Possession of, in a Manner the most obliging that can be imagined.

I am in a new World, as I may fay, and fee fuch vast Piles of Building every where, and such a Con-Vol IV.

B course course of People, and hear such a Rattling of Coaches in the Day, that I hardly know what to make of it, as yet. Then the nightly Watch, going their hourly Rounds, disturbed me last Night. But I shall soon be us'd to that, and sleep the sounder perhaps, for

the Security it affures to us.

Mr. B. is impatient to shew me what is curious in and about this vast City; and to hear, as he is pleased to say, my Observations upon what I shall see; and he has carried me thro' several of the sine Streets this day, in his Chariot: But, at present, I have too confused a Notion of things, to give any Account of them: Nor shall I trouble you with Descriptions of that kind; for you being within a Day's Journey of London, I hope for the Pleasure of seeing you oftener than I could expect before; and shall therefore leave these Matters to your own Observations, and what you'll hear from others.

I am impatient for the Arrival of my dear Miss Darnford; whose Company and Conversation will reconcile me, in a great Measure, to this new World.

Our Family at present, are Colbrand, Jonathan, and six Men-servants, including the Coachman.

The four Maids are also with us.

But my good Mrs. Fervis was indisposed, so came not up with us; but we expect her and Mr. Longman in a Day or two: For Mr. B. has given her to my Wishes: And as Mr. Longman's Business will require him to be up and down frequently, Mrs. Fervis's Care will be the better dispens'd with; and I long to see the dear good Woman, and shall be more in my Element, when I do.

Then I have, besides, my penitent Polly Barlow: But the poor Girl has never held up her Head since that deplorable Instance of her Weakness, which I mentioned to you and to Miss Darnford; yet am I as kind to her as if nothing had happened. I wish, however, some good Husband would offer for her.

Mr.

Mr. Adams, our worthy Chaplain, is, at present, with Mr. Williams. He purposes to give us his Company here till Christmas, when, probably, Matters will be so adjusted, as that he may take Possession of his Living. Mean time, that we may not let fall a good Custom, when perhaps we shall have most Occasion for it, I make Jonathan, who is reverend by his Years, and silver Hairs, supply his Place, appointing him the Prayers he is to read.

God preserve you both in Health, and continue to me, I beseech you, your Prayers and Blessings,

concludes me

Your ever dutiful Daughter,

P. B.

LETTER II.

From Mrs. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My dearest Lady,

l

:

MUST beg Pardon, for having been in this great Town more than a Week, and not having found an Opportunity to tender my Devoirs to your Ladyship. You know, dear Madam, what Hurries and Fatigues must attend such a Journey, to one in my way, and in an intire new Settlement, in which an hundred things must be done, and attended to, with a Preference to other Occasions, however delightful. Yet, I must own, we found a stately, a well-order'd, and a convenient House: But altho' it is not far from the Fields, and has an airy opening to its back Part, and its Front to a Square, as it is called, yet I am not reconcil'd to it, so intirely as to the beloved Mansion we lest.

My dear Mr. B. has been, and is, bufily employed in ordering fome few Alterations, to make things still more commodious. He has furnish'd me out a little pretty Library; and has allotted me very convenient Apartments besides: And the Furniture of every Place is rich, as besits the Mind and Fortune of the generous Owner. But I shall not offer at Particulars, because we hope to have the Honour of a Visit from my good Lord, and your Ladyship, before the Winter Weather sets in, to make the Roads too dirty and deep; but it is proper to mention, that the House is so large, that we can make a great Number of Beds, the more conveniently to receive the Honours your Ladyship, and my Lord,

and Mr. B.'s other Friends will do us.

I have not yet been at any of the publick Diverfions. Mr. B. has carry'd me, by gentle Turns, out of his Workmens Way, ten. Miles round this over-grown Capital, and thro' the principal of its numerous Streets. The Villages, that lie spangled about this vast Circumference, as well on the other Side the noble Thames, (which I had before a Notion of, from Sir John Denham's celebrated Cooper's Hill) as on the Middlefex Side, are beautiful, both by Buildings and Situation, beyond what I had imagined, and feveral of them feem larger than many of our Country Towns of Note. But it would be impertinent to trouble your Ladyship with these Matters, who are no Stranger to what is worthy of Notice in London. But I was furpris'd, when Mr. B. observed to me, that this whole County, and the two Cities of London and Westminster, are represented by no more than eight Members of Parliament, when so many Borough Towns in England are inferior to the meanest Villages about London.

I am in daily Expectation of the Arrival of Miss Darnford, and then I shall wish (accompanied by a young Lady of so polite a Taste) to see a good Play.

Mr. B. has already shewn me the Opera-house, and the two Play-houses, tho' silent, as I may say; that, as he was pleased to observe, they should not be new to me, and that the Sight might not take off my Attention to the Performance, when I went to the Play: So that I can conceive a tolerable Notion of every thing, from the Disposition of the Seats, the Boxes, the Galleries, the Pit, the Musick, the Scenes, and the Stage; and so shall have no Occasion to gaze about me like a Country Novice, whereby I might attract a Notice, that I should not wish, either for my own Credit, or your dear Brother's Honour.

I have had a Pleasure, which I had not in Bedfordshire; and that is, that on Sunday I was at Church, without gaping Crowds to attend us, and Blessings too loud for my Wishes. Yet, I was more gazed at, (and so was Mr. B.) than I expected, considering there were so many well-dress'd Gentry, and some Nobility there; and they star'd as much as any body; but will not do so, I hope, when we cease to be a

Novelty.

d

a

-

of

le

at

of

,

le

1-

a

O

ı,

r-

S,

19

ts

ed

er

0-

2'5

oy

a-

ny

be

efe

of

Ir.

he

ed

nt,

fe-

iss

y a

ly.

Ir.

We have already had several Visitors to welcome Mr. B. to Town, and to congratulate him on his Marriage;—but some, no doubt, to see, and to find Fault with, his Rustick; for it is impossible, you know, Madam, that a Gentleman so distinguish'd by his Merit and Fortune, should have taken a Step of such Consequence to himself and Family, and not be known by every body so to have done.

Sir Thomas Atkyns is in Town, and has taken Apartments in the new-built stately Pile of Edifices, called Hanover-square; and he brought with him a younger Brother of Mr. Arthur's, who, it seems, is

a Merchant.

Lord F. has been to pay his Respects to Mr. B. likewise, whose School-sellow he was at Eaton, the little time Mr. B. was there. His Lordship promises, that his Lady shall make me a Visit, and B 3 accompany

accompany me to the Opera, as foon as we are fully fettled.

A gentleman of the Temple, Mr. Turner by Name, and Mr. Fanshaw of Gray's-Inn, both Lawyers, and of Mr. B.'s former Acquaintance, very sprightly and modish Gentlemen, have also welcom'd us to Town, and made Mr. B. abundance of gay Compliments on my account to my Face, all in the common frothy Run.

They may be polite Gentlemen, but I can't fay I over-much like them. There is fomething fo forward, so opinionated, so seemingly insensible of Rebuke, either from within or without, and yet not promising to avoid deserving one occasionally, that I could as lieve wish Mr. B. and they would not re-

new their former Acquaintance.

I am very bold, your Ladyship will say—But you command me to write freely: Yet I would not be thought to be uneasy, with regard to your dear Brother's Morals, from these Gentlemen; for, Oh, Madam, I am a blessed Creature, and am hourly happier and happier in the Considence I have as to that Particular: But I imagine they will force themselves upon him, more than he himself may wish, or would permit, were the Acquaintance now to begin; for they are not of his Turn of Mind, as it seems to me; being, by a Sentence or two that dropt from them, very free, and very frothy, in their Conversation; and by their laughing at what they say themselves, taking that for Wit, which will not stand the Test, if I may be allow'd to say so.

But they have heard, no doubt, what a Person Mr. B,'s Goodness to me, has lifted into Notice; and they think themselves warranted to say any

thing before his Country Girl.

He was pleased to ask me, when they were gone, How I liked his two Lawyers? And said, they were Persons of Family and Fortune.

I am

I am glad of it, Sir, said I; for their own own sakes.

Then you don't approve of them, Pamela?

They are your Friends, Sir; and I cannot have any diflike to them.

They say good things sometimes, returned he.

I don't doubt it; Sir: But you say good things always.

'Tis happy for me, my Dear, you think so. But

tell me, What think you of 'em?

I shall be better able, Sir, to answer your Ques-

tion, if I see them a second Time.

But we form Notions of Persons at first Sight, sometimes, my Dear; and you are seldom mistaken in yours.

I only think, Sir, that they have neither of them any Diffidence: But their Profession, perhaps, may

fet them above that.

They don't practife, my Dear; their Fortunes enable them to live without it; and they are too studious of their Pleasures, to give themselves any Trouble they are not obliged to take.

They feem to me, Sir, to be qualified for Practice: They would make great Figures at the Bar, I

fancy.

Why fo?

Only, because they seem prepared to think well of what they shall say themselves; and lightly of what

other People fay, or may think of them

That indeed, my Dear, is the necessary Qualification of a publick Speaker, be he Lawyer, or what he will: The Man who cannot doubt himself, and can think meanly of his Auditors, never fails to speak with Self-applause at least.

But you'll pardon me, good Sir, for speaking my Mind so freely, and so early, of these your Friends.

I never, my Love, ask you a Question, I wish you not to answer; and always expect your Answer should be without Reserve; for many times I may ask your Opinion, as a Corrective or a Confirmation

of my own Judgment.

How kind, how indulgent was this, my good Lady? But you know, how generously your dear Brother treats me, on all Occasions; and this makes me so bold as I often am.

It may be necessary, my dear Lady, to give you an Account of our Visitors, in order to make the future Parts of my Writing the more intelligible; because what I may have to write may turn sometimes upon the Company we see: For which Reason, I shall also just mention Sir George Stuart, a Scottish Gentleman, with whom Mr. B. came acquainted in his Travels, who seems to be a polite, and (Mr. B. says, is) a learned Man, and a Virtuoso: He, and a Nephew of his, of the same Name, a bashful Gentleman, and who, for that Reason, I imagine, has a Merit that lies deeper than a first Observation can reach, are just gone from us, and were received with so much Civility by Mr. B. as intitles them to my respectful Regard.

Thus, Madam, do I run on, in a manner, without Materials; and only to shew you the Pleasure I take in obeying you. I hope my good Lord Davers enjoys his Health, and continues me in his Favour; which I value extremely, as well as your Ladyship's. Mr. H. I hope, likewise enjoys his Health. But let me not forget my particular and thankful Respects to the Countess, for her Ladyship's Favour and goodness to me, which I shall ever place next, in my grateful Esteem, to the Honours I have received from your Ladyship on so many Occasions; and which bind me to be, with the greatest Respect,

my dear Lady,

Your faithful and obliged Servant,

P. B.

LETTER III.

My dear Father and Mother,

Advice in a particular Dispute, which is the only one I have had, or I hope ever shall have, with my dear Benefactor; and as he is pleased to insist upon his Way, and it is a Point of Conscience with me, I must resolve to be determin'd by your joint Advice; for, if my Father and Mother, and Husband, are of one Opinion, I must, I think, yield up my own:

This is the Subject: — I think a Mother ought, if she can, to be the Nurse to her own Children.

Mr. B. fays, he will not permit it.

It is the first will not I have heard from him, or given Occasion for: And I tell him, that as it is a Point of Conscience with me, I hope he will indulge me: But the dear Gentleman has an odd way of arguing, that sometimes puzzles me. He pretends to answer me from Scripture; but I have some Doubts of bis Exposition; and he gives me Leave to write to you, though yet he won't promise to be determined by your Opinions, if they are not the same with his own; and I say to him, Is this fair, my dearest Mr. B.? Is it?

He has got the Dean's Opinion with him; for our Debate began before we came to Town: But then he would not let me state the Case; but did it himself; and yet 'tis but an half Opinion, as I may say, neither. For it is, that if the Husband is set

upon it, it is a Wife's Duty to obey.

But I can't see how that is; for if it be the natural Duty of a Mother, it is a Divine Duty; and how can a Husband have Power to discharge a Divine Duty?—As great as a Wise's Obligation is to obey

obey her Husband, which is, I own, one Indispensable of the Marriage Contract, it ought not to interfere with what one takes to be a superior Duty: And must not one be one's own Judge of Actions, by which we must stand or sall?

I'll tell you my Plea:

I say, that where a Mother is unhealthy; subject to communicative Distempers, as scrophulous, or scorbutick, or consumptive Disorders, which have infected the Blood or Lungs; or where they have not Plenty of Nourishment for the Child, as, I have heard, is the Case of some; that in these Cases, a Dispensation lies of Course.

But where there is good Health, free Spirits, and plentiful Nourishment; I think it an indispen-

fable Duty.

For this was the Custom, of old, of all the good Wives we read of in Scripture.

Then the Nourishment of the Mother must be most natural to the Child.

Then a Nurse may have a bad Husband, may have Distempers, may have private Vices, as to Liquors, &c. may be careless, and a Selflover; while a Mother prefers the Health of her Child to her own private Satisfactions, or

Appetites.

A Nurse may be of a fordid Nature; and when I have heard Mr. B. so satirical on Lords and Gentleman in Coach-boxes, why may not Charity make one think, that the Lady of the Family was innocent of sordid and unpardonable Crimes, imputed by severe Judges; and that the Child when grown up, owes its Taste to the Coach-box, to its Nurse's being the Coachman's Wise, or the Wise of one of like Degree, who may not have a Mind or Qualities above that Degree? For, as the Blood and Spirits are augmented, with the Child's Growth, by the Food

Food it takes in, a fordid Nature may as well be communicated from a found Woman, as bad Health by an unfound, as I should imagine.

Then the Child, by the Designation of Nature, generally brings its Nourishment into the World with it: And Art must be used, as I presume, to dry up the Fountains of such its Nourishment: And is not this quite unnatural? And

is not what is unnatural, finful?

>

r

e

I

e

d

-

d

e

y

3

of

r

I

d

1-

1-

le

at

0

1-

e,

ve

re

ne

bc

Then I have lately read, my Circumstances having made me curious on this Subject, that a newborn Child has, in its little Bowels, a pitchy Substance, that wants to be purged off; and when it is not, occasions those Gripings and Convulsions which destroy so many miserable Infants, (even as one finds by the weekly Bills here in Town) more than half of those who die in Infancy: Whereas Nature has defign'd, it feems, a Cure for this, in the purgative Quality, and fine thin Blueness given to the hrst Milk, which in three Weeks or a Month, or may be less, carries off that pitchy Substance, and gives Freedom and Ease to the Bowels of Babies; which Quality not being in staler Milk, the poor Child often falls a Sacrifice to this Negligence or Inattention; and the Mother's Pains and Hazards are all cast away; and her Griefs, at losing the dear Infant, are much greater than her Joys, at its Birth, when all the Danger was over.

Then, dear Sir, said I, there is another Point respecting the Health of our Sex — Great Hurts to one's Constitution may arise from too frequently being in this Way; and, for my own Part, you have made me so happy, that I cannot help being covetous of Life, if I may so say.—But the Sin, dear Sir, the Sin of committing that Task to others, which is so B 6

right to be performed by one's felf, if one has Health and Strength to perform it, is the chief thing with me; and, you know, Sir, that even a Husband's Will is not sufficient to excuse one from a natural or Divine Obligation.

These were my Pleas, among others: And this is his Answer; for he was so good as to give it me in Writing:

As to what you alledge, my Dear, of old Cuftoms; Times and Fashions are much changed.

· If you tell me of Sarah's, or Rachel's, or Rebekah's.

or Leah's nursing their own Children, I can anfwer, that the one drew Water at a Well, for her

Father's Flocks; another kneaded Cakes, and

baked them on the Hearth for her Guests; another personally dress'd savoury Meat, for her Hus-

band; and all of them performed the common

Offices of the Household: And when our modern

Ladies are willing to follow such Examples in every thing, their Plea ought to be allow'd in this.

As to the Matter of fordid Natures—We read,

that there were among Jacob's twelve Sons, bad as well as good Natures, tho' born of and nursed by,

the fame Mothers; Reuben particularly committed

s an unpardonable Crime: You are too well read in

· Scripture History, to need being told what it was.

• Two others were Murderers, treacherous Mur-• derers, in cold Blood, and how did all their Hearts

burn with fordid and unbrotherly Envy against

their Father's favourite Son?

'Then it requires but the more Care in finding out a wholesome Woman, who has an honest and

good-natur'd Hufband: And, let me tell you,

· Pamela, that the best Natures, and the best Con-

flitutions, (tho' your Case is an Exception) are not always to be met with in High-life; and the less, per-

haps, because they don't exercise themselves as the

· patri-

patriarchal Nurses you hinted at, used to do. Indeed I have feen Spirits, in some of the High-born

of your Sex, that one would not wish to be propagated; but, contrarily, (if there be so much in

the Nature of the Nourishment) I should think it

' matter of Prudence, that the Child should have

any other Nurse than its Mother.

· As to the Nurse's private Vices, with regard to Liquors, Distempers, &c. this will be answered,

by what I have hinted, of the greater Care to be

taken in the Choice of the Nurie. And I am fo well pleased with your Apprehensions of this Na-

ture, that it is a moral Security to me, that you

will make a proper Choice; and I shall be intirely

easy, in committing this Province to so prudent

and discreet a Wife.

IS ef

n e

is

n

[-

S.

-

r d

r

n

n

n

3.

i,

S

d

1

.

S t

t

· I allow, that there is a great deal in what you fay, as to the pitchy Substance in new-born Chil-

dren; and I think it very proper that the Child

· should have the first Milk: But cannot such a

· Nurse be found, as may answer this Intention? -

· If the cannot, I will, provided you deal by me with

· your usual Sincerity, and not make Scruples against

· a Recommendation, on purpose to carry your own

Point, permit you to be your own Nurse for one · Month, or so, if, by the Opinion of proper Judges,

it be found necessary. But then, as I know the

pretty wire-drawing Ways of your Sex, you must

onot so much as ask to go farther; for I shall not care to have my Rest disturbed; and it may not

be quite fo well, perhaps, to lay us under the Ne-

cessity of separate Beds.

Besides, my Fondness for your personal Graces, and the laudable, and, I will fay, honest Pleasure,

· I take in that easy, genteel Form, which every

body admires in you, at first Sight, oblige me to

declare, that I can by no means confent to facri-

· fice these to the Carelessness into which I have

· feen very nice Ladies fink, when they became Nurses. Moreover, my chief Delight in you is

for the Beauties of your Mind; and unequall'd as

they are, in my Opinion, you have still a Genius capable of great Improvement; and I shan't care,

when I want to hear my Pamela read her French

and Latin Lessons, which I take so much Delight to teach her, (and to endeavour to improve my-

felf from her Virtue and Piety, at the same time)

to feek my Beloved, in the Nursery; or to permit

her to be ingross'd by those Baby Offices, which

' will better befit weaker Minds.

No, my Dear, you must allow me to look upon ' you as my Scholar, in one Sense; as my Compa-

· nion, in another; and as my Instructress, in a

' third. You know I am not govern'd by the work

· Motives: I am half overcome by your Virtue; and you must take care, that you leave not your

Work half-done. But I cannot help looking up-

on the Nurse's Office, as an Office beneath my

· Pamela. Let it have your Inspection, your Direction,

and your fole Attention, if you please, when I am · abroad: But when I am at Home, even a Son and

· Heir, so jealous am I of your Affections, shall

onot be my Rival in them: Nor will I have my

· Rest broken in upon, by your Servants bringing to

vou, as you once propos'd, your dear Little-one,

at Times, perhaps, as unsuitable to my Repose, and your own, as to the Child's Necessities; for I

have no Notion of stifling even a Cry, by cram-· ming its little Stomach, when that very Cry shall,

e perhaps, be necessary for Exercise to its Lungs,

and to open its little Organs,

'You have been often somewhat uneasy, when I have talked, for Argument's fake, in favour of

· Polygamy. But when you mention the Defigna-

tions of Nature, and form from thence your

Notions of Duty on this Subject, what will you

fay, if I could, from your very Arguments of this kind, plead for that Practice, and bring all your e good patriarchal Folks on my Side, on whom you · lay fuch Stress, in one Instance?—For Example, · my Dear: Suppose I put you in mind, that while

me

I is

as

IUS

re,

rch

ght

y-

e)

nit

ch

on

a-

a

at

;

ır

-

y

1,

n

d

1

C

• Rachel was giving her Little one all her Attention, as a good Nurse, the worthy Patriarch had several other Wives.—Don't be shock'd, my dearest

Love.—The Laws of one's own Country are a fufficient Objection to me against Polygamy; at

· least, I will not think of any more Wives, till you

convince me, by your Adherence to the Example e given you by the Patriarch Wives, that I ought to

follow those of the Patriarch Husbands.'

So here is that vile Word Polygamy again! Mr. B. knows I had rather he should mention any. Thing than that.—But be fo good as to mind his next Argument: He is pleased to entertain very high Notions (tho' he puts them not in practice; and, indeed I think it my Duty to avoid giving him Occasion for it) of the Prerogative of a Husband. Upon my Word, he sometimes, for Argument's sake, makes a body think a Wife should not have the least Will of her own. He fets up a dispensing Power, in short, altho' he knows, that that Doctrine once cost a Prince his Crown. And thus, proceeding with his Answer to my Plea, he argues:

'The chief Thing that sticks with you, my dear · Pamela, is, that you think it unnatural in a Mother

onot to be a Nurse to her own Child, if she can;

and what is unnatural, you fay, is Sin. Now, my Dear, altho' your Practice be so unexceptionable,

6 you feem not to have a right Notion of the Obe-

6 dience which a Wife naturally owes, as well as voluntarily vows, to a Husband's Will.-

'In all lawful Things, you'll fay-But suppose,

' my Dear, you were to make a folemn Vow, either ' as a fingle Woman, or as a Wife, to do any thing ' that

that you had a natural Power to do. No doubt you would think yourfelf under an Obligation to perform it, let the Consequence be what it would. But to shew you, who are so learned in the old Law, of how little Force even the Vows of your Sex are, and how much you are under the Controul of ours, read the following Verses in Numbers ' xxx. If a MAN vow a Vow unto the Lord, or · swear an Oath to bind his Soul with a Bond, he fhall not break his Word; he shall do according to all that proceedeth out of his Mouth. The Reason of this is, he is fole and independent, and Master of his own Will and Actions.—But what follows? If a WOMAN also vow a Vow unto the Lord, and bind herself, by a Bond, being in her Father's House, ' in her Youth; and her Father hear her Vow, and her Bond, wherewith she hath bound her Soul, and her Father shall hold his peace at her: Then all her Vows fhall fland; and every Bond, wherewith she hath bound her Soul, shall stand. But if her Father difal-

· low her in the Day that he heareth, not any of her · Vows, or of her Bonds, wherewith she hath bound her · Soul, shall stand: And the Lord shall forgive her, be-

s cause her Father disallowed her.

The very same Thing is, with equal Strength, expressed in the Verses immediately following, in relation to a HUSBAND's allowing or disallowing his WIFE's Vows; nor is it distinguished at all, whether the Vow be just or unjust: And it is worthy of Observation too, that the Laws of England, in consideration of the Obedience a Wise owes to a Husband, will acquit a Woman of certain Crimes, for which they will punish a Man with Death.

What I have mentioned, therefore, shews how much the Daughter is under the absolute Controul of her Father, and the Wife of her Husband: So that, you see, my Dear, even in such a strong Point

u

r-

d.

ld

ır

-

rs

r

e

0

n

?

· Point as a folemn Vow to the Lord, the Wife may be absolv'd by the Husband, from the Performance of it.

' And by the way, this is no bad Piece of Infor-' mation to young Ladies, who are urged by their defigning Lovers to enter into Vows and Contracts ' in their Favour: Not one of which, you fee, is of ' Force, unless the Father, and, by the same Rule,

those who have Authority over her, and stand in the Father's Place, approve and confirm it. · If this therefore be the Case in so solemn a Point, furely a Husband may take upon himself to dis-' pense with such a supposed Obligation, as that which you feem so loth to give up, even although ' you had made a Vow, that you would nurse your own Child.—And the rather, if the Principle a 'Husband acts upon, is laudable, a Desire to continue his affectionate and faithful Regards to his Wife, to preferve in her as long as may be preferved, those Graces, and those Delicacies of Perfon, which he admires in her, and which it is imopossible a thorough Nurse should keep up; and as ' moreover, in your Case, her Time may be em-· ployed to fo much greater Improvement to her own ' Mind, and her Husband's Morals, while he can · look upon her in a Light above that of an infipid · prattling Nurse, who must become a Fool and a

Baby herself, before the can be complete in the Character, into which you, my Dear, want to dwindle.

Some Men may be fond of having their Wives undertake this Province, and very good Reasons may be affigned for such their Fondness; but it suits not me at all. And yet no Man would be thought to have a greater Affection for

· Children than myself, or be more desirous to do them Justice; for I think every one should look

forward to Posterity with a Preference: But if my · Pamela · Pamela can be better employ'd: If the Office can

be equally well perform'd: If your Direction and

· Superintendance will be sufficient; and if I cannot · look upon you in that way with equal Delight, as

' if it was otherwise; I insist upon it, my Pamela, ' that you acquiesce with my Dispensation, and don't

' think to let me lose my beloved Wife, and have an indelicate Nurse put upon me instead of her.

' As to that Hint (the nearest to me of all) of Dangers to your Constitution; there is as much

Reason to hope it may not be so, as to fear that

' it may. For Children sometimes bring Health with them as well as Infirmity; and it is not a little

· likely, that the Nurse's Office may affect the Health

of one I hold most dear, who has no very robust

· Constitution, and thinks it so much her Duty to attend it, that she will abridge herself of half the

• Pleasures of Life, and on that Account confine her-

· felf within Doors, or, in the other Case, must take

with her her Infant and her Nursery-maid where-

• ever she goes; and I shall either have very fine

· Company, (shall I not?) or be obliged to deny

myself yours.

'Then, as I propose to give you a Smattering of the French and Italian, I know not but I may take

you with me on a little Tour into France and Italy;

at least to Bath, to Tunbridge, to Oxford, to York,

and the principal Places of England. Wherefore, as I love to look upon you as the Companion of

' my Pleasures, I advise you, my dearest Love, not

to weaken, or, to speak in a Phrase proper to the

· present Subject, wean me from that Love to you, and Admiration of you, which hitherto has been

' rather increasing than otherwise, as your Merit, and

Regard for me, have increased.'

These, my dear Parents, are charming Allurements, almost irrefistible Temptations! And that makes me mistrust myself the more, and be the more diffident distident—For we are but too apt to be persuaded into any thing, when the Motives are so tempting as these last.—But do you take it indeed, that a Husband has such a vast Prerogative? Can it be, now under the Gospel, that this setting themselves, as it were, in God's Place, and dispensing with our Wills, as pleases theirs, is still in Force?—Yet it is said, that our Saviour came not to break the Law, but to

fulfil it.

can

and

nnot

t, as

nela,

on't

nave

of

uch

hat

rith

ttle

lth

uit

to

the

er-

ike

re-

ne

ny

of

ke

y;

k,

e,

of

ot

ne

1,

n

d

t

e

t

I take it for granted, that many Wives will not choose to dispute this Point so earnestly as I have done; for we have had several little Debates about it; and it is the only Point I have ever yet debated with him: But one would not be altogether implicit neither. It is no Compliment to him to be quite passive, and to have no Will at all of one's own: Yet would I not dispute one Point, but in Supposition of a superior Obligation: And this, he says, he can dispense with:—But, alas! my dear Mr. B. was never yet thought so intirely fit to fill up the Character of a Casuistical Divine, as that one may absolutely rely upon his Decisions in these serious Points: And you know we must all stand or fall by our own Judgments.

Upon condition, therefore, that he requires not to see this my Letter, nor your Answer to it, unless I please, I write for your Advice; for you both have always made a Conscience of your Duties, and taught me to do so too, or perhaps I had not been what I am; and I know, moreover, that nobody is more conversant with the Scriptures than you are; and, some how or other, he has got the Dean against me; and I care not to be so free with the worthy Minister of our Parish here, and still less with the younger

Clergymen I am acquainted with.

But this I see plainly enough, that he will have his own Way; and if I cannot get over my Scruples, what shall I do? For if I think it a Sin to submit to the Dispensation he insists upon as in his Power to grant, and do submit to it, what will become of my Peace of Mind? For it is not in our Power to believe as one will. Then weak Minds will have their Doubts, and the Law allows a Toleration for scrupulous and tender Consciences: But my beloved Husband, my Lawgiver, and my Prince, I doubt will allow none to poor me!

As to the Liberty he gives me for a Month, I should be loth to take it; for one does not know the Inconveniencies that may attend a Change of Nou-rishment; or if I did, I should rather—But I know not what I would say; for I am but a young Creature to be in this Way, and very unequal to it in every Respect! So I commit myself to God's Di-

rection, and your Advice, as becomes

Your ever-dutiful Daughter, P. B.

LETTER IV.

My dearest Child,

JOUR Mother and I have as well confidered I the Case you put as we are able; and we think your own Reasons very good; and it is a thousand Pities, your honoured Husband will not allow them, as you, my Dear, make it such a Point with you. Very few Ladies would give their Spoufes, we believe, the Trouble of this Debate; and few Gentlemen are so very nice as yours in this respect; for I (but what fignifies what fuch a mean Soul as I think, compar'd to so learned and brave a Gentleman; yet I) always thought your dear Mother, and she has been a pretty Woman too, in her Time, never look'd fo lovely, as when I faw the dear Creature, like the Pelican in the Wilderness, feeding her Young-ones from her kind Breaft: - And had I had ever

ever so noble an Estate, I am sure I should have had

the same I houghts.

wer

e of

r to

ave

for

ved

ubt

, I

the

ou-

it I

ing

o it

Di-

red

ink

and

ow

vith

fes,

few

ct;

as I

tle-

and

me,

ea-

her had ver

But fince the good 'Squire cannot take this Pleafure; fince he so much values your Person; since he gives you Warning, that it may estrange his Affections; fince he is impatient of Denial, and thinks fo highly of his Prerogative; fince he may, if disobliged, refume some bad Habits, and so you may have allyour Prayers and Hopes in his perfect Reformation frustrated, and find your own Power to do Good more narrow'd, as I may fay; we think, besides the Obedience you have vowed to him, and is the Duty of every good Wife, you ought to give up the Point, and acquiesce; for this seemeth to us, to be the leffer Evil; and God Almighty, if it should be your Duty, will not be less merciful than Men; who, as his Honour fays, by the Laws of the Realm, excuse a Wife when she is faulty by the Command of the Husband; and we hope, the Fault he is pleased to make you commit, (if a Fault, for he really gives very praise-worthy Motives for his Dispenfation) will not be laid at his own Door. So e'en resolve, my dearest Child, to submit to it, and with Cheerfulness too.

God fend you an happy Hour! But who knows, when the Time comes, whether it may not be proper to dispense with this Duty, as you deem it, on other Accounts? For every young Person is not enabled to perform it. So, to shew his Honour, that you will cheerfully acquiesce, your dear Mother advises, that you would look out for a wholesome, good humour'd, honest Body, as near your Complexion and Temper, and Constitution, as may be; and it may not be the worse, she thinks, if the is Twenty, or One or Two-and-twenty; for she will have more Strength and Perfection, as one may fay, than even you can have at your tender Age: And, above all, for the wife Reason you give from your Reading, that she may be brought to bed much about your Time, if it be possible.—We will look out, if you please, about us for such an one. And, as Mr. B. is not averse to have the dear Child in the House with you, you will have as much Delight, and the dear Baby may fare as well, under your prudent and careful Eye, as if you were to be obliged in the Way you would choose.

Ways, and make you acquiesce in this Point with Cheerfulness, (altho', as you say, one cannot believe as one pleases; for we verily are of Opinion you safely may, as Matters stand) and continue to you, and your beloved and honoured Husband, Health, and all manner of Happiness, are the Prayers of

Your most affectionate Father and Mother,

J. and E. ANDREWS.

I have privately shew'd our worthy Minister your Letter: You know, my Dear, he is learned and judicious: And he is of our Opinion, that it is best for you, on all Accounts to acquiesce. Besides, it may disoblige the 'Squire, and it will signify nothing after all; for he will have his Way, that's sure enough.

LETTER V.

I Thank you, my dearest Parents, for your kind Letter; it was given to Mr. B. and he brought it to me himself, and was angry with me: Indeed he was, as you shall hear:

'Tis from the good Couple, my Dear, I fee. I hope they are of my Opinion. But whether they be or not.—But I will leave you; and do you, Pamela,

Pamela, step down to my Closet, when you have

perus'd it.

ut

if

Ir.

ife

he

nd

ay

ur

th

ve

ou

u,

h,

S.

ur

nd

it

ce.

ill

nis

nd

ht

he

I

ey

la,

He was pleased to withdraw; and I read it, and sat down, and consider'd it well; but, as you know I made it always my Maxim to do what I could not avoid to do, with as good a Grace as possible, I waited on the dear Gentleman.

Well, Pamela, said he, a little seriously, what say

the worthy Pair?

O Sir! they declare for you. They fay, it is best

for me to yield up this Point.

They are certainly in the right.—But were you not a dear perverse Creature, to give me all this

Trouble about your faucy Scruples?

Nay, Sir, don't call them so, said I; little thinking he was displeased with me.—I still am somewhat wavering; tho' they advise me to acquiesce: And, as it is your Will, and you have determined how it shall be, it is my Duty to yield up the Point.

But do you yield it up cheerfully, my Dear?

I do, Sir; and will never more dispute it, let what will happen.—And I beg pardon for having so often enter'd into this Subject with you.—But you know, Sir, if one's Weakness of Mind gives one Scruples, one should not yield implicitly, till they are satisfy'd; for that would look as if one gave you not the Obedience of a free Mind.

You are very obliging, just now, my Dear: But I can tell you, you had made me half serious; yet I would not shew it, in compliment to your present Condition; for I did not expect that you would have thought any Appeal necessary, tho' to your Father and Mother, in a Point that I was determin'd upon, as you must see, every time we talk'd of it.

This struck me all in a Heap. I look'd down to the Ground; having no Courage to look up to his

Face.

Face, for fear I should behold his Aspect as mortifying to me as his Words. But he took both my Hands, and drew me kindly to him, and saluted me—Excuse me, my dearest Love; I am not angry with you.—Speak to me, Child.—Why starts this precious Pearl? and kiss'd my Cheek—speak to me, Pamela!—

I will, Sir—I will—as foon as I can—for this being my first Check, so seriously given, my Heart was full. But as I knew he would be angry, and think me obstinate, if I did not speak; I said, full of Concern—I wish, Sir—I wish—you had been pleased to spare me longer, a little longer, for the same kind,

very kind, Confideration.

But is it not better, my Dear, to tell you I was a little out of Humour with you, than that I am?—But you had been very earnest with me on this Point more than once; and you put me upon a hated, because ungenerous, Necessity of pleading my Prerogative, as I call it: And yet this would not do, but you would appeal against me in the Point I was determin'd upon, for Reasons altogether in your Favour? and if this was not like my Pamela, excuse me, that I could not help being a little unlike myself.

Ah! thought I, this is not fo very unlike your dear Self, if I were to give the least Shadow of an Occafion; for it is of a piece with your Lessons for-

merly*.

I am sure, said I, I was not in the least aware, that I had offended.—But I was too little circum-spect. I had been used to your Goodness for so long a Time, that I expected it, it seems; and thought I was sure of your savourable Construction.

Why so you may be, my Dear, in every thing almost. But I don't love to speak + twice my Mind

* See Vol. II. p. 311, &c. + Ibid. p. 317.

on the same Subject; you know I don't; and you have really disputed this Point with me five or six times: Insomuch, that I wonder'd what was come

to my Dearest.

1

t

as

k

1-

0

d,

as

is

d,

e-

ut

e-

afe

ke

ar

aor-

re,

m-

ng

tl

ing

ind

on

I thought, Sir, you would have distinguish'd between a Command where my Gonscience was concerned, and a common Point: You know, Sir, I never had any Will but yours in common Points.

But, indeed, you make me fearful; because my task is render'd too difficult for my own weak Judgment. But then, Sir — But I shall offend again—

And then what? Say all you would fay, Pamela.

-And then what?

Why, Sir, if I must speak—You threaten me so at every Turn with that cruel Word Polygamy, that it shews me it is too much in your Mind——But I

shall make you angry again.

Was not the Patriarch Husbands Practice, Pamela, a fit thing to be oppos'd to that of the Patriarch Wives? But do you say, I threaten you with that Word? Take care, my Love: You have been a faultless Angel hitherto. Don't let me find you ready to make such harsh Constructions as a mere Woman is accustomed to make, when she is disposed to be captious; altho' a better Construction lies before her.

I was filent, but by my Tears.

Now I doubt, Pamela, your Spirit is high. You won't speak, because you are out of Humour at what I say. I will have no sullen Reserves, my Dearest. What means that heaving Sob? I know, my dear Love, that this is a Time with your Sex, when, sadden'd with your Apprehensions, and indulg'd because of them, by the fond Husband, it is needful, for both their sakes, to watch over the Changes of their Temper. For Ladies in your Way are often like encroaching Subjects: They are Vol. IV.

apt to extend what they call their Privileges, on the Indulgence shewed them; and the Husband never

again recovers the Ascendant he had before.

You know these things better than I, Mr. B. But I had no Intention to invade your Province, or to go out of my own. Yet I thought I had a Right to a little Free-will, a very little; especially on some greater Occasions.

Why, so you have, my dear. But you must not plead one Text of Scripture in Behalf of your own Will; and refuse to another its due Weight, when

it makes for mine.

Well, Sir, I must needs say, I have one Advantage above others of my Sex: For if Wives, in my Circumstances, are apt to grow upon Indulgence, I am very happy, that your kind and watchful Care will hinder me from falling into that Error.

He gave me a gentle Tap on the Neck: Let me beat my beloved Saucebox, faid he: Is it thus you rally my watchful Care over you for your own Good? But tell me truly, Pamela, are you not a little fullen? Look up to me, my Dear — Are you

not?

I believe I am; but'tis but very little, Sir—It will foon go off—Please to let me withdraw, that I may take myself to task about it;—for at present, I know not what to do, because I did not expect the Dis-

pleasure I have incurred.

Is it not the same thing, reply'd he, if this our first Quarrel end here, without your withdrawing?

—I forgive you heartily, my Pamela; and give me one Kiss, and I will think of your saucy Appeal against me no more.

I will comply with your Condition, Sir; but I have a great mind to be faucy. I wish you would

let me for this once.

What would you fay, my Dearest? Be faucy then, as you call it, as faucy as you can.

Why then I am a little fullen at present, that I am: — And I am not fully convinc'd, whether it must be I that forgive you, or you me. — For, indeed, till I can recollect, I cannot think my Fault so great in this Point, that was a Point of Conscience to me, as (pardon me, Sir) to stand in need of

your Forgiveness.

he

ver

But

to

to

me

not

wn

ren

an-

my

e, 1

are

me

you

nwc

ot a

you

will

may

now

Dif-

our

ing!

e me

peal

but

ould

aucy

Why

Well then, my Dearest, said he, we will forgive one another; but take this with you, that it is my Love to you, that makes me more delicate than otherwise I should be; and you have inur'd me so much to a faultless Conduct, that I can hardly bear with natural Infirmities from you.—But, giving me another Tap, get you gone; I leave you to your Recollection; and let me know what Fruits it produces: for I must not be put off with a Half-compliance; I must have your whole Will with me, if possible.

So I went up, and recollecting every thing, facrific'd to my Sex, as Mr. B. calls it, when he talks of a Wife's Reluctance to give up a favourite Point; for I shed a good many Tears, because my Heart was set upon it; and this Patriarchal Retort hung

heavy upon my Mind.

And so, my dear Father and Mother, twenty charming Ideas and Pleasures, which I had formed to myself, had I obtained this Permission, are vanished from me, and my Measures are quite broken. But after my Heart was relieved by my Eye, I was lighter and easier. And the Result is, we have heard of a good sort of Woman, that is to be my poor Baby's Mother, when it comes; and so your kindly offer'd Inquiries are needless, I believe.

I can't tell but this fort of Rebuff might be a little necessary, after all; for I had forgotten, thro' Mr. B.'s past Indulgence for so long a Time, his Injunctions and Lessons; and this awfully inforced Remembrance shews me, that the Rules he formerly

C 2

prescribed, were not Words of Course, but that he intended to keep me up to the Letter of them.—So I must be a little more circumspect, I find that, than

of late I thought I had Occasion to be.

But he is the best and tenderest of Husbands, for all this; and yet was forced to accept of his Forgiveness, and he did not think himself obliged to me for mine; and has carried his Point all to nothing, as the Racing Gentlemen say. But I can see one thing, nevertheless, on this Occasion, that the Words Command and Obey are not quite blotted out of his Vocabulary, as he said they should be *.

But, truly, I did not imagine before, that the Husband had so very extensive a Prerogative neither.

Nor do I believe, that many Ladies would sit down so satisfy'd with it, as I am sorced to do—Yet he vows, that it must have been so, had he marry'd a Princes; — and that it is not because of the former Inequality of Condition between us.

I can't tell what to fay to that: But I fancy there wou'd then have been some princely Struggles between them.—It may be, if he could not have conquer'd, he would not have liv'd with her; or, perhaps, would have run into his wicked Polygamy

Notions. Mr. B.

Mr. B. to my further great Comfort, has just been telling me, how little a Wife of his must expect from her Tears; and has most nicely been distinguishing between Tears of Sullenness, and Tears of Penitence: The one, he declares, shall always meet with his Indulgence and Kindness, and never pass unrewarded: But the other, being the last Resources of the Sex, after they are disarmed of all others, and by which they too often, as he says, carry all their Purposes, he will never suffer to have any Force at all upon him.

* See Vol. II. p. 317.

he

So

an

or

r-

ne

g,

ne

ds

119

he

er.

fit

he

of

re

en-

ny

A

nof

eet

ais

es

nd

eir

at

ry

Very heroick, truly !—One stands a poor Chance in a Contest with such a Husband. It must be all pure unmixed Obedience and Submission. And I find, half the Tears a poor Wise might shed in matrimonial Bickerings, so frequent with some, even of those not unhappily married, (as the World thinks) would be of no Essect, were all Men of his Mind.

'Tis well for our Sex in general, that there are not many Husbands who distinguish thus nicely. For, I doubt, there are but very few so well intitled to their Ladies Observances as Mr. B. is to mine; and who would act so generously and so tenderly by a Wise as he does, in every material Instance on which the Happiness of Life depends.

But we are quite reconciled; altho, as I faid, upon his own Terms: And fo I can still style myself,

My dear honoured Parents,

Your happy, as well as dutiful Daughter,

P. B.

LETTER VI.

From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B.

My dear PAMELA,

HAVE fent you a Present, the completest I could procure, of every thing that may suit your approaching happy Circumstance; as I hope it will be to you, and to us all: But it is with a Hope annex'd, that altho' both Sexes are thought of in it, yet that you will not put us off with a Girl: No, Child, we will not permit, may we have our Wills, that you shall think of giving us a Girl, till you have presented us with half a dozen fine Boys. For our C 2

Line is gone so low, that we expect that human security from you in your first seven Years, or we

shall be disappointed, I can tell you that.

And now, Pamela, I will give you their Names, if my Brother and you approve of them: Your first shall be BILLY; my Lord Davers, and the Earl of C—, shall be Godfathers; and it must be doubly God-mother'd too, or I am afraid the Countess and I shall fall out about it. Your second shall be DAVERS; be sure remember that—Your third shall be CHARLEY; your fourth JEMMY; your sisth—HARRY; your sixth—DUDLEY, if you will—and your Girl, if you had not rather call it PAMELA, shall be BARBARA—The rest you must name as you please.—And so, my Dear, I wish all seven happily

over with you.

I am glad you got fafe to Town; and long to hear of Miss Darnford's Arrival, because I know you'll be out of your Biass in your new Settlement till then. She is a fine Lady, and writes the most to my Tafte of any one of her Sex, that I know, next to you. I with the'd be fo kind as to correspond with me. But be fure don't omit to give me the Sequel of her Sifter's and Murray's affair, and what you think will please me in relation to her. You do well to fave yourfelf the Trouble of describing the Town and the publick Places. We are no Strangers to them; and they are too much our Table-talk, when any Country Lady has for the first Time, been carried to Town, and return'd: Besides, what London affords, is nothing that deferves mention, compar'd to what we have feen at Paris and at Verfailles, and other of the French Palaces. You exactly, therefore, hit our Tastes, and answer our Expectations, when you give us, in your peculiar manner, Sentiments on what we may call the Soul of Things, and fuch Characters as you draw with a Pencil borrow'd from the Hand of Nature, intermingled with those fine Lights

Lights and Shades of Reflections and Observations, that make your Pictures glow, and instruct as well

as delight.

There, Pamela, is Encouragement for you to proceed in obliging us. We are all of one Mind in this respect; and more than ever, since we have seen your Actions so well answer to your Writings; and that Theory and Practice, with regard to every

Excellence that can adorn a Lady, is the same thing with you.

fe-

we

i, if

of

bly

and

hall

ifth

and

LA,

you

oily

lear

u'll

till

my

t to

rith

uel

you

vell

wn

hen

ar-

don

ir'd

and

ore,

hen

ents

uch

om

fine

hts

We are pleased with your Lawyers Characters. There are Life and Nature in them; but never avoid giving all the Characters that occur to you, for that seems to be one of your Talents; and in the uglicst you can draw, there will be matter of Instruction; especially as you seem naturally to fall upon such as are so general, that no one who converses, but must see in them the Picture of one or

other he is acquainted with. By this Time, perhaps, Miss Darnford will be with you—Our Respects to her, if so.—And you will have been at some of the Theatrical Entertainments: So will not want Subjects to oblige us .--'Twas a good Thought of your dear Man's, to carry you to fee the feveral Houses, and to make you a Judge, by that Means, of the Disposition and Fashion of every thing in them. Tell him, I love him better and better. I am proud of my Brother, and do nothing but talk of what a charming Hufband he makes. But then, he gives an Example to all who know him, and his uncontroulable Temper (which makes against many of us) that it is possible for a good Wife to make even a bad Man a worthy Husband: and this affords an Instruction, which may it and all our Sex in good itead.—But then they must have been cautious first, that they have choien a Man of natural good Sense, and good Manners, and not a brutal or abandon'd Debauchee.

C 4

But

But hark-ye-me, my fweet Girl, what have I done to you, that you won't write yourself Sister to me? I could find in my Heart to be angry with you on this Account. Before my last Visit, indeed, I was scrupulous to subscribe myself so to you. But since I have feen myfelf fo much furpass'd in all manner. of Excellence, that I would take Pleasure in the Name, you affume a Pride in your Turn, and think it an undervaluing of yourfelf, I suppose, to call me fo-Ay, that's the thing, I doubt-Altho', I can tell you, I have endeavoured by several Regulations fince my Return, (and the Countefs, too, keeps your Example in distant View, as well as 1) to be more worthy of the Appellation. If, therefore, you would avoid the Reproaches of secret Pride, under the Shadow of fo remarkable an Humility, for the future never omit subscribing as I do, with great Pleasure,

Your truly affectionate Sister and Friend,

B. DAVERS.

I always take it for granted, that my worthy Brother fends his Respects to us; as you must, that Lord Davers, the Countess of C. and Fackey, (who, as well as his Uncle, talks of nothing else but you) fend theirs; and so unnecessary Compliment will be always excluded our Correspondence.

LETTER VII.

In answer to the preceding.

How nobly has your Ladyship contrived, in your every Word of your last How nobly has your Ladyship contrived, in your ever valued

valued Present, to encourage a doubting and apprehensive Mind! And how does it contribute to my Joy and my Glory, that I am deem'd by the noble Sitter of my Best-beloved, not wholly unworthy of being the humble Means to continue, and, perhaps, to perpetuate, a Family so ancient and so honourable!

This, Madam, when I contemplate, and look upon what I was—What can I say!—How shall I express the Sense of the Honour done me!— And when, skipping over for a few Moments, the other engaging Particulars in your Ladyship's Letter, I come to the last charming Paragraph, I am doubly affected to see myself seemingly upbraided, but so politely embolden'd to assume an Appellation, that

otherwise I hardly dared to assume.

ne

e?

on

ce

he

nk

me

ns

ur

re ld

ne

re e,

S.

d

f

I - humble I - who never had a Sifter before, -To find one now in Lady DAVERS! O Madam, you, and only you, can teach me Words fit to express the Joy and the Gratitude that fill'd my delighted Heart!—But thus much I am taught, and thus much I can fay, though at a Loss for other Words, that there is fomething more than the Low-born can imagine in Birth and Education. This is so evident in vour Ladyship's Actions, Words, and Manner, that it strikes one with a becoming Reverence; and we look up with Awe to a Condition we emulate in vain, when raifed by partial Favour, like what I have found; and are confounded when we fee Grandeur of Soul join'd with Grandeur of Birth and Condition; and a noble Lady acting thus nobly, as Lady Davers acts.

My best Wishes, and a thousand Blessings, attend your Ladyship in all you undertake! And I am per-suaded the latter will, and a Peace and Satisfaction of Mind incomparably to be preferr'd to whatever else this World can afford, in the new Regulations, which you, and my dear Lady Counters, have set on Foot in your Families: And when I can have the

C 5

Hanni

Happiness to know what they are, I shall, I am confident, greatly improve my own Methods by them.

Were we to live for ever in this Life, we might be careless and indifferent about these Matters; but when such an Uncertainty as to the Time, and such a Certainty as to the Event is before us, a prudent Mind will be always preparing, 'till prepared; and what can be a better Preparative, than charitable Actions to our Fellow-Creatures in the Eye of that Majesty, which wants nothing of us himself, but to do just and merciful things to one another?

Pardon me, my dearest Lady, for this my free Style. Methinks I amout of myfelf; I know not how to descend all at once from the Height to which you have raised me: And you must forgive the Reslections to which you yourfelf, and your own noble

Actions, have given Birth.

Here, having taken Respite a little, I find I naturally enough fink into Body again. - And will not your Ladyship confine your Expectations from me within narrower Limits? — I hope you will.—For, Omy excellent Lady, I cannot even with my Wishes, fo fwiftly follow your Expectations, if fuch they are But, however, leaving Futurity to HIM, who only governs Futurity, and who conducts us all, and our Affairs, as shall best answer his own Divine Purposes, I will proceed as well as I can, to obey your Ladyship in those Articles, which are, at prefent, more within my own Power.

My dear Miss Darnford, then, let me acquaint your Ladyship, arrived here on Thursday last: She had given us Notice, by a Line, of the Day the fet out; and Sir Simon and Lady Darnford faw her ten miles on the Way to the Stage-coach in Si Simon's Coach, Mr. Murray attending her on Horse back. They parted with her, as was easy to gues from her Merit, with great Tenderness; and we

are

are to look upon the Visit (as we do) as a high Favour from her Papa and Mamma; who, however, charge her not to exceed a Month in and out, which I regret much. Mr. B. kindly proposed to me, as the came in the Stage-coach, attended with one Maid-Servant, to meet her Part of the Way in his Coach and Six, if, as he was pleafed to fay, it would not be too fatiguing to me; and we would go fo early, as to dine at St. Albans. I gladly conferted, and we got thither about one o'Clock; and while Dinner was preparing, he was pleased to shew me the great Church there, and the curious Vault of the Good Duke of Gloucester, and also the Monument of the Great Lord Chancellor Bacon in St. Michael's Church; all which, no doubt, your Ladyship has feen.

There happened to be fix Passengers in the Stage-coach, including Miss Darnford and her Maid, and the dear young Lady was exceeding glad to be relieved from them, tho' the Weather was cold enough, two of the Passengers being not very agreeable Company, one a rough military Man, the other a possive humoursome old Gentlewoman; and the other two, not such as she had Reason to be loth to part with; two Sisters, who jangled now-and-then, said she, as much as my Sister, and my Sister's Sister.

Your Ladyship will judge how joyful this Meeting was to us both. Mr. B. was no less delighted, and said, he was infinitely obliged to Sir Simon for

this precious Truft.

con-

em.

ht be

, but

fuch

and

itable

f that

out to

7 free

t how

h you

effec.

noble

natu-

ll not

m me

-For,

ifhes,

y are!

only, and

Divine

obey

t pre-

quaint

: She

ay the

in Si

Horle guess

nd we

I come with double Pleasure, said she, to see the greatest Curiosity in England, a Husband and a Wise, who have not, in so many Months that you have been married, if I may believe Report, and your Letters, Mrs. B. once repented.

You are severe, Miss Darnford, reply'd Mr. B. upon People in the marry'd State: I hope there are

many fuch Instances.

C 6

There

There might, returned she, if there were more such Husbands as Mr. B. makes.——I hated you once, and I thought you very wicked; but I revere you now.

If you will revere any body, my dear Miss Darnford, said he, let it be this good Girl; for it is all owing to her Conduct and Discretion, that I make a tolerable Husband: Were there more such Wives, I am persuaded, there would be more such Husbands than there are:

You see, my Dear, said I, what it is to be wedded to a generous Man. Mr. B. by his noble Treatment of me, creates a Merit in me, and disclaims

the natural Effects of his own Goodness.

Well, you're a charming Couple—Person and Mind, I know not any Equal either of you have.—But, Mr. B. I will not compliment you too highly.—I may make you proud, for Men are saucy Creatures; but I cannot make your Lady so: And in this Doubt of the one, and Considence in the other, I must join with you, that ker Merit is the greatest—Since, excuse me, Sir, her Example has reform'd her Rake; and you have only confirmed in her the Virtues you found ready formed to your Hand.

That Distinction, faid Mr. B. is worthy of Miss

Darnford's Judgment.

My dearest Miss Darnford, my dearest M. B. faid I, laying my Hand upon the Hand of each, how can you go on thus!—As I look upon every kind thing, two such dear Friends say of me, as Incentives for me to endeavour to deserve it, you must not task me too high; for then, instead of encouraging, you'll make me despair.

Mr. B. clasped us both in his Arms, and saluted

each—And called us his two Nonpareils.

He led us into the Coach; and in a free, easy, joyful Manner, not in the least tir'd or fatigu'd, did we reach the Town and Mr. B.'s House; with which,

and

and its Furniture, and the Apartments allotted for

her, my dear Friend is highly pleased.

But the dear Lady put me into some little Confusion, when she saw me first, taking Notice of my Improvements, as she called them, before Mr. B. I looked at him, and look'd at her with a down-cast Eye. He smil'd at her, and said, Would you, my good Miss Darnford, look so silly, after such a Length of Time, with a Husband you had no Occasion to be ashamed of?

No, indeed, Sir, not I, I'll assure you; nor will I forgive those maiden Airs in a Wife so happy as

you are.

uch

ice,

you

rnt is

at I

uch

uch

ed-

eatims

and

aly.

rea-

d in

rer,

test

m'd

the

lifs

B.

WO

ind

en-

uit

ag-

ted

oy-

did

ch,

and

I faid nothing. But I wished myself, in Mind and Behaviour, to be just what Miss Darnford is.

But, my dear Lady, Miss Darnford has had those early Advantages from Conversation, which I had not; and so must never expect to know how to deport myself with that modest Freedom and Ease, which I know I want, and shall always want, althosome of my partial Favourers think I do not. For, I am every Day more and more sensible of the great Difference there is between being used to the politest Conversation as an Inserior, and being born to bear a Part in it: In the one, all is set, stiff, aukward, and the Person just such an Ape of Imitation as poor I. In the other, all is natural Ease and Sweetness—like Miss Darnford.

Knowing this, I don't indeed aim at what I am fensible I cannot attain; and so, I hope, am less exposed to Censure than I should be if I did. For, I have heard Mr. B. observe with regard to Gentlemen who build fine Houses, and make fine Gardens, and open fine Prospects, that Art should never take place of, but be subservient to, Nature; and a Gentleman, if he is confined to a Situation, had better conform his Designs to that, than to do as at Chassworth was done, that is to say, level a Mountain

at

at a monstrous Expence; which, had it been suffer'd to remain, in so wild and romantick a Scene as Chatfworth affords, might have been made one of

the greatest Beauties of the Place.

So I, Madam, think I had better endeavour to make the best of those natural Defects I cannot master, than, by affuming Airs and Dignities in Appearance, to which I was not born, act neither Part tolerably. By this means, instead of being thought neither Gentlewoman nor Rustick, as Sir Jacob hinted, (Linfey-wolfey, I think, was his Term too) I may be looked upon as an Original in my Way; and all Originals pass Muster well enough, you know,

Madam, even with Judges. Now I am upon this Subject, I can form to myself, if your Ladyship will excuse me, Two such polite Gentlemen, as my Lawyers, mentioned in my former, who, with a true London Magnanimity and Penetration, (for, Madam, I fancy your London Criticks will be the severest upon the Country Girl) will put on mighty fignificant Looks, forgetting, it may be, that they have any Faults themselves, and apprehending that they have nothing to do, but to fit in Judgment upon others, one of them expressing himself after this manner: " Why, truly, fack, the Girl is well enough—considering—I can't " fay"—(then a Pinch of Snuff, perhaps, adds Importance to his Air) "but a Man might love her " for a Month or two." (These Sparks talk'd in this manner of other Ladies before me)-4 She be-" haves better than I expected from her-con-" fidering"-again will follow-" So I think," criesthe other; and toffes his Tye behind him, with an Air partly of Contempt, and partly of Rakery. - As you fay, Jemmy, I expected to find an auk-" ward Country Girl, but she tops her Part, I'll affure you !- Nay, for that matter, behaves very tolerably for what she was-And is right, not to si feem

iffer'd ne as ne of

maf-Ap-Part

oo) I and now,

Facob

n to fuch and Cri-

and t to fing ack, an't

her this be-

ries rith

ry.
ikl'll
ery

to

"feem desirous to drown the Remembrance of her Original in her Elevation—And, I can't but say," (for something like it they did say) "is mighty pretty, and passably genteel." And thus, with their poor Praise of Mr. B.'s Girl, they think they have made a fine Compliment to his Judgment.

But for his Sake, (for as to my own, I am not folicitous about fuch Gentlemens good Opinions) I owe them a Spite; and believe, I shall find an Opportunity to come out of their Debt. For I have the Vanity to think, now your Ladyship has made me proud by your kind Encouragements and Approbation, that the Country Girl will make 'em look about them, with all their genteel Contempts, which they miscall Praise.

But how I run on! Your Ladyship expects that I should write as freely to you, as I used to do to my Parents. I have the Merit of obeying you, that I have; but, I doubt, too much to the Exercise of

your Patience.

This (like all mine) is a long Letter; and I will only add to it Miss Darnford's humble Respects and Thanks for your Ladyship's kind Mention of her, which she receives as no small Honour.

And now, Madam, with a greater Pleasure than I can express, will I make use of the Liberty your Ladyship so kindly allows me to take, of subscribing myself, with that prosound Respect which becomes me,

Your Ladyship's most obliged Sister,

and obedient Servant,

P. B.

Mr. Adams, Mr. Longman, and Mrs. Jervis, are just arrived; and our Household is now complete.

LETTER

LETTER VIII.

From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B.

My dear PAMELA,

A FTER I have thank'd you for your last agreeable Letter, which has added the Earl and Lady Jenny to the Number of your Admirers, (you know Lady Betty, her Sister, was so before) I shall tell you, that I now write, at all their Requests, as well as at those of my Lord Davers, the Countess you so dearly love, and Lady Betty, for your Decision of an odd Dispute, that, on reading your Letter, and talking of your domestic Excellencies, happened among us.

Lady Betty would have it, That notwithstanding any Aukwardness which you attribute to yourself, she cannot but decide, by all she has seen of your Writings, and has heard us say, that yours is the perfectest Character she ever heard or read of, in the

Sex:

The Countess said, That you wrong yourself, in supposing, that you are not every thing that is polite and genteel, as well in your Behaviour, as in your Person; and that she knows not any Lady in England who better becomes her Station than you do.

Why then, faid Lady Jenny, Mrs. B. must be quite perfect; that's certain. So faid the Earl; so faid they all. And Lord Davers confirm'd, that you

were. And Jackey swore to it.

Yet, as we are sure, there cannot be such a Character in this Life as has not one Fault, altho' we could not tell where to fix it, the Countess made a whim-sical Motion:—Lady Davers, said ste, pray do you write to Mrs. B. and acquaint her with our Subject;

and

and as it is impossible, that one who can act as she does, should not know herself better than any body else can do, desire her to acquaint us with some of those secret Foibles, that leave room for her to be

still more perfect.

ly

w !!!

11

fo of

nd ed

13

ur r-

ne

in

te

ur

nd

fo

ou

cld

nou

t;

id

.

A good Thought! faid 1: A good Thought! faid they all.—And this is the present Occasion of my writing; and pray see that you accuse yourself of no more than you know yourself guilty: For Overmodesty borders nearly on Pride, and too liberal Self-accusations are generally but so many Traps for Acquittal with Applause; so that (whatever other Ladies might) you will not be forgiven, if you deal with us in a way so poorly artful: Let your Faults, therefore, be such, as you think we can subscribe to, from what we have seen of you, and what we have read of yours; and you must try to extenuate them too, as you give them, lest we should think you above that Nature, which, in the best Cases, is your undoubted Talent.

I congratulate you and Miss Darnford, on her Arrival: She is a charming young Lady; but tell her, that we shall not allow her to take you at your Word, and to think, that she excels you in any one thing: Only, indeed, we think you nicer in some Points than you need to be, as to your present agreeable Circumstance. And yet, let me tell you, that the easy and unaffected conjugal Purity, in Word and Behaviour, between your good Man and you, is worthy of Imitation, and what the Countess and I have with Pleasure contemplated since we left you, an hundred Times, and admire in you both: And 'tis good Policy too, Child, as well as high Decorum; for it is what will make you ever new and respectful to one another.

But You have the Honour of it all, whose sweet, natural, and easy Modesty, in Person, Behaviour,

and Conversation, forbid Indecency, even in Thought, much more in Word, to approach you; insomuch that no Rakes can be Rakes in your Presence, and yet they hardly know to what they owe their Restraint.

However, as People who see you at this time, will take it for granted, that You and Mr. B. have been very intimate together, I should think you need not be asham'd of your Appearance, because, as he rightly observes, you have no Reason to be asham'd of your Husband.

Excuse my Pleasantry, my Dear: And answer our Demand upon you, as soon as you can; which will oblige us all; particularly

Your affectionate Sifter,

B. DAVERS.

LETTER IX.

My dearest Lady,

HAT a Talk have you impos'd upon me! And, according to the Terms you annex to it, how shall I acquit myself of it, without incurring the Censure of Affectation, if I freely accuse myself as I may deserve, or of Vanity, if I do not? Indeed, Madam, I have a great many Failings; and you don't know the Pain it costs me to keep them under; not so much for fear the World should see them, for I bless God, I can hope they are not capital, as for fear they should become capital, if I were to let them grow upon me.

And this, furely, I need not have told your Ladyship, and the Countess of C. who have read my Papers, and seen my Behaviour in the kind Visit you made to your dear Brother, and had from both but

too

too much Reason to censure me, did not your generous and partial Favour make you overlook my greater Failings, and pass under a kinder Name many of my lesser: For, surely, my good Ladies, you must both of you have observed, in what you have read and seen, that I am naturally of a saucy Temper; and with all my appearing Meekness and Humility, can resent, and sting too, when I think myself provok'd.

I have also discover'd in myself, on many Occafions, (of some of which I will by-and-by remind your Ladyship) a Malignancy of Heart, that, it is true, lasts but a little while—nor had it need—but for which I have often called myself to Account—

to very little Purpose, hitherto.

ught,

much

, and

Re-

, will

been

d not

ghtly

your

er our

will

RS.

n me!

x to it,

urring

myfelf

ndeed,

d you

inder;

n, for

as for

then

Lady-

id my

it you

b but

too

And, indeed, Madam, (Now for a little Extenuation, as you expect from me) I have some Difficulty, whether I ought to take much Pains to subdue myfelf in some Instances, in the Station to which I am raised, that otherwise it would have become me to attempt to do: For it is no easy Task, for a Perfon in my Circumstances, to distinguish between the ought and the ought not; to be humble without Meanness, and decent without Arrogance. And let me add, that if all Persons thought as justly as I flatter myself I do, of the Inconveniencies, as well as Conveniencies, which attend their being rais'd to a Condition above them, they would not imagine all the World was their own, when they came to be distinguish'd as I have been: For, what with the Contempts of superior Relations on one Side, (which all such must undergo at first) the Envy of the World, and low Reflections arising from that Envy, on the other, from which no one must hope to be totally exempted, and the Aukwardness, besides, with which they support their elevated Condition, if they have Sense to judge of their own Impersections;

and if the Gentleman be not such an one as mine— (and where will such another be found?)—On all these Accounts, I say, they will be made sensible, That, whatever they might once think, Happiness and an high Estate are two very different things.

But I shall be too grave, when your Ladyship, and all my kind and noble Friends, expect, perhaps, I should give the uncommon Subject a pleasanter Air: Yet what must that Mind be, that is not serious, when it is obliged to recollect, and give Account of,

its Defects?

But I must not only accuse myself, it seems, I must give Proofs, such as your Ladyship can subscribe to, of my Impersections. There is so much real Kindness in this seeming Hardship, that I will obey you, Madam, and produce Proofs in a Moment, which cannot be controverted.

As to my Sauciness, those Papers will give an hundred Instances against me—as well to your dear Brother, as to others.—Indeed, to extenuate, as you command me, as I go along, these were mostly when I was apprehensive for my Honour, that they were.

And then, my dear Lady, I have a little Tincture of Jealousy, which sometimes has made me more uneasy than I ought to be, as the Papers you have not seen would have demonstrated, particularly in Miss Godfrey's Case *, and in my Conversation with your Ladyships, in which I have frequently betrayed my Apprehensions of what might happen when we came to London: Yet, to extenuate again, I have examin'd myself very strictly on this Head; and I really think, that I can ascribe a great Part of this Jealousy to laudable Motives; no less than to the Concern I have for your dear Brother's future Happiness, in the Hope, that I may be a humble Means

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 325, &c.

ill

e,

ess

nd

I

r:

15,

of,

ust

to,

na-

ou,

ch

ın-

-01

UO

ien

e.

ure

ore

ave

in ith

yed

we

ave

his

the

ap-

ans

in

in the Hands of Providence, to induce him to abhor those Crimes of which young Gentlemen too often are guilty, and to bring him over to the Practice of those Virtues, in which he will for ever have Cause to rejoice.—Yet, my Lady, some other Parts of the Charge must stand against me; for, as, to be sure, I love his Person, as well as his Mind, I have Pride in my Jealousy, that would not permit me, I verily think, to support myself as I ought, under the Trial of a Competition, in this tender, very tender Point.

And this obliges me to own, that I have a little Spark—not a little one, perhaps—of fecret Pride and Vanity, that will arise, now-and-then, on the Honours done me; but which I keep under as much as I can: And to this Pride, let me tell your Ladyship, I know no one contributes, or can contribute, more largely than yourself.

So you see, my dear Lady, what a naughty Heart I have, and how far I am from being a faultless Creature—I hope I shall be better and better, however, as I live longer, and have more Grace, and more Wit: For here, to recapitulate my Faults, is, in the first Place, Vindictiveness, I will not call it downright Revenge, that I will not—For, as the Poet says,

Revenge is but a Frailty, incident
To craz'd and fickly Minds; the poor Content
Of little Souls, unable to furmount
An Injury, too weak to bear Affront.

And I would not be thought to have a little Mind, because I know I would not do a little Thing. Vindictiveness, then, let it stand, tho' that's a harsh Word to accuse one's self of—fealousy——Secret Pride—Vanity—which I cannot, for my Life, keep

keep totally under—O dear Madam, are not here Faults enow, without naming any more?—And, how much Room do all these leave for Amendment,

and greater Perfection?

Had your Ladyship, and my Lady Counters, favour'd us longer, in your late kind Visit, it had been impossible but I must have so improved, by your charming Conversations and by that natural Ease and Dignity which accompany everything your Ladyships do and say, as to have got over such of these Foibles as are not rooted in Nature: Till in time I had been able to do more than emulate those Perfections, which, at present, I can only at an awful Distance revere; as becomes,

My dear Ladies,

Your most humble Admirer, and obliged Servant,

P. B.

LETTER X.

From Miss Darnford to her Father and Mother.

My ever-honour'd Papa and Mamma,

Arrived fafely in London on Thursday, after a tolerable Journey, considering Deb and I made Six in the Coach, (Two having been taken up on the Way, after you left me) and none of the Six highly agreeable. Mr. B. and his Lady, who looks very stately upon us, (from the Circumstance of Person, rather than of Mind, however) were so good as to meet me at St. Albans, in their Coach and Six They have a fine House here, richly furnish'd in every Part, and have allotted me the best Apartment in it.

W

, fabeen your Eafe adythese me I Per-

here

And,

nt, P. B.

wful

er.

tolele Six n the nighly very Person

as to d Six a'd in tment

W

We are happy beyond Expression: Mr. B. is a charming Husband; so easy, so pleas'd with, and so tender of his Lady; and she so much All that we faw her in the Country, as to Humility and Affability, and improv'd in every thing elfe, which we hardly thought possible she could be-that I never knew so happy a Matrimony.—All that Prerogative Sauciness, which we apprehended would so eminently display itself in his Behaviour to his Wife, had she been ever so distinguish'd by Birth and Fortune, is vanish'd, and no Traces of it seem to be left. I did not think it was in the Power of an Angel, if our Sex could have produc'd one, to have made fo tender and so fond a Husband of Mr. B. as he makes. And should I have the Sense to follow Mrs. B.'s Example, if ever I marry, I should not despair of making myself happy, let it be to whom it would, provided he was not a Brute, nor fordid in his Temper; which two Characters are too obvious to be conceal'd, if Persons take due Care, and make proper Enquiries, and if they are not led by blind Passion. May Mr. Murray and Miss Nancy make just such a happy Pair!

You commanded me, my honour'd Mamma, to write to you an Account of every thing that pleas'd me — I faid I would: But what a Task should I then have! — I did not think I had undertaken to write Volumes. — You must therefore allow me to be more brief than I had intended.

In the first Place, it would take up five or six long Letters to do Justice to the Oeconomy observed in this happy Family. You know that Mrs. B. has not changed one of the Servants of the Family, and only added her Polly to the Number. This is an unexampled thing, especially as they were all her Fellow Servants, as we may say: But since they have the Sense to admire so good an Example, and are proud to follow it, each to his and her Power, I

think it one of her peculiar Felicities to have continued them, and to choose to reform such as were

exceptionable, rather than difmiss them.

Their Mouths, Deb tells me, are continually full of their Lady's Praises, and Prayers, and Blessings, utter'd with such Delight, and Fervour for the happy Pair, that it makes her Eyes, she says, ready to run over to hear them.

Moreover, I think it an extraordinary Piece of Policy (whether defign'd or not) to keep them, as they were honest and worthy Folks; for had she turn'd them all off, what had she done but made as many Enemies as she had discarded Servants; and as many more as those had Friends and Acquaintance? And we all know, how much the Reputation of Families lies all the Mercy of Servants; and 'tis easy to guess to what Cause each would have imputed his or her Dismission. And so she has escaped, as she ought to escape, the Censure of Pride; and has made every one, instead of reproaching her with her Descent, find those Graces in her, which turn that very Disadvantage to her Glory.

She is exceeding affable to every one of them; always speaks to them with a Smile; but yet has such a Dignity in her Manner, that it secures her their Respect and Reverence; and they are ready to fly at a Look, and seem proud to have any Commands of hers to execute: Insomuch that the Words, My Lady commands so or so, from one Servant to another, are sure to meet with an indisputable Obedience, be

the Duty requir'd what it will.

If any of them are the least indisposed, her Care and Tenderness for them engage the Veneration and Gratitude of all the rest, who see in that Instance how kindly they will be treated, should they ail any thing themselves. And in all this I must needs say, the is very happy in Mrs. Jervis, who is an excel-

lent second to her admirable Lady; and is treated by her with as much Respect and Affection, as if she was her Mother.

tin

ere

ull

TS,

p-

to

of

as

he

as

as

e?

a-

to

or

rht

ery

nt,

if-

n;

nas

ner

to

ids

My

er,

be

are

ion

nce

iny

ay,

el-

ent

You may remember, Madam, that in the Account the gave us of her benevolent Round, as Lady Davers calls it, the fays, that as the was going to London, the should leave Directions with Mrs. Fervis about some of her Clients, as I find she calls her Poor, to avoid a Word, which her Delicacy Accounts harsh with regard to them, and oftentatious with respect to herself. I ask'd her, how (fince, contrary to her then Expectation, Mrs. Ferwis was permitted to be in Town with her) she had provided to answer her Intention as to those her Clients, whom she had referr'd to the Care of that good Woman?

She said, that Mr. Barlow, her Apothecary, was a very worthy Man, and she had given him a plenary Power in that Particular, and likewise desired him to recommend any new and worthy Case to her, that no deserving Person among the destitute sick poor, might be unreliev'd by reason of her Absence.

And here in London the has applied herself to Dr. her Parish-minister, a fine Preacher, and found Divine, who promifes on all Opportunities to pay his Respects to Mrs. B.) to recommend to her any poor Housekeepers, who would be glad to accept of some private Benefactions, and yet, having lived creditably, till reduced by Misfortunes, are ashamed to apply for publick Relief: And she has several of these already on her benevolent List, to some of whom she fends Coals now at the Entrance on the wintry Season, to some a Piece of Irish or Scottish Linen, or so many Yards of Norwich Stuff, for Gowns and Coats for the Girls, or Yorkshire Cloth for the Boys; and Money to some, of whose Prudence she is most affur'd in laying it out in the way they best can judge of. And she has moreover mortify'd, as the Scots call it, 150 l. as a Fund for Loans, without VOL IV.

Interest, of 5, 10, or 15, but not exceeding 20 l. to answer some present Exigence in some honest Families, who find the best Security they can, to repay it in a given Time; and this Fund she purposes, as she grows richer, she says, to increase; and prides herself every now-and-then, for having say'd so much Money already; and estimates pleasantly her Worth by this Sum, saying sometimes, Who would ever have thought I should have been worth 150 l. so soon? I shall be a rich Body in time. But in all these things she injoins Secrecy, which the Doctor has promis'd.

She told the Doctor what Mr. Adams's Office is in her Family; and hop'd, she faid, he would give her his Sanction to it; affuring him, that she thought it her Duty to ask it, as she was one of his Flock, and he, on that account, her principal Shepherd, which made a spiritual Relation between them, the Requifites of which, on her Part, were not to be dispensed You may be fure, the good Gentleman very cheerfully and applaudingly gave her his Confent; and when she told him how wel! Mr. Adams was provided for, and that she should apply to him to supply her with a Town-Chaplain, when she was depriv'd of him, he wish'd that the other Duties of his Function (for he has a large Parish) would permit him to be the happy Person himself; saying, that till she was supply'd to her Mind, either he or his Curate would take care that so laudable a Method should be kept up.

You will do me the Justice, Madam, to believe, that I very cheerfully join in my dear Friend's Sunday Duties; and I am not a little edify'd with the good Example, and with the Harmony and Goodwill that this excellent Method contributes to keep

up in the Family.

I must own I never saw such a Family of Love in my Life: For here, under the Eye of the best and most respected of Mistresses, they twice every Sunday see one another all together, (as they used to do in the Country)

1.

a-

y

as

ES

ch

th

ve

I

gs d.

is

ve

ht

nd

ch

11+

fed

ery

nd

ed

ner

of

on

the

p-

ake

p.

ve,

un-

the

od-

eep

ein

and

day

the

ry)

Country) superior as well as inferior Servants; and Deb tells me, after Mrs. B. and I are withdrawn, there are fuch friendly Salutations among them, that she never heard the like-Your Servant, good Master Longman; Your Servant, Master Colbrand, cries one and another: How do you, John? I'm glad to see you, Abraham! - All blessedly met once more! cries Jonathan, the venerable Butler, with his filver Hairs, as Mrs. B. always distinguishes him: Good Madam Jervis, cries another, you look purely this bleffed Day, thank God!—And they return to their feveral Vocations, so light, so easy, so pleas'd, so even temper'd in their Minds, as their cheerful Countenances, as well as Expressions, testify, that it is a Heaven of a House: And being wound up thus constantly once a Week, at least, like a good Eightday Clock, no Piece of Machinery that ever was made is fo regular and uniform as this Family is.

What an Example does this dear Lady let to all who fee her, to all who know her, and to all who hear of her; and how happy are they who have the Grace to follow it !—What a publick Bleffing would fuch a Mind as hers be, could it be vested with the Robes of Royalty, and adorn the Sovereign Dignity! But what are the Princes of the Earth, look at them in every Nation, and what they have been for Ages palt, compar'd to this Lady? who acts from the Impulses of her own Heart, unaided, in most Cases, by any human Example. In fhort, when I contemplate her innumerable Excellencies, and that sweetness of Temper, and universal Benevolence, which shine in every thing she says and does, I cannot iometimes help looking upon her in the Light of an Angel, dropp'd down from Heaven, and receiv'd into bodily Organs, to live among Men and Women, in order to flew what the first of the Species was deligned to be.

This reminds me of what my honoured Papa faid
D 2 once

once at our own House to Mr. B. * that there was but one such Angel descended from Heaven in a

thousand Years, and he had her.

And yet, here is the Admiration, that one fees all these Duties performed in such an easy and pleasant manner, as any body may persorm them; for they interfere not with any Parts of the Family Management; take up no Time from the necessary Employments; but rather aid and inspirit every one in the Discharge of all their domestic Services; and, moreover, keep their Minds in a State of Preparation for the more Solemn Duties of the Day; and all without the least Intermixture of Affectation, Enthusiasian, or Ostentation. O my dear Papa and Mamina, permit me but to tarry here till I am perfect in all these good Lessons, and how happy shall I be!

I am mindful, my dear Mamma, of yours and our good Neighbours Requests to Mrs. B. to oblige you with the Conversation she mentioned, the one with the young Ladies related to Mrs. Towers and Mrs. Arthur, the other with Mr. B. on her Father and Mother; a Subject, which always, however humble, raises her pen, and of Consequence our Expectations; and I will prevail upon her to let me transfer be them for your Entertainment. She writes down every thing that passes, which she thinks may one Day be of Use to Miss Goodwin, and to her own Children, if she shall live to have any, and to see them grow up. What a charming Mamma, as well as Wife and Mistress, will this dear Lady make!

As to the Town, and the Diversions of it, I shall not trouble you with any Accounts of them, because you know the one, and from the Time we passed here last Winter, as well as your former thorough Knowledge of both, you will want no Information about the other; for generally speaking, all who reside constantly in London, allow, that there is little other

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 266.

other Difference in the Diversions of one Winter and other, than such as are in Clothes; a few Variations of the Fashions only, which are mostly owing to the ingenious Contrivances of Persons who are to

get their Bread by diversifying them.

Was

in a

sall

fant

they

age-

loy-

the

ore-

1 for

rith-

husi-

am-

et in

be!

our

you

with

Mrs.

and

um-

pec-

tran-

rites

may

own

o fee

well

fhall

caule

affed

ough

ation

who

little

other

e!

Mrs. B. has undertaken to give Lady Davers an Account of Matters as they pass, and her Sentiments on what she sees. There must be something new in her Observations, because she is a Stranger to these Diversions, and unbiassed intirely by Favour or Prejudice; and so will not play the partial Critick, but give to a Beauty its due Praise, and to a Fault its due Censure, according to that Truth and Nature which are the unerring Guides of her Actions as well as Sentiments. These I will procure for you, as she gives me Leave to transcribe what she writes; and you'll be so good as to return them when perus'd, because I will lend them, as I used to do her Letters, to her good Parents; and so I shall give her a Pleasure at the same time, in the accommodating them with the Knowledge of all that passes, which she makes it a Point of Duty to do, because they take Delight in her Writings.

My Papa's Observation, that a Woman never takes a Journey that she don't forget something, is justify'd by me; for with all my Care I have forgot my Diamond Buckle, which Miss Nancy will find in the inner Till of my Bureau, wrapt up in Cotton; and I beg it may be sent me by the first Opportunity. With my humble Duty to you both, my dear indulgent Papa and Mamma, Thanks for the Favour I now rejoice in, and affectionate Respects to Miss Nancy, (I wish she would love me as well as love her) and Service to Mr. Murray, and all our

good Neighbours, conclude me

Your dutiful and highly favoured Daughter,
M. DARNFORD.

Mr. B. and Mrs. B. defire their Compliments of Congratulation to Mr. and Mrs. Peters, on the Marriage of their worthy Niece, which they knew nothing of till I told them of it: Also to your honour'd Selves they defire their kind Respects and Thanks for the Loan of your worthless Daughter. I experience every Hour fome new Token of their Politeness and Affection; and I make no Scruple to think I am with just such a Brother, and such a Sister as any happy Creature may rejoice in, and be proud of.—Mr. B. I cannot but repeat, is a charming Husband, and a most polite Gentleman. His Lady is always accusing herself to me of Aukwardness and Insufficiency; but not a Soul who fees her can find it out: She is all genteel ease; and the Admiration of every one who beholds her .- Only I tell her, with fuch Happiness in Possession, she is a little of the gravest fometimes.

[The Letter which contains the Account of the Conversation, requested by Miss Darnford, Letter XI. Vol. III. and mentioned by Miss in the preceding Letter, will be found the last Letter but one of this Volume. For Miss Darnford, having mislaid the first Copy of it, requested another, two or three Years after this, when married herself, for the sake of two young Ladies in the Neighbourhood, whose inconsiderate Rashness had given great Affliction to to their Parents. And Mrs. B. with a View to their particular Case, having made divers Additions and Improvements to it, it will come in more properly, as we conceive, in the Course of these Letters, at or near the Time when those Improvements were made to it.]

LETTER XI.

From Mrs. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My good Lady,

Proceedings between Mr. Murray and Miss Nanny Darnford: And Miss Polly makes it very easy for me to obey you in this Particular, and in very few Words; for she says, every thing was adjusted before she came away, and the Ceremony, she believes, may be performed by this Time. She rejoices that she was out of the way of it: For she says, love is so aukward a thing to Mr. Murray, and goodhumour so uncommon an one to Miss Nancy, that she hopes she shall never see such another Courtship.

Mr. B. teazes Miss Darnford, that she is a little piqu'd, (and that she shew'd it by a satirical Fling or two in a former Letter to me) that her humble Servant took her at her Word: And yet she acknowledges, that he believes she despises him; and indeed Mr. Murray has shewn, that he deserves to be de-

fpised by her.

She fays, nothing has piqued her in the whole Affair, but the Triumph it gave to that ill-natur'd Girl, as she justly calls her Sister, who has insulted her unmercifully on that Account; and yet with so low and mean a Spite, that she has been vex'd at herself to shew the least Concern on the Occasion. But ungenerous Teazing is an intolerable thing, as she says; and, often repeated, will vex a Mind naturally above it: Had it, says she, come from any body else, I should not have heeded it; but how can one despite a Sister?

We have been at the Play-house several times; and, give me leave to say, Madam, (for I have now read as well as seen several) that I think the Stage, by proper Regulations, might be made a profitable

D 4

Amufe

R

nade

its of

n the they

Allo

kind

your

Hour

ffec-

Iam

er as

roud

arm-

man.

ie of

nteel

who

Tap-

aveit

fthe

etter

pre-

one

flaid

hree

fake

hofe

n to

heir

and

rly,

t or

Amusement. But nothing more convinces one of the Truth of the common Observation, that the best things, corrupted, prove the worst, than these Representations. The Terror and Compunction for evil Deeds, the Compassion for a just Distress, and the general Beneficence which those lively Exhibitions are so capable of raising in the human Mind, might be of great Service, when directed to right Ends, and induced by proper Motives: Particularly where the Actions which the Catastrophe is design'd to punish are not set in such advantageous Lights, as shall destroy the End of the Moral, and make the Vice that ought to be censured, imitable; where Instruction is kept in View all the Way; and where Vice is punished, and Virtue rewarded.

But give me Leave to say, that I think there is hardly one Play I have seen or read hitherto, but has too much of Love in it, as that Passion is generally treated. How unnatural in some, how inflaming in others, are the Descriptions of it!— In most, rather Rant and Fury, like the Loves of the sercer Brute Animals, as Virgil, translated by Dryden, describes them, than the soft, sighing, searfully-hopeful Murmurs, that swell the Bosoms of our gentler Sex; and the respectful, timorous, submissive Complainings of the other, when the Truth of the Passion humanizes, as one may say, their more rugged Hearts.

In particular, what strange Indelicates do these Writers of Tragedy often make of our Sex? They don't enter into the Passion at all, if I have any Notion of it: But when the Authors want to paint it strongly, (at least in those Plays I have seen and read) their Aim seems to be to raise a Whirlwind, as I may say, which sweeps down Reason, Religion, and Decency; and carries every laudable Duty away before it; so that all the Example can serve to shew, is, how a disappointed Lover may rage and storm,

refent and revenge.

of

best

Re-

for

and

ibi-

nd,

ght

arly

n'd

hts,

the

rere

and

e is

has

ally

rin

her

ute

bes

ur-

and

s of

na-

refe

ney

any.

unt

and

nd,

on,

vay.

ew,

m,

he

The Play I first saw was the Tragedy of the Diftres'd Mother, and a great many beautiful things I think there are in it: But half of it is a tempestuous, cruel, ungoverned Rant of Passion, and ends in Cruelty, Bloodshed, and Desolation, which the Truth of Story not warranting, as Mr. B. tells me, makes it the more Pity, that the original Author (for it is a French Play translated, you know, Madam) had not conducted it, since it was in his Choice, with less Terror, and with greater Propriety, to the Passions intended to be raised, and actually raised in many Places.

I need not tell your Ladyship what the Story is; and yet it is necessary, as you demand my Opinion, that I should give a little Sketch of it. It is this, then: 'Pyrrhus, the Son of Achilles, is betrothed to 'Hermione, the Daughter of Menelaus; but Hester's

Widow, Andromache, with Astyanax, her Son by

Hector, in the Division of the Trejan Captives, falls to the Lot of Pyrrhus, who flighting Hermione,

(actually fent to his Court, and in his Court, waiting

his good Pleasure to espouse her) falls in Love with

Andromache. Orestes, the Son of Agamemnon, in Love with Hermione, is sent Embassador from the

other Greek Princes to demand the Life of Asyanax,

for fear the poor Infant should become another

Hector, and avenge his Father's Death; a most im-

probable, unprincely, and base-hearted Fear; as

Pyrrhus himself represents it. Pyrrhus, in hopes to

gain the Mother's Love, which he feeks on honourable Terms, offers to break with all his Allies, rather

than give up the Child; but finding her resolved on

Widowhood, determines to facrifice the Child, and

to marry Hermione. This creates a fine Distress in

Andromache, between a laudable Purpose to con-

tinue the Widow of so great and so deserving a Prince, and her desire to preserve the Life of her

Son, by that beloved Hero; and at last, overcome

by maternal Tenderness, finding no other Way, the

D 5

refo've

refolves to marry Pyrrhus, and yet to destroy herself · after the Marriage Ceremony had intitled her Son to • her new Husband's Protection: (A very strange, and onot very certain Expedient to answer her View!) and fo to die the Widow of Hettor, tho' fhe gave her Hand to Pyrrhus, and vow'd herself his at the · Altar, and of Consequence had a still less Power over her own Life than before.—Hermione, a highfpirited Lady, raging in her Love to Pyrrhus, and for the Slight and Disappointment she met with, obliges Orestes, on Promise of giving her Heart and · Hand to him, to murder Pyrrhus at the Altar, · while the Ceremony of Marriage with Andromache is performing. He causes this to be done. When done, he applies to Hermione, expecting her Applause, who then violently upbraids him for having obey'd her; and flying towards the Temple, meets

the Body of Pyrrhus, and stabs herself upon it.
Upon this, Orestes runs mad, and it is said to be the finest mad Scene in any English Play.—Andromache remains Queen; her Son lives; and being diverted from her own bloody Purpose, she has nothing to do, but to give Orders for the Funeral of

Pyrrhus, and to bring her Son in Triumph from a Prison to a Palace.

This is, in brief, the Story. Now, Madam, fince you expect it from me, I will tell you, in my artless Way, what I think not quite so pretty, and what is great and beautiful in this Play; which upon the whole, however, I was much pleas'd with, and should have been more, had there been less Terror in it, and more Probability, as I presume to say, in some of its Parts; and had not the softest Passion in Nature been treated as such a slaming thing, as cannot be a worthy Example to Female Minds.

And first, I could not but observe, that the Plea of the Princes of Greece for the Murder of Asyanax, a helpless Infant, to procure which, and for nothing

else, they send one of the chief Princes of Greece Embassador to Pyrrhus, is a very poor one, and most easily answer'd.—For thus Orestes says, among other very pompous things:

Have you so soon forgot the mighty Hector?
The Greeks remember his high-brandish'd Sword,
That fill'd their States with Widows and with Orphans,
For which they call for Vengeance on his Son.
Who knows what he may one Day prove?——

And in another place:

rfelf

n to

and

w!)

gave

the

wer

igh-

and

ith, and

tar,

ache

hen Ap-

ring

eets

dro-

eing

has

al of

m a

nce

at is

the

ould

and f its

ture

t be

Plea

nax,

else,

ning .

Troy may again revive, and a new Hector Rife in Astyanax.

And in another Place:

Sir, call to mind th' unrivall'd Strength of Troy, Her Walls, her Bulwarks, and her Gates of Brass, Her Kings, her Heroes, and embattled Armies.

What Tragedy Pomp is this! How poor the Pleas from Princes and Heroes, when it is so easily answer'd by Pyrrhus, in this manner!

I call them all to mind; and see them all Confus'd in Dust; all mix'd in one wide Ruin; All but a Child, and he in Bondage held. What Vengeance can we fear from such a Troy?

And a little before:

Let dastard Souls be timorously wise:
But tell them, Pyrrhus knows not how to form:
Ear fancy'd Ills and Dangers out of Sight.

And still with greater Contempt:

On more important Councils. When I heard The Name of their Embassador, I hop'd Some glorious Enterprize was taking Birth.

D 6

is

Is Agamemnon's Son dispatch'd for this?
And do the Grecian Chiefs, renown'd in War,
A Race of Heroes, join in close Debate,
To plot an Infant's Death?

But what if this very Pyrrbus, after twenty humane and generous things which the Poet makes him fay, shews, that all this right thinking is only owing to his Passion for the Mother? And as soon as she gives him to understand she is resolv'd to remain Hestor's Widow, he determines to give way to the Embassy and Threats of the Grecian Princes, which he had so justly despised, and to destroy the Infant. But first tells her,

'Tis true, Hermione was fent to share My Throne and Bed-

A fine Errand for a high-spirited Lady; and to wait afterwards his good Pleasure in his own Court, thro' a Series of Slights and Contempts, for the Performance of his Vows! And he generously, like a true insulting Man, boasts,

The Vows which you neglect.

To which Andromache nobly answers:

No Hector, to lament: She has not lost

A Husband by your Conquests: Such a Husband,

Tormenting Thought! whose Death alone has made

Your Sire immortal!

This enrages the Hero; and what he should have admir'd her for, had his Soul been half as noble as hers, he thus resents:

Ive been too tame; I will awake to Vengeance!
The Son shall answer for his Mother's Scorn.
The Greeks demand him: Nor will I endanger
My Realms, to pleasure an ungrateful Woman.

Accord-

Accordingly he resolves to sacrifice the Child; to do Justice to Hermione, out of Spite to Andromache: And most ungenerously, knowing Orestes loves Hermione to Distraction, tells him, he shall grace his Nuptial Rites, and he will receive Hermione from his Hands.

hu-

akes

only

foon

re-

ay to

ices,

the

d to

ourt,

Per-

ke a

ł,

rde

lave

e as

rd-

But now again, see what succeeds to this: One Look of Favour from Andromache reverses all his new Resolves, makes him throw new Indignities on Hermione, new Contempts upon the Greek Princes, and shew, that if he acts right in one Point, the saving of the Child, it is from wrong and unjustifiable Motives; and yet the Poet seems to design him an amiable Character.

Now, Madam, could not a Distress have been formed in this Story from more laudable and proper Motives? Should this Passion of unbridled Love be represented in such a strong, such an irrestible Light to an Audience, who must be taught, that the highest Ingratitude, the most rageful Extreme of sensual Passion, the most unjustifiable Actions, and the Sacrifice of all Considerations of publick Good, and private Right, had Examples all in this Piece to warrant them?

'Tis true, Pyrrhus is punish'd by a cruel Affaffination—Hermione falls by her own Hand for causing Orestes to procure him to be murdered, and the Phrensy of Orestes becomes his Punishment: But what a Scene of Terror does all this raise? How unlikely to be an Examplar either to publick or private Life? And what a hard Fate is that of Hermione, slighted, despised, insulted, by the Man she lov'd, to whom she was betrothed, and whose Resentment therefore was warranted, had it shewn itself in almost any Act short of the Murder, which, in the Violence of her Passion, she commanded Orestes to perpetrate?

Then,

Then, Madam, the Love of Hermione for Pyrrhus is not, I think, of that delicate Sort which ought to be set before our Sex for an Example.—'Tis Rage, not Love, that of a Woman slighted; and, however just, supposing our Sex to have such revengeful Hearts, when slighted by the Man they love, is not so exemplary as one would wish: And, besides, she is represented as sometimes sighing and wishing for Orestes; when a true Love bears not the Thought of any Object but that one it sighs for, even should that one be ungrateful. Thus it is said of Orestes by her Considente:

Orestes, whose Return you oft had wish'd, The Man whose Suff'rings you so oft lamented, And often prais'd his Constancy and Love.

Then Hermione repeats her Woman's Words:

That Love, that Constancy, so ill requited— Upbraids me to myself: I blush to think How I have us'd him; and would shun his Presence.

The Motive for this, however, is neither Justice nor Generosity, but Pride: Indeed, it must be own'd, a Pride very natural to a Female Mind, in such Circumstances as hers:

What will be my Confusion, when he sees me Neglected and forsaken, like himself? "Her Insolence at last is well repaid!" I cannot bear the Thought.

And then, the Moment she sees him—this is her blunt Question to him, notwithstanding all her Shame to see him:

How am I to interpret, Sir, this Visit?
Is it a Compliment of Form, or Love?

Does this, Madam, shew any thing of the Delicacy of Sex or Condition?—And would one think it right, after

after she had thus extorted from him a repeated Confession of his Love, or Weakness, as he calls it, to upbraid him, that it ill becomes the Embassador of

Greece, to talk of Love or dying?

rhus

it to

age,

ever

eful

not

fhe

for

ould

estes

nse.

ice

'd,

ir-

ier

her

icy

ha, ter In short, Madam, I think none of the Love in this Piece is such a Love, however suited to Hermione's Character and Circumstances, as is sit to be recommended to our Example: 'Tis a Love that shocks one, and is rather Rage and Tumult than Love, and succeeds accordingly. So that of Pyrrhus is ungovern'd, wild, unjust, ungenerous Caprice. Hermione's is sounded in confess'd Ingratitude to Orestes, and she perseveres in it to Pyrrhus, when the Indignities put upon her should have made her sooner wish for Death, than for so perjur'd a Man; and yet, I think, she shews an inconsistent Tenderness for Orestes, (as I have hinted) while her Passion for Pyrrhus stames out with so much Violence.

The Motive of Andromache (for hers is the most perfect Character in the Piece, and defigned to be fo by the Poet) to fave her Son, is the best a Woman could have to excuse her for marrying the Man who had flaughter'd all her Relations: But the Uncertainty of securing that Point, by the mere Formality of joining Hands with Pyrrhus, and her Resolution to destroy herself, in defiance of her Vows just plighted to be his, was a strange Expedient to preferve her Widowhood, and her Child: For if it was very likely, that a Man fo wildly in Love with her, as to forego all other just and prudent Considerations for her, (and who had fhewn, that he would have destroy'd her Son, but for the sake of her Person) would, when disappointed by so great a Rashness, have hazarded his Realms in defence of her Son?

But of all things, commend me to the noble Regard for Self, in her Woman and Confidante Cephisa, to whom Andromache communicates her rash Purpose, injoining her a willing Secrecy; the only way

the Poet had to let us know it, fince it was not put in execution; for the flews that Regard to her dear Self, in this tragick Performance, which, in a Comedy, would have raised a Laugh, no doubt, as a Satire on Ladies Women:

Alas! I fear, - I - never shall outlive you?

These things struck me, Madam, when I saw the Play; and when I came to read it, I was more confirm'd in my Sentiments. But now I will transcribe

fome Passages, which pleased me much.

The Storms, and Doubts, and Uncertainty of wild ungoverned Love, are very naturally, I humbly think, painted in several Scenes of this Play, in the Characters of Hermione and Pyrrhus; and no where more affectingly than in the Upbraidings of Hermione to Orestes, after the had found her bloody Purposes too well comply'd with. Thus:

What, if transported by my boundless Passion, I could not bear to see him wed another Were you t' obey a jealous Woman's Phrensy? You hould have div'd into my inmost Thoughts: My Heart, the' full of Rage, was free from Malice: And all my Anger was Excess of Love. Wby did you take me at my Word? You faw The Struggles of my Soul; you heard me rave. You should have question'd me a thousand times; Yet fill have doubted, fill have question'd on, Before you ventur'd on a Life fo precious. Why did you not return? Why not confult me A fecond time? And undetermin'd fill. Again return, and Still find new Delays?

The Scene between Andranache and Hermione, when the former supposes the latter on the Point of marrying Pyrrbus, and bespeaks her Interest for her Son's Life, affected me much, and was nobly acted by Mrs. Oldfield; who, after affuring her, that her Love to her flain Lord was the only Love she could ever indulge, as Hermione slies her, cries—

Ab! Madam, whither, whither do you fly?
Where can your Eyes behold a Sight more pleasing
Than Hector's Widow, suppliant and in Tears?
I come not an alarm'd, a jealous Fae,
To envy you the Heart your Charms have won.—
But oh! I have a Son:—And you, one Day,
Will be no Stranger to a Mother's Fondness.

Was not this, Madam, a moving and interesting Plea? And is not what follows affectingly noble?

But Heav'n forbid, that you should ever know

A Mother's Sorrow for an only Son,

Her foy! her Blis! her last surviving Comfort!

When ev'ry Hour she trembles for his Life.

Your Pow'r o'er Pyerhus may relieve my Fears.

Alas! what Danger is there in a Child,

Sav'd from the Wreck of a whole ruin'd Empire?

Let me go hide him in a defart Isle.

You may rely upon my tender Care

To keep him far from Perils of Ambition:

All he can learn of me, will be to weep.

This is sweetly moving, nobly pathetick. But I am angry at the Poet, if he could have help'd it, for drawing in Hermione such an ungenerous and unprincely Insult upon the Royal Mourner, when in the Height of her own Prosperity, as she imagin'd, and her Rival subjected beneath her Feet—Fie upon him, thus to make her say, like a true Woman, as our Censurers will reslect!

Madam, if Pyrrhus must be wrought to Pity, No Woman does it better than yourself: If you gain him, I shall comply of course.

This

ne, c of her ted by

put

lear Co-

s a

the

on-

ibe

of

bly

the

ione

ofes

ce;

This from one Woman to another, much more from one Princess to another; from the Elated to the Captive, could not be faid, furely .- Nor do I fee there was any need of it: For had the Poet made Hermione on this Occasion her own Empire secured, as the thought) give a more generous and humane Answer, would it not have heighten'd the Distress, when fuch a Character should fink, as she had been basely injur'd by the Man she lov'd, and whose Crime was owing to the Rage of flighted Love? Why should he choose to make Andromache's Part thus nobly moving, at the Expence of the other Character, in a Point where Justice, Generosity, and Humanity, were fo much concern'd? And would not a fine Instruction have lain here for the Audience, to have had Compassion for the Distresses of another; and so much the more, as that other was a Rival funk at the Feet of the Prosperous?-Indeed, Hermione, which by the way Mrs. Porter acted incomparably, is a Character full of Rage and Violence; of Jealousy, and great Cause had she for it: But what then? Could she not, a Princess as she was, when her own Love was fecured, for so she thought, have been made capable of feeling a Diffress so nobly pleaded, by Motives so becoming a Mother's Lips, and a Bridal Virgin's Prospects? - But I am upon the Author's Beauties.

Andromache's Plea to Pyrrhus, when, thus insulted by Hermione, she sees no Hope of any way to preserve her Son, but by soothing the proud Heart of the Prince whom her Resusal had incensed, is very sweet in the Mouth of Captive Royalty:

——Oh, Sir, excuse
The Pride of Royal Blood, that checks my Soul,
And knows not how to be importunate.
You know, alas! I was not born to kneel,
To sue for Pity, and to own a Master.

And afterwards:

ore

0 1

ade

€d,

ane

eis,

een

ofe

e?

art

12-

u-

ot

ce,

r;

val

27-

n-

e; ut

is,

it,

ly

s,

n

be

ve

ce

10

đ

Behold how low you have reduc'd a Queen!
These Eyes have seen my Country laid in Ashes;
My Kindred fall in War; my Father slain;
My Husband dragg'd in his own Blood; my Son
Condemn'd to Bondage; and myself a Slave.
Yet in the midst of these unheard-of Woes,
'Twas some Relief to find myself your Captive;
And that my Son, deriv'd from ancient Kings,
Since he must serve, had Pyrrhus for his Master.
IVhen Priam kneel'd, the great Achilles wept;
I hop'd I should not find his Son less noble:
I thought the Brave were still the most compassionate.
O do not, Sir, divide me from my Child,
If he must die———

Then there is a fine Scene recollected by Andromache to her Woman, between Hettor and herself, on the Morning he set out for the Action in which he was slain:

That Morn, Cephisa! that ill-fated Morn!
My Husband bid thee bring Astyanax.
He took him in his Arms; and, as I wept,
Wy Wife, my dear Andromache, said he,
(Heaving with stifled Sighs, to see me weep.)

Finely said, and the Hero all preserv'd! He sigh'd, not for fear of the Foe, but to see his beloved Lady weep!—From that HUMANITY, which should always be inseparable, I think, whether in Fiction or Fact, from true Heroism: And that other inseparable, PIETY; as follows;

What Fortune may attend my Arms, the Gods
Alone can tell. To thee I give the Boy;
Preserve him as the Token of our Loves.
If I should fall, let him not miss his Sire,
While thou surviv'st, but by thy tender Care,
Let the Son see, that thou didst love his Father.

And

And the Advice, lest by Andromache with Cephisa, for her Son, when the resolves to kill herself, after the Nuptial Ceremony is perform'd, is very worthy; after a Scene of passionate Fondness well express'd:

I dy'd to fave him—And would die again.——
Season his Mind with early Hints of Glory:
Make him acquainted with his Ancestors;
Trace out their shining Story in his Thoughts:
Dwell on th' Explaits of his immortal Father,
And sometimes—

Very pretty:

—— let him hear his Mother's Name:
Let him reflect upon his Royal Birth
With modest Pride. Pyrrhus will prove a Friend:
But let him know he has a Conqu'ror's Right.
He must be taught to stifle his Resentments,
And sacrifice his Vengeance to his Safety.

And to his Gratitude too, Madam, should it not have been said, when he was so generously protected against the Demand and Menaces of confederate Kings?

Should be prove headstrong, rash, or unadvis'd, He then would frustrate all his Mother's Virtue, Provoke his Fate, and I shall die in vain!

Very nobly said! But I cannot forbear making one Observation on Occasion of Self-murder, which, however the Poets may be justify'd by the Examples of the Greeks and Romans, when they draw their Stories from them, yet, in such a gloomy, saturnine Nation as ours, where Self-murders are more frequent than in all the Christian World besides, methinks all those Stories should be avoided, for publick Entertainment:

tainment: Or, where there is a Necessity, as in the Play of Cato, for Instance, to introduce such a wicked Practice, the bad Example should be obviated, and the Poison it may administer, antidoted by more forcible Lessons than what these sew doubtful Words express:

I fear I've been too bafty !-

la,

ter

у;

nd:

not

Eted

rate

king

ich,

ples

their

pine

uent es all

aterent: So, in this Tragedy I am speaking of, when Hermione destroys herself, and Andromache designs to do the like, should the English Poet have lest this Practice unguarded or unaccompanied by proper Lessons

and Censures in such a Country as ours?

The staggering Doubts and Distress of Hermione, after she had engaged Orestes in the Murder of Pyrrhus, between her Love and her Resentment; her Questions to her Woman, whether, as he approach'd the Temple to marry her Rival, in Breach of his Vows of Betrothment to her, his Countenance shewed not some Tokens of Remorse; are very natural to one in her amorous Circumstance, I fancy:

But, say, Cleone, didst thou mark him well?
Was his Brow smooth? Say, did there not appear
Some Shade of Grief? Some little Cloud of Sorrow?
Did he not stop? Did he not once look back?
Didst thou approach him? Was he not confounded?
Did he not—Oh! be quick, and tell me all.

This, Madam, I think, is charmingly natural. And on Cleone's Answer, That he went to the Temple all Joy and Transport, unguarded, and all his Cares employed to gratify Andromache in her Son's Sasety, it is the less to be wondered at, that she should be quite exasperated, and forgetting all her Love for the ingrateful Prince, should say:

Enough! he dies!—the Traitor!—Where's Orestes?

There

There are several Circumstances of Horror in this Play, that made me shudder; but I think none like the Description the Poet puts into the Mouth of Pylades, the inseparable Friend of Orestes, who, far from avoiding to shock the Soul of his Friend, by gently infinuating the Fate of that Hermione, on whom he had fixed his Happiness, thus terribly, with all the Aggravations that could attend such a Tragedy, points out the horrid Action; taking Care even to make her as impious in her Reproaches of the Deity for her own Rashness, as she was in the Violence by which she dies; and so leaving a dreadful Example, (which I presume was not needful to be left) of final Impenitence, especially in a suffering Character, that had not merited the Evils she met with.

Thus it is described; and I am affected with the Transcription of a Passage which the Poet has labour'd more than he ought, I think, to shew the

Force of his descriptive Vein:

Full of Disorder, Wildness in her Looks, With Hands expanded, and dishevell'd Hair, Breathless and pale, with Shrieks she sought the Temple. In the Mid-way she met the Corpse of Pyrrhus: She startled at the Sight: Then, stiff with Horror, Gaz'd frightful! Waken'd from the dire Amaze, She rais'd her Eyes to Heav'n, with such a Look, As spoke her Sorrows, and reproach'd the Gods. Then plung'd a Poniard deep within her Breast, And fell on Pyrrhus, grasping him in Death.

F

t

to

t

7

This, from a Friend, to a Lover of the miserable Hermione, tho' the Poet might think it the only Way he had left to make Orestes run quite distracted, yet was not, I presume to say, very judiciously put into the Mouth of a beloved Friend, anxious for his Safety, and to get him off, after the Murder; and whose Part,

Part, till now, had been rather that of foothing, like a true Friend, the Sorrows of his Mind.

is

ke

yar

by

m

Ill

у,

to

ty

ce

n-

t)

a-

he

a-

he

le.

le

y

et

to

y,

se

t,

The Moral of the whole only regards Andromache; nor is there, indeed, any thing but Violence and Terror in the rest of the Story and Characters, as if the Poet was determined to fink all into one, and make that great, at the Expence of the rest. 'Tis, however, in my humble Opinion, a good one, to shew, that Persons in Distress ought never to despond, be their Afflictions what they will; and ought to have weigh'd with Andromache herself, to make her avoid the Crime of Suicide, which she had resolv'd upon, fince this Moral is put into her Mouth; but fo late, that it feems rather to make her good by an Event she could not foresee, than by the Prudence of her Reflections, which would not, without that Event, have prevented her from a rath Action, that must have render'd the Moral ineffectual:

Tho' plung'd in Ills, and exercis'd in Care, Yet never let the noble Mind despair, Where press'd by Dangers, and beset with Foes, The Gods their timely Succour interpose; And when our Virtue sinks, o'erwhelm'd with Grief, By unforeseen Expedients bring Relief.

Now, Madam, as good as this Moral is, I should rather, in Generosity, have had it recommended from any Mouth than that of Andromache: For what is the Consolation she receives? What are the Expedients she so much rejoices in? Why, in the first Place, the Murder of a Prince who lov'd her more than his own Glory, and to whom she had just given her Faith, as a second Husband, tho' forced to it, from a laudable Motive: And next, the Selfmurder of Hermione, the Distraction of Oreses, and the Prospect of succeeding with her Son to the Throne of the murder'd Prince; from which, how-

ever, she could not expect but to be driven, and her Son at last to be destroyed, by those vengesul Confederates, who had join'd, by a solemn Embassy to demand his Life, and who now, by his Elevation, had stronger Reasons to apprehend Danger from him, and less Difficulty to effect his Ruin, since Pyrrhus was no more.

But, judge, my dear Lady, what, after the Play was over, I must think of the Epilogue, and indeed of that Part of the Audience, which called out for it:

An Epilogue spoken by Mrs. Oldsield in the Character of Andromache, that was more shocking to me, than the most terrible Parts of the Play; as by lewd, and even senseless Double-entendre, it could be calculated only to esface all the tender, all the virtuous Sentiments, which the Tragedy was design'd to raise.

(

t

P

R

a

fe

n

21

b

01

V

The Pleasure this was receiv'd with by the Men was equally barbarous and insulting; every one turning himself to the Boxes, Pit, and Galleries, where Ladies were, to see how they look'd, and how they stood an emphatical and too-well pronounc'd Ridicule, not only upon the Play in general, but upon the Part of Andromache in particular, which had been so well sustain'd by an excellent Actress; and I was extremely mortised to see my favourite (and the only perfect) Character, debas'd and despoil'd, and the Widow of Hestor, Prince of Troy, talking Nastiness to an Audience, and setting it out with all the wicked Graces of Action, and affected Archness of Look, Attitude, and Emphasis.

I stood up-Dear Sir !- Dear Miss !- faid I.

What's the Matter, my Love? faid Mr. B. smileing, who expected, as he told me afterwards, to see me mov'd by this vile Epilogue—for it is always call'd for, it seems.

Why have I wept the Distresses of the injur'd Hermione? whisper'd I: Why have I been mov'd

er

n-

to

n,

mi

ce

ay

ed

t:

12-

ne,

by

be

ir-

n'd

en

ne

es,

ow

c'd

but

ich

ſs;

rite

ind

039

out

ted

ile-

fee

ays

ir'd

v'd

by

by the Murder of the brave Pyrrhus, and shock'd of the Madness of Orestes? Is it for this? See you not Hector's Widow, the noble Andromache, inverting the Design of the whole Play, satirizing her own Sex, but indeed most of all ridiculing and shaming, in my Mind, that Part of the Audience, who have call'd for this vile Epilogue, and those who can be delighted with it, after such Scenes of Horror and Distress?

He was pleased to say, smiling, I expected, my Dear, that your Delicacy, and Miss Darnford's too, would be shock'd on this preposterous Occasion. I never saw this Play, Rake as I was, but the Impropriety of the Epilogue sent me away distatisfied with it, and with human Nature too: And you only see, by this one Instance, what a Character that of an Actor or Actress is, and how capable they are to personate any Thing for a forry Subsistence.

Well, but, Sir, faid I, are there not, think you, extravagant Scenes and Characters enough in most Plays to justify the Censures of the Virtuous upon them, that the wicked Friend of the Author must crown the Work in an Epilogue, for fear the Audience should go away improved by the Representation? It is not, I see, always Narrowness of Spirit, as I have heard some say, that opens the Mouths of good People against these Diversions.

In this wild way talk'd I; for I was quite out of Patience at this unnatural and unexpected Piece of Ridicule, tack'd to so serious a Play, and coming after such a Moral.

Here is a Specimen, my dear Lady, of my Obfervations on the first Play I saw. How just, or
how impertinent, I must leave to your better Judgment. I very probably expose my own Ignorance
and Folly in them; but I will not say, Presumption,
because you have put me upon the Task, which
otherwise I should hardly have attempted. I have
very little Reason therefore to blame myself on this
Vol. IV.

fcore; but, on the contrary, (if I can escape your Ladyship's Censure) have cause to pride myself in the Opportunity you have thereby given me to shew my Readiness to obey you; and the rather, since I am sure of your kindest Indulgence, now you have given me Leave to style myself

Your Ladyship's obliged Sister, and humble Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XII.

My dear Lady,

GAVE you in my last, my bold Remarks upon a TRAGEDY—The Distress'd Mother. I will now give you my shallow, Notions of a COMEDY—The

Tender Husband.

I lik'd this Part of the Title; tho' I can't fay I was pleas'd at all with the other, explanatory of it; Or,—The Accomplish'd Fools. But when I was told it was written by Sir Richard Steele, and that Mr. Addison had given some Hints towards it, if not some Characters, O dear Sir, said I, give us your Company to this Play; for the Authors of the Spectarnot possibly produce a faulty Scene.

B. indeed smil'd; for I had not then read the Play: And the Earl of F. his Counters, Miss Darnford, Mr. B. and myself, agreed to meet with a Niece of my Lord's in the Stage Box, which was

taken on purpose.

There seems to me, my dear Lady, to be a great deal of Wit and Satire in the Play: But, upon my Word, I was grievously disappointed as to the Morality of it: Nor, in some Places, is *Probability* preserved; and there are divers Speeches so very free, that I could not have expected to meet with such, from the Names I mention'd.

I should

11

W

ve

B.

On

he

I

it;

old

Ir.

ot

our

ec-

ead

lis

ith

Vas

eat

my

10-

re-

ee,

ch,

uld

I should be afraid of being censur'd for my Prefumption, were I to write to any body less indulgent to me than your Ladyship. But I will make no Apologies to you, Madam.—Let me see, then, can I give you the brief History of this Comedy, as I did of the Tragedy?—I profess I hardly know whether I can or not; at least, whether I should or not. —But I'll try:

The Tender Husband, Mr. CLERIMONT, has for his Wife a Lady who has travelled, and is far gone in all the French Fashions: She brought me, says he, a noble Fortune; and I thought, she had a Right to share it; therefore carried her to see the

World, forfooth, and make the Tour of France and Italy, where the learn'd to lose her Money

gracefully, to admire every Vanity in our Sex, and contemn every Virtue in her own; which, with

ten Thousand other Perfections, are the ordinary

Improvements of a travell'd Lady.'

Tender as the Husband was to be supposed to the Wise, which, by the way, is not extremely apparent, in proper or right Instances of Tenderness, I presume to think, he shews no great Politeness to the Sex in general in this Speech; and the Poet will be the less excusable for it, if he has not drawn a general Character of travell'd Ladies; and much less still if it shall appear, that that of Mrs. Clerimont, on which this general Resection is founded, is carry'd beyond Nature and Probability too.

But what is the Method the tender Husband takes to reclaim the Lady?—Why this: He sets a former Mistress of his own to work, in Man's Clothes, to insnare her: And thus he declares himself— Now I can neither mortify her Vanity, that I may live at

Ease with her, nor quite discard her, till I have

catch'd her a little enlarging her innocent Freedoms, as the calls them. For this End I am con-

tent to be a French Husband, tho' now-and-then, E 2 ' with thee well provided for.'

Here's a fine moral Scene open'd, my Lady, with regard to Mr. Clerimont, his Lady, and his kept Mistrels! Mr. Fainlove, alias Mirs. Lucy, undertakes the Task, in hopes to live with Mr. Clerimont, in case of a Divorce from his Wise; or to be provided for, in case the Plot does not succeed; which makes it apparent, that, to say nothing of his Morality, poor Lucy had not met with a generous Man in Mr. Clerimont, since, after the Forseiture of her Honour, she was still to do a more infamous Job, if possible, to procure for herself a Provision from him.

Then Mr. Clerimont proceeds to instruct the new-made Man, how to behave like a Coxcomb, in order to engage his Lady's Attention, and to join in all her Foibles, till she can furnish him with an Opportunity to detect them in such a way, as shall give a Pretence for a Divorce (a Hint that has been scandalously improved and made more fashionable, since this Play was written); and this he does in such free Language and Action, as must disgust any modest Person of either Sex.

Then the Poet causes this faithful Mistress, in order to make her Character shine above that of the Wise, and indeed above his own likewise, to present her Employer

Employer with Bills for 500l. which she tells him she won of his Wise the preceding Night; and makes up 2000l. which Mr. Clerimont says, this unprovided for Mistress of his has won from his Lady, and honestly given him; or else he could not, he owns, have supply'd her Gaming Losses. And Lucy declares, she will gain him for ever from his Lady, if she can: Yet, you'll see, by-and-by, that it is not Love to his particular Person, more than any other, that is Lucy's Inducement: Of course then it must be Wickedness for Wickedness Sake!

The next Character is CAPTAIN CLERIMONT, Brother to the other Gentleman, a Man of Fashion and of the World, who being a younger Brother, has his Fortune to make; and we shall see presently

how he proposes to make it.

d

٧,

fs

to

e.

at

a-

10

ld

ly

ee

th

pt

es

in ed

h

0-

m

er b,

n

X'-

rin

p-

ve

n-

ce

eft

cr

e,

IL

Cr

The next is POUNCE, an infamous Jobber or Broker of Stocks, Marriages, or any thing—whole Character be pleased to take in his own Words: 'Now' 'tis my Profession to assist a free-hearted young Fel-low against an unnatural long-liv'd Father—to distincumber Men of Pleasure of the Vexation of unimieldy Estates; to support a feeble Title en an Inheritance!—One that Mr. Clerimont says, by way of Praise, he has seen prompting a stammering Witness in Westminster-Hall, that wanted Instruction; and could venture his Ears with great Bravery for his Friend.

A wer e Character than this can there be? Yet

is it not produced to be punished, neither.

The next Person introduced is HEZEKIAH TIPKIN, a Banker in Lombard-street, a Man of an infamous and sordid Character, and a vile Usurer: Who has a beautiful Niece, Miss BRIDGET TIPKIN, over-run with Affectation and Romance; with a great Fortune in Money, which so attracts the Captain, that he supposes, in a sordid, but witty manner enough, all imaginable Persections in her Person, before he has

E 3 a Sight

a Sight of it. This young Lady, by a Treaty between her Uncle Tipkin and Sir HARRY GUBBIN, a tyrannical, positive, hot headed Country Gentleman, is design'd to be marry'd to HUMPHREY, the Son of Sir Harry, a Creature so savage, so rough, and so stupid, that there cannot be drawn a stronger Contrast between his Character and that of Miss

Bridget's.

Mr. Pounce, who is employed as a Broker in their Match, is, for a Reward of 10001, to cheat them and poor Humphrey, and to procure this young Lady for Captain Clerimont. Admirable Justice and Morality, all round! you'll fay, my Lady .- Forthis Purpose, it was necessary that Mr. Pounce should find Mr. Humphrey so great a Fool, that, tho' he never faw him before, he very eafily fets him against his Father, and against his Cousin Bridget; and all this on the Wedding-day, in order to induce him to make court to a Person he tells him of, but never saw: And who should this Person be, as he tells him, but the Sifter of Fainlove, Clerimont's Man-dress'd Mistress, which Sister, however, was to be Fainlove, or Luce herself, with a worthy Intent to impose upon poor Humphrey, as a Wife, this cast-off Mistress of Clerimont? A just, a generous, an exemplary Plot this!

The next Character is an old Maiden Gentlewoman, Aunt to Miss Bridget, an antiquated Virgin, who, as Pounce says, has a mighty affectation for Youth, and is a great Lover of Men and Money—and she is set over her Niece as a Promoter of the Match with Humphrey.—Over this Lady Mr. Pounce has a great Ascendant, half for sordid Reasons, and half for amorous ones; and she makes a thorough ridiculous and improbable Character. Pounce introduces Captain Clerimont into the Company of the Aunt and her Niece; and entertains the former while the Captain engages the latter on the Subject of her

her beloved Romance. These, with Mrs. Clerimont's Maid JENNY, are the principal Characters.

I need not, my Lady, take up much of your Time

or my own, to tell you how they proceed.

be-

IN,

tle-

the

igh,

ager

Aiss

beir

nem

ady

10-

ur-

find

ever

his

this

ake

w:

but

Aif-

ove,

pon

s of

Plot

WO-

gin,

for

the

unce

and

ugh

ro-

the

mer

tiof

her

Mr. Clerimont, then, after bearing from his Wife what hardly any Gentleman could bear, surprises Fainlove as a Man (and a very wicked Scene it is in every Part) taking shocking Freedoms with her: And falling into a feigned Rage, threatens to kill Fainlove: The Lady at first menaces, and is haughty and arrogant; but finding by her Husband's Behaviour to Lucy, whom he then addresses with Fondness before her Face, that she is trick'd by a Woman in Man's Habit, in her Turn would kill the Impostor as Lucy, whom as Fainlove the tried to fave; and a Scene on this Occasion occurs, to my thinking, very Mr. Clerimont then upbraids her with ridiculous. her Guilt; and, what was hardly ever known in Nature, the reforms inflantly on the Spot, and expresses all the Signs of Contrition imaginable. forgives and receives her, guilty as she is in her Intention, her Person only untainted, and an Adultress in her Mind, as the would have been in Fact, had Fainlove been a Man: And a moving Scene, had it been from proper Motives, follows. Yet, (still more preposterous, excuse me, Madam) afterwards she refumes all her travell'd and nonsentical Airs, all her improbable Follies, to help to support the Plot in fayour of Captain Clerimont upon Miss Bridget, and the infamous one of Pounce's and Mr. Clerimont's against poor Humphrey, the only innocent Character in the Play, and the only suffering one; and this latter, as well as the former Plot, being brought about, a laughing scene is produced, by Sir Harry's foundly cudgeling his stupid Son, for permitting himself to be to foolishly drawn in.

Now, my good Lady, can you fee one Character, and, I think, I have given them juftly, fit to be fet

up for an Example in this celebrated Play of an Author so celebrated? I must own, as I said before, I was greatly disappointed in my Expectations of it. There is, indeed, a great deal of sprightly Wit, and Knowledge of the wicked Part of the World, display'd in it, as it seems to me, by what I have heard Mr. B. talk sometimes; but there is not one Character in it, but what is shockingly immoral, and, at the same time, either above or below Nature; so that the Ridicule which is intended in it, on the bad Characters, cannot, in my poor Opinion, be just or efficacious.

For, first, there never, I believe, could be a Gentleman so soolishly tender, yet so plottingly cruel,

to his Lady, as Mr. Clerimont.

There never could be such a very fantastical Lady as Mrs. Clerimont.—And there is such an Improbability in the intimate Access, which Lucy in Man's Clothes has to her; in that Creature's lewd Views, yet faithful and generous Conduct, in giving back to Clerimont, who had not provided for her, 2000 l. won on the fantastical Lady; and yet in her being so little delicate in her Love to Clerimont, which one would expect should be her Motive, as to join to trick and marry one of the greatest Fools in the World; that it was surprising to me, that it could pass either Author or Audience.

Then Tipkin's Character is unnaturally, stupidly,

yet knavishly bad.

Sir Harry Gubbin is a Father who never could have his Fellow; and after furiously beating his Son, is reconciled to his Marriage, as instantly as Mrs. Clerimont is converted; and that to an unknown Person, who appears to him in Man's Clothes, for the sake of 3000 l. Fortune only, altho' he had been quarrelling with Tipkin, about 1000 l. which he would not give up, out of 10,000 l. which his Son was to have had with Bridget.

Numps,

Numps, his Son, is a Character, take it altogether, quite out of Nature and Probability: 'Tis hardly possible, that a Savage, brought up in a Wood, who never convers'd with Man or Woman, could be so stupid; and easily might a Poet form a Plot for a Play, if such a Character could be admitted as Numps's.

The Aunt is credulous and affected beyond Pro-

bability also.

Au-

e, l

it.

difard

ha-

, at

10

bad

no:

en-

iel,

dy

a-

n's

VS,

10

1.

10

ne

to

he

Id

y,

ld

Π,

S.

n

10

n

e

n

Mils Bridget delicately indelicate in many Places,

and improbably fantastick in all.

Pounce shamelessly glorying, and fucceeding in his Villainy, and deeming the Imputation of the worst of Rogueries to him as a Panegyric: And such Immoralities, mingled with Obscenities, all through,

that I was glad when the Play was over.

But yet, to fay Truth, there are very pretty Deferiptions, and a great deal of Wit and Humour in it. The Dialogue is lively; the Painter's Scene entertaining! and that between Sir Harry and Tipkin, diverting, tho' low; which, together with the fantastick Airs of Mrs. Clerimont; and Miss Bridget, and the farcical Humours of Numps, make it the less Wonder, that such as did not attend to Nature, Probability, and Morality, were struck with the Life and Spirit of the Performance: And especially as Mr. Wilks, who acted Captain Clerimont, and Mrs. Oldfield, who acted Miss Bridget, so incomparably perform'd their Parts, as must have saved a Play even of a worse Tendency than the Accomplish'd Fools.

The Moral I will transcribe, altho, I doubt, it is a very inapplicable one to the Characters; and so is far from making Amends for a long Performance, that in such a Variety of Characters has not one moral one in it; nor, indeed, is there so much as one just or generous Design pursued throughout the Play:

£ 5.

1 04:01

You've feen th' Extremes of the domestick Life, A Son too much confin'd—too free a Wife. By gen'rous Bonds you either should restrain, And only on their Inclinations gain.

This I call inapplicable, because it was needless Advice to such Husbands as Mr. Clerimont, for whom it seems design'd; for he was generous to Excess, carrying her abroad to Italy and France, and paying all her Debts of Honour implicitly: Whence the Name of the Play, The Tender Husband.

Wives, to abey, must Love-

Clerimont did every thing to make a grateful Woman love him, before his strange Plot to reclaim her.

--- Children REVERE,

While only SLAVES are govern'd by their Fear.

Mrs. Cleriment was not treated like a Slave, yet is reclaim'd only by Fear. So that the Moral feems to be calculated for the Numpr's (the Fools and Idiots) and the Sir Harries; two Characters, that, as I humbly apprehend, never were in Nature, any

more, it is to be hoped, than are the reft.

It looks to me, in short, as if the Author had forgot the Moral all the way; and being put in mind of it by some kind Friend, (Mr. Addison, perhaps) was at a loss to draw one from such Characters and Plots as he had produc'd; and so put down what came appermost, for the sake of Custom, without much regard to Propriety. And truly, I should imagine likewife, that the Play was begun with a Delign to draw more amiable Characters, answerable to the Title of The Tender Husband; but that the Author, being carried away by the Luxuriancy of a Genius, which he had not the Heart to prune, on a general Survey of the whole, distrusting the Propriety of that Title, added the under one: With 211-OR, The Accomplish'd Fools, in Justice to his Piece

Piece, and Compliment to his Audience. And, pardon me, Madam, had he call'd it The Accomplish'd Knaves, I would not have been angry at him, because there would have been more Propriety in the Title.

I wish I could, for the sake of the Authors, have praised every Scene of this Play: I hoped to have Reason for it. Judge then, my dear Lady, what a Mortification it was to me, not to be able to say I liked above one, the Painter's Scene, which too was out of Time, being on the Wedding-day; and am forc'd to disapprove of every Character in it, and the Views of every one. I am, dearest Madam,

Your most obliged Sister and Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XIII.

My dear Ludy,

dless

hom

cess,

ying

the

Wo-

her,

ret is

and that,

any

for-

nind

aps)

and

what

hout

ould

th a

wer-

that

ancy

une,

the

Vith

his

ece,

A LTHO' I cannot tell how you receiv'd my Observations on the Tragedy of The Distress'd Mother, and the Comedy of The Tender Husband; yet will I proceed to give your Ladyship my Opinion of the Opera I was at last Night.

But what can I say, when I have mention'd what you so well know, the fine Scenes, the genteel and splendid Company, the charming Voices, and delightful Musick?

If, Madam, one were all Ear, and loft to every sense but that of Harmony, surely the Halian Opera would be a transporting thing!—But when one finds good Sense, and Instruction, and Propriety, sacrific'd to the Charms of Sound, what an unedifying, what a mere temporary Delight does it afford! For what does one carry home, but the Remembrance of having been pleas'd so many Hours by the mere L 6

Vibration of Air, which being but Sound, you cannot bring away with you; and must therefore enter the Time pass'd in such a Diversion, into the Account of those blank Hours, from which one has not reap'd

fo much as one improving Leffon?

I speak this with regard to myself, who know nothing of the Italian Language: But yet I may not be very unhappy, that I do not, if I may form my Opinion of the Sentiments by the enervating Softness of the Sound, and the unmanly Attitudes and Gestures made use of to express the Passions of the Men Performers, and from the amorous Complainings of the Women; as visible in the soft, the too-soft, Action of each.

Then, the I cannot but fay, that the Musick is most melodious, yet to see a Hero, as an Alexander, or a Julius Cæsar, warbling out his Atchievements in War, his military Conquests, as well as his Love, in a Song, it seems to me to be making a Jest of

both.

4010,

And how much more abfurd is it still, to hear fome dying Chiestain, some unfortunate Hero, chanting forth his Woes and his Calamities, and taking his Leave of the World, with less Propriety than our English Criminals at the fatal Tree! What can this move, how can this pierce, be the Story

ever fo difinal, any thing but one's Ears?

Every Nation, Mr. B. fays, has its peculiar Excellence: The French Taste is Comedy and Harle-quinery; the Italian, Musick and Opera; the English masculine and nervous Sense, whether in Tragedy or Comedy — Why can't one, methinks, keep to one's own particular national Excellence, and let others retain theirs? For Mr. B. observes, that when once Sound is preferr'd to Sense, we shall depart from all our own Worthiness, and, at best, be but the Apes, yea, the Dupes, of those whom we may

Arive to imitate; but never can reach, much less excel.

Mr. B. fays fometimes, that this Tafte is almost the only good Fruit our young Nobility gather, and bring home from their foreign Tours; and that he found the English Nation much ridicul'd on this Score by those very People who are benefited by the Depravity. And if this be the best, what must the other Qualifications be, which they bring home? Yet every one does not return with so little Im-

provement, it is to be hop'd.

inter

unt p'd

WO

nay

rin

ing des

s of m-

the

c is

der,

nis

ve,

of

lear

ero,

and

iety

hat

ory

Ex-

rle-

lifh

edy 10

let

hen part

but

nay

1200

But what have I faid, what can I fay, of an Italian Opera?—Only, little to the Purpose, as it is, I wonder how I have been able to fay fo much: For who can describe Sound? Or what Words shall be found to imbody Air? — And when we return, and are ask'd our Opinion of what we have seen or heard, we are only able to answer, as I hinted above, the ocenery is fine; the Company splendid and genteel; the Musick charming for the Time; -the Action not extraordinary; the Language unintelligible; and for all these Reasons—the Instruction none at all.

This is all that the thing itself gives me Room to fay of the Italian Opera; very probably, for want of a polite Tafte, and a Knowledge of the Language.

In my next, I believe I shall give you, Madam, my Opinion of a Divertion or Amusement, which, I doubt, I shall like still less; and that is a Masquerade, for I fear I shall not be excus'd going to one, although I have no manner of Liking to it, especially in my present Way. I am, Madam,

Your Ladyship's most obliged and faithful

P. B.

I must add another Half sheet to this Letter on the Subject-matter of it, the Opera; and am fure your Ladyship will not be displeased with the Addition.

Mr. B. coming up, just as I had concluded my Letter, asked me what was my Subject? I told him, I was giving your Ladyship my Notions of the Italian Opera. Let me see what they are, my Dear; for this is a Subject that very few of those who admire these Performances, and sewer still of those who decry them, know any thing of.

He read the above, and was pleased to commend it. Operas, said he, are very said things in England, to what they are in Italy; and the Translations given of them abominable: And, indeed, our Lan-

guage will not do them Juffice.

Every Nation, as you take notice, has its Excellencies; and you say well, that ours should not quit the manly nervous Sense, which is the Distinction of the English Drama. One Play of our celebrated Shakespeare will give infinitely more Pleasure to a sensible Mind than a dozen English-Italian Operas. But, my Dear, in Italy they are quite another thing: And the Sense is not, as here, sacrificed so much to the Sound, but that they are both very compatible.

Be pleased, Sir, to give me your Observation on this Head in Writing, and then I shall have something to send worthy of Lady Davers's Acceptance.

Do, Sir, pray do.

I will, my Dear; and he took a Pen, and wrote the included; which I beg your Ladyship to return me; because I will keep it by me, for my Instruction, if I should be led to talk of this Subject in Company. You must let my Sister know, said he, that I have given myself no Time to re-peruse what I have written. She will do well therefore to correct it, and return it to you.

In Italy, Judges of Operas are fo far from thinks ing the Drama a poetical Part of their Operas Nonsense, as the Unskill'd in Italian rashly conclude in England, that if the Libretto, as they call it, is not approved, the Opera, notwithstanding the Excellence of the Musick, will be condemned. For the Italians justly determine, that the very Mufick of an Opera cannot be complete and pleating, if the Drama be incongruous, as I may call it, in its Composition; because in order to please, it must have the necessary Contrast of the Grave and the Light, that is, the Diverting, equally blended through the whole. If there be too much of the first, let the Musick be composed ever so masterly in that Style, it will become heavy and tiresome; if the latter prevail, it will furfeit with its Levity: 4 Wherefore it is the Poet's Bufiness to adapt the Words for this agreeable Mixture: For the Musick the Composer to be a skilful Master.

vith

my

old

the

ar;

ad-

vho

end

ind,

Olis

an-

el-

uit

ion

ted

) a

as.

g:

rch

m-

on

ne-

ce.

ote

rn

tc-

in e,

nat or-

La

is but secondary, and subservient to the Words: and if there be an artful Contrast in the Drama, there will be the same in the Musick, supposing ' Now, fince in England, the Practice has been to mutilate, curtail, and patch up a Drama in Itaban, in order to introduce favourite Airs, selected from different Authors, the Contrast has always been broken thereby, and the Opera damn'd, without every one's knowing the Reason: And fince ignorant mercenary prompters, tho' Italians, have been employ'd in the Hotch-potch, and in translating our Drama's from Italian into English, 4 how could fuch Opera's appear any other than in-

congruous Nonfense?

Recitativo's.

· To avoid the natural Dissonance and Irregulafrity in common Speech, Recitative's in Musick and dramatical

- dramatical Performances were invented; and, although the Time in pronouncing the Words
- contained in them, is scarce longer than in com-
- mon Conversation, yet the Harmony of the Chords of the Thorough-base, which then accompanies
- the Voice, delights the Ears of discerning Judges:
- Wherefore Recitative is a regular way of speaking
- mufically, as I may fay, in order to avoid and correct the Irregularities of Speech, often found
- in Nature, and to express the Variety of Passions,
- without Offence to the Ear.'

Permit me, dear Madam, to repeat my Assurances, that I am, and must ever be,

Your obliged Sifter and Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XIV.

my poor Opinion of a Masquerade, to which Mr. B. persuaded me to accompany Miss Darnsford; for, as I hinted in my former, I had a great Indisference, or rather Dislike, to go, and Miss therefore wanted so powerful a Second, to get me with her; because I was asraid the Freedoms which I had heard were used there, would not be very agreeable to my apprehensive Temper, at this Time especially.

But finding Mr. B. chose to have me go, if, as he was pleased to say, I had no Objection; I said, I will have none, Sir, I can have none, when you tell me it is your Choice; and so send for the Habits you like, and that you would have me appear in, and I will cheerfully attend you.

The Habit Mr. B. pitch'd upon, was that of a Stanish Don, and it well befitted the Majesty of his Person

ind.

ords

om-

ords

nies

res:

cing

and

und

ons,

ur-

B.

you

to

Tifs

da

lis

me

ich

ery

ine

as

id,

DO

la-

ın,

a

his

on

Person and Air, and Miss Darnford chose that of a young Widow; and Mr. B. recommended that of a Quaker for me. We all admir'd one another in our Dresles; and Mr. B. promising to have me always in his Eye, we went thither.

But I never defire to be present at another. Mr. B. was singled out by a bold Nun, who talk'd Italian to him with such free Airs, that I did not much like it, tho' I knew not what she said; for I thought the dear Gentleman no more kept to his Spanish Gravity, than she to the Requisites of the Habit she wore: When I had imagin'd, that all that was tolerable in a Masquerade, was the acting up to the Character each Person assumed: And this gave me no Objection to the Quaker's Dress; for I thought I was prim enough for that naturally.

I faid foftly, Dear Miss Darnford (for Mr. B. and the Nun were out of Sight in a Moment) what is become of that Nun?—Rather, whisper'd she, what is become of the Spaniard?

A Cardinal attacked me instantly in French: But I answered in English, not knowing what he said, Quakers are not fit Company for Red-hats.

They are, said he, in the same Language; for a

Quaker and a Jesuit is the same thing.

Miss Darnford was address'd by the Name of the sprightly Widow: Another ask'd, how long she intended to wear those Weeds? And a Footman, in a rich Livery, answer'd for her Eyes, thro' her Mask, that it would not be a Month.

But I was startled, when a Presbyterian Parson came up to me, and bid me look after my Musidorus—So that I doubted not by this, it must be some-body who knew my Name to be Pamela; and I presently thought of one of my Lawyers, whose Characters I gave in a former Letter.

Indeed, he needed not to bid me; for I was forry, on more Accounts than that of my Time-roufness,

rousiness, to have lost Sight of him. Out upon these nasty Masquerades! thought I; I can't abide them already!

An egregious beauish Appearance came up to Miss, and said, you hang out a very pretty Sign,

Widow

Not, reply'd she, to invite such Fops as you to my Shop.

Any Customer would be welcome, return'd he, in my Opinion.—I whisper this as a Secret.

And I whisper another, faid the, but not whisperingly, that no Place warrants ill Manners.

Are you angry, Widow?

She affected a Laugh: No indeed; it i'n't worth while.

He turn'd to me—and I was afraid of some such Hit as he gave me—I hope, Friend, thou art prepared with a Father for the Light within thee?— This was his free Word.

Is this Wit? faid I, turning to Miss Darnford: I have enough of this Diversion, where nothing but

coarse Jests appear baxefacid.

At last Mr. B. accosted us, as if he had not known us: So lovely a Widow, and so sweet a Friend! no wonder you do not separate: For I see not in this warious Assembly a third Person of your Sex sit to join with you.

Not one, Sir !- faid I - Will not a penitent Nun make a good Third with a mournful Widow and a

prim Quaker?

Not for more than ten Minutes at most.

Instantly the Nun, a fine Person of a Lady, with a noble Air, though I did not like her, join'd us, and spoke in Italian something very free, as it seemed by her Manner, and Mr. B.'s smiling Answer; but neither Miss Durnford nor I understood that Language, and Mr. B. would not explain it to us.

1 thefe

them

up to

Sign,

ou to

d he,

ifper-

worth

fuch

pre-

e ? -

ford:

g but

nown

l! no

n this

fit to

Nun

and a

Lady,

oin'd

Ah-

flood

ain it

But

But the gave him a Signal to follow her, feeming to be much taken with his Person and Air; for tho' there were three other Spanish Habits there, he was call'd The stately Spaniard by one, and The handsome Spaniard by amother, in our Hearing, as he pass'd with us to the Desert, where we drank each of us a Glass of Champaign, and eat a few Sweetmeats, with a Crowd about us; but we appeared not to know one another: While feveral odd Appearances, as one Indian Prince, one Chinese Mandarin, several Domine's, of both Sexes, a Dutth Skipper, a Fewish Rabbi, a Greek Monk, a Harlequin, a Turkish Bashaw, and Capuchin Friar, glided by us, as we return'd into Company, fignifying, that we were Strangers to them, by fqueaking out, I know you! - Which is half the Wit of the Place.

Mr. B. had more Attacks made upon him by Ladies, than we had by Gentlemen; and his fine Person, noble Air, and a Deportment so suited to his Habit, (only in the Encounter of the Nun, when he had more of the French Freedom, as I thought, than the Spanish Gravity) made him many Admirers; and more, when the Spanish Minister, who was there in a French Dress, spoke to him in Spanish, and receiv'd a polite Answer from him in the same; while there were several who personated Foreign Characters, and knew nothing of the Language of

the Country whose Habits they affumed.

There were divers Antick Figures, fome with Caps and Bells, one dress'd like a Punch; several Harlequins, and other ludicrous Forms, that jump'd and ran about like mad; and seem'd as if they would have it thought, that all their Wit lay in their Heels.

Two Ladies, one in a very fantastick party colour'd Habit, with a Plume of Feathers, the other in a rustick one, with a Garland of Flowers round her Head, were much taken notice of for their Freedom,

and

and having fomething to fay to every body. They were as feldom separated as Miss Darnford and I, and were followed by a Crowd wherever they went.

The party-colour'd one came up to me: Friend, faid she, there is something in thy Person that attracts every one's Notice: But it a Sack had not been a profane thing, it would have become thee

almost as well.

I thank thee, Friend, faid I, for thy Counsel; but if thou had'st been pleased to look at Home, thou wouldst not have taken so much Pains to join such Advice, and such an Appearance, together, as thou makest!

This made every one that heard it laugh - One

faid, the Butterfly had met with her Match.

She return'd, with an affected Laugh - Smartly faid!—But art thou come hither, Friend, to make thy Light shine before Men or Women?

Verily, Friend, neither, reply'd I; but out of mere Curiofity, to look into the Minds of both Sexes;

which I read in their Dreffes.

A general Satire on the Assemblée, by the Mass!

The Nun whisk'd to us : We're all concern'd in

my Friend's Remark

And no Difgrace to a fair Nun, return'd I, if her Behaviour answer her Dress — Nor to a Reverend Friar, turning to the Monk, if his Mind be not a Discredit to his Appearance—Nor yet to a Country Girl, turning to the party-colour'd Lady's Companion, if she has not Weeds in her Heart to difgrace the Flowers on her Head.

An odd Figure, representing a Merry Andrew, took my Hand, and said, I had the most piquant Wit he had met with that Night: And, Friend,

faid he, let us be better acquainted !

Forbear, faid I, withdrawing my Hand, not a Companion for a Jack-pudding neither!

A Roman

h

P

ti

h

V

it

ft

h

21

V

th

H

N

B

S

H

b

it

n

(

t

I

V

A Roman Senator just then accossed Miss Darnford; and Mr. B. seeing me so much engag'd, 'Twere hard, said he, if our Nation, in spite of Cervantes, produc'd not one Cavalier to protect a fair Lady thus surrounded.

ney

ind

nd,

at-

not hee

el;

ne,

nio

35

ne)

tly

ake

of

es;

s!

in

her

end

t a

try

-RC

lif-

w,

ant

nd,

t 2

lan

Tho' furrounded, not diffres'd, my good Knight-Errant, said the Nun: The fair Quaker will be too hard for half a dozen Antagonists, and wants not your Protection: — But your poor Nun bespeaks it, whisper'd she, who has not a Word to say for herself.

Mr. B. answer'd her in Italian, (I wish I understood Italian!)—and she had recourse to her Beads. You can't imagine, Madam, how this Nun haunted him!—Indeed, you can't imagine it!

I must needs say, I don't like these Masquerades at all. Many Ladies, on these Occasions, are so very free, that the Cenforious will be apt to blame the whole Sex for their Conduct, and to fay, their Hearts are as faulty as those of the most culpable Men, fince they scruple not to shew as much, when they think they cannot be known by their Faces. But it is my humble Opinion, that could there be a Standard fix'd, by which one could determine readily what ic, and what is not Wit, Decency would not be so often wounded, by Attempts to be witty, as For here every one, who can give himself the Liberty to fay things that shock a modester Person, not meeting with due Rebuke, but perhaps a Smile, (without confidering whether it be of Contempt or Approbation) mistakes Courage for Wit; and every thing facred or civil becomes the Subject of his frothy Jest.

How else can one account for the Liberties of Expression and Behaviour taken by some of those who personated Bishops, Cardinals, Priests, Nuns, Ec.?—For the freest Things I heard said, were from

Persons

I

I

f

1

te

li

C

ti

V

N

b

V

t

7

P

P

ŀ

Persons in those Habits; who behaved with so much Levity and Indecorum, as if they were refolved, as much as in them lay, to throw those venerable Characters into Ridicule, for no other Reason than because they are by the generality of the World deem'd venerables: But if it was once determin'd, that nothing should be call'd true Wit, as nothing certainly ought, but what will fland the Test of Examination, but what is confiftent with Decency and good Manners, and what will make an innocent Heart brilliant and cheerful, and give its Sanction to the happy Expression, by trying to keep up and return the Ball in like virtuous and lively Raillery, then we should have our publick Entertainments fuch as the most Scrupulous might join to counter nance and applaud.

But what a Moralizer am Is! will your Ladyship say: Indeed I can't help it: — And especially on such a Subject as a Masquerade, which I dislike more than any thing I ever saw: I could say a great deal more on this Occasion; but, upon my Word, I am quite out of Humour with it; for I liked my English Mr. Bi better than my Spaniard; and the Nun I approved not by any means; the there were some who observed, that she was one of the gracefullest Figures in the Place. And indeed, in spite of my own Heart, I could not help thinking so too.

Your Ladyship knows so well what Masquerader are, that I may well be excused saying any thing surther on a Subject I am so little pleased with: For you only desire my Notions of those Diversions, because I am a Novice in them; and this, I doubt not, will doubly serve to answer that Purpose.

I shall only therefore add, that after an hundred other Impertinencies spoken to Miss Darmford and me, and retorted with Spirit by her, and as well as I could by myself, quite sick of the Place, I seigned to be more indisposed than I was, and so got my beloved

beloved Spaniard to go off with us, and reached Home by three in the Morning. And so much for Masquerades. I hope I shall never have Occasion to mention them again to your Ladyship. I am, my dearest Madam,

Your ever obliged Sifter and Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XV.

My dearest Lady,

trch

as

hahan

orld n'd,

ing Of

ncy tent tion

and ery, ents

ntes

ship

on

nore

deal

am

ing-

un I

ome

lleft

niy

ades

ning

ith:

ons,

oubt

dred

and

11 25

rned

: my

oved

Y Mind is so wholly ingross'd by Thoughts of a very different Nature from the Diversions of the Town and Theatres inspire, that I beg to be excused, if, for the present, I say nothing further of those lighter Matters. But yet, fince your Ladyship does not disapprove of my Remarks, I intend, if it please God to spare my Life, to make a little Book, which I will present to your Ladyship, containing my poor Observations on all the Dramatick Entertainments I have feen, and shall fee, this Winter; and for this Purpose I have made brief Notes in the Margin of the printed Plays I have, bought, as I faw them, with a Pencil; by referring to which, as Helps to my Memory, I shall be able to. tell your Ladyship what my Thoughts were at the Time of seeing them, pretty nearly with the same. Advantage, as if I had written them at my Return from each.

I have obtained of Sir Simon, and Lady Darnford, the very great Pleasure of their Permission for Miss to stay with me till it shall be seen how it will. please God to deal with me, and I owe this Favour partly to a kind Letter written in my Behalf to Sir. Simon, by Mr. B. and partly to the young Lady's earnest Request to her Papa, to oblige me; Sir Simon. having made fome Difficulty to comply, as Mr. Murray and his Bride have left them, faying, he

could

could not live long, if he had not the Company of his

beloved Daughter.

I cannot but fay, I have many more Anxieties and Apprehensions, than perhaps I ought to have, on the approaching Occasion; but I was always a fad Coward, and too thoughtful a good deal: But I have so much to lose; such a Husband to part with, if I must part with him; such generous Friends and Lovers, as I may fay, of both Sexes: And then the Circumstance itself has so many Terrors to an apprehensive Mind, attending it, that I am out of Breath fometimes at the Thoughts of it, and want to run. away from myself, if I could. - But it cannot be: and when I charge my Mind with the Reflections which Religion inspires, and ask myself, who it was that gave me all these Bleffings, and who it is that has a Right to recall them, if he pleases, and when, and in what way he pleases? and that if I leave them not now, I must be separated from them another Day; I endeavoured to bring my Mind to a Refignation to the Divine Will.

But what shall I say, Madam, when I find my Frailty is so much increased, that I cannot, with the same Intensenses of Devotion, that I used to be blest with, apply myself to the Throne of Grace, nor, of Consequence, find my Invocations answered by that Delight, and inward Satisfaction, with which I used to please myself when the present near

Prospect was more remote?

I hope I shall not be deserted in the Hour of Trial, and that this my Weakness of Mind will not be punished with a spiritual Dereliction, for suffering myself to be too much attach'd to those worldly Delights and Pleasures which no Mortal ever enjoy'd in a more exalted Degree than myself. And I beseech you, my dearest Lady, let me be always remember'd in your Prayers—Only for a Resignation to the Divine Will; a cheerful Resignation! I presume

car

go

15

d

n

d

I

h,

nd

16

e-

th

ın.

e;

ns

45

at

en,

m

ber

g-

ny

ith

be

ce, red rith

ear

of

not er-

dly

y'd

be-

retion

! I

ume

presume not to prescribe to his gracious Providence; for if one has but that, one has every thing that one need to have. Yet, my dear Lady, there is fuch a natural Repugnance between Life and Death, that Nature will thrink when one comes to the Trial. let one have never so much Fortitude at a Distance. Yet, I hope, I may be forgiven; for now-and-then I comfort myself with the Divine Exemplar, who prayed in bloody Sweats for the bitter Cup to be removed; but gave us the Example of Refignation. that I am wishing to be able to follow: However, not mine, but thy will be done!

Forgive me, my dearest Lady, for being so deeply ferious. I have just now been contending with a severe Pang, that is, for the present, gone off; what Effect its Return may have, God only knows. And if this is the last Line I shall ever write, it will be the more fatisfactory to me, as (with my humble Respects to my good Lord Davers, and my dear Countess, and praying for the Continuance of all your Healths and Happiness, both here and here-

after) I am permitted to subscribe myself

Your Ladyship's obliged Sifter, and humble Servant,

P. B.

I am

LETTER XVI.

From Lady DAVERS to Mr. B.

My dearest Brother,

LTHO' I believe it is needless to put a Man of your generous Spirit in mind of doing a worthy Action; yet, as I do not know whether you have thought of what I am going to hint to you, I cannot forbear a Line or two with regard to the good old Couple in Kent. Vol. IV. F

1 am sure, if for our Sins, God Almighty should take from us my incomparable Sister, (forgive me, my dear Brother, but to intimate what may be, altho' I hourly pray, as her trying Minute approaches, that it will not) you will, for her sake, take care that her honest Parents have not the Loss of your Favour, to deepen the inconsolable one, they will have, in such a

Case, of the best of Daughters.

I fay, I am fure you will do as generously by them as ever: And I dare say, your sweet Pamela doubts it not: Yet as you know how sensible she is of every Favour done them, it is the Countess's Opinion and mine, and Lady Betty's too, that you give her this Assurance in some legal Way; for, as she is naturally apprehensive, and thinks more of her present Circumstances than, for your sake, she chooses to express to you, it will be like a Cordial to her dutiful and grateful Heart; and I do not know, if it will not contribute, more than any one thing, to make her go thro' her Task with Ease and Sasety.

I know how much your Heart is wrapp'd up in the dear Creature: And you are a worthy Brother, to let it be so! — You will excuse me therefore, I am

fure, for this my Officiousness.

I have no Doubt but God will spare her to us, because, altho' we may not be worthy of so much Excellence, yet we now all unite so gratefully to thank him for such a worthy Relation, that I hope we shall not be deprived of an Example so necessary to us all.

I can have but one Fear, and that is, that, young as she is, she ideams ripen'd for Glory; she seems to have liv'd long enough for herself. But for you, and for us, that God will still spare her, shall be the hourly Prayer of,

My dear worthy Brother, Your ever affectionate Sifter,

B. DAVER

t

0

e

fp

m

ha

Se

H

th

yo

th

nu

m

G

W

uld.

ne,

ho'

hat

her

, to

hem ubts

very and

this

Cir-

ex.

tiful

will

make

up in

er, to

1 am

to us,

much

ally to

I hope

cellary

young

ems to

ou, and

be the

AVER

Haw

r,

No.

Have you got her Mother with you? I hope you have. God give you a Son and Heir, if it be his bleffed Will! But, however that be, preferve your PAMELA to you! for you never can have such another Wife.

LETTER XVII.

From Mrs. B. to Mr. B.

My ever-dear, and ever-honoured Mr. B.

SINCEI know not how it may please God Almighty to dispose of me on the approaching Occasion, I should think myself inexcusable, if I could not find one or two select Hours to dedicate to you, out of the very many, in the Writing way, in which your Goodness has indulged me, because you saw I took Delight in it.

But yet think not, O best Beloved of my Heart! that I have any Boon to beg, any Favour to ask, either for myself, or for my Friends, or so much as the Continuance of your Favour to the one or the As to them, you have prevented and exceeded all my Wishes: As to myself, if it please God to spare me, I know I shall always be rewarded beyond my Defert, let my Defervings be what they will. I have only therefore to acknowledge, with the deepest Sense of your Goodness to me, and with the most Heart-affecting Gratitude, that from the happy, the thrice happy Hour, that you fo generously made me yours, till this Moment, you have not left me one thing on my own Part, to wish for, but the Continuance and Increase of your Felicity, and that I might be worthier and worthier of the unexampled Goodness, Tenderness, and Condescension, wherewith you have always treated me,

No, my dearest, my best belov'd Master, Friend. Huiband, my first, my last, and only Love! believe me, I have nothing to wish for but your Honour and Felicity, temporary and eternal; and I make no doubt, that God, in his infinite Goodness and Mercy, will perfect his own good Work, begun in your dear Heart; and, whatever may now happen, give us a happy Meeting, never more to part from one another. For, altho', as you were pleased to question t'other Day, when you were resolving some of my Doubts - (and, Oh! what a fweet Expositor, have you been to me upon all those Occasions, on which my diffident Mind led me to you for Information and Direction!) whether the Happiness of the Blessed was not too exalted a Happiness to be affected with the poor Ties of Relationship and Sense, which now delight and attach fo much to them our narrow Minds and Conceptions; yet cannot I willingly give up the pleasing, the charming Hope, that I shall one Day rejoice, distinguishingly rejoice, in the Society of my best beloved Husband and Friend, and in that of my dear Parents: and I will keep and encourage this dear Hope, fo confolatory to me in the Separation which dearest Friends must experience, fo long as it can stand me in any stead; and till I shall be all Intellect, and above the foothing Impresfions which are now so agreeable to Sense, and to conjugal and filial Piety.

Let me then beg of you, my dearest Protector and best Friend, to pardon all my Impersections and Defects; and if, ever fince I have had the Honour to be yours, I have in Looks, or in Word, or in Deed, given you Cause to wish me other than I was, that you will kindly put it to the Score of natural Infirmity (for in Thought or Intention, I can truly boast, I have never wilfully err'd.) Your Tenderness for me, and your generous Politeness to me, always gave me Apprehension, that I was not

what

n

n

d

to

h

n

M

yo

what you wish'd me to be, because you would not find fault with me so often as I fear I deserved: And this makes me beg of you to do, as I hope God Almighty will, pardon all my involuntary Errors and Omissions.

You have enabled me, Sir, to do all the Good to my poor Neighbours, and to distressed Objects, which was in my own Heart to do; and I hope I have made use of the Power you have so generously intrusted me with, in a manner, that may shew I had a Regard to your Honour, and to the Exigency of the particular Cases recommended to me, without Extravagance or Vanity. But yet as it is neceffary I should render some Account of my Stewardship, in relation to the large Sums you have put into my Hands for charitable Uses, you will find, my beloved Master and best Friend, your poor Steward's Accounts of every thing, in the Cabinet that was my honour'd Lady's, till your Goodness made it mine, in a * Vellum Book, on the first Leaf of which is written, Title-page-wife, Humble RETURNS for DIVINE MERCIES; and you will see a Balance struck, down to this very Day, and the little Surplus in the green Purse upon the Book. And if you will be pleased, Sir, to perfect, by your Generolity, the Happiness of the Cases I have marked with a Star [thus, *] which are fuch as are not fully recovered, and will be fo good as to keep. up my little School, I dare ask no more; for, my dearest Mr. B. if I should be called from your Service to my new Place, your next Steward (and long, I hope, for your honourable Family's fake, you will not be without one) may find out another and better Method for your Honour and her own, to dispense your Bounty, than that I have taken.

F 3

The

our no and

nd,

om to ome

ofions, foris of o be

our wilthat

and and

ne in ence, till I pref-

ector

Hod, or than ore of

I can Your

ess to as not what

^{*} See Vol. 11. p. 353.

The rich Jewels and Equipage, with which your generous Goodness adorned my Unworthiness, will be found in the same Cabinet, in the private Drawer: And if I may be pardon'd for one extravagant Wish, (your Circumstances, dear Sir, are very great! and your future Lady will not wear any thing that was mine) it is, that my dear Miss Darnford may be desir'd, as the Essect of your own Goodness and generous Consideration for my Memory, to wear the Diamond Necklace, which, I know, she admires; but is far from wishing for it, or expecting it, if the Neck that it was given to adorn, and to make more worthy of you, should be laid low by the irrestifible Leveller.

In the lowest Drawer, on the Left-hand of the Cabinet, you will find, Sir, all my unfinish'd Scribble, and amongst the rest, a little Parcel, indorsed, M. The Title will surprise you; H. and P. Barlow. but as I know not what may happen to make Doubts and Puzzles in the Affair mentioned in those Papers, when I cannot explain them, I thought it was best to give a Brief History of it in Writing, with his Letter to me on the Occasion; and I humbly beg the whole may be kept within your own Breaft, unless that vile Affair, which has much disturb'd me, should be reviv'd: altho' I have no Reason to Apprehend it will, because the poor Girl, I hope, is fincerely penitent; and Mr. H. himself seems in another way of thinking as to her.

Will you be pleased, Sir, to bestow on my dearest Miss Goodwin, as a Remembrance of her Aunt's true Love, the Diamond Solitaire, and the second Pair of Ear-rings? Perhaps my dearest Lady Davers will not distain to wear, as a Present from her beloved Brother, my best Diamond Ring. And if my most beloved and most valued Ring of all, the dear first pledge of my Happiness, were, for the sirst time since I was honoured with it, by your own

putting

putting it on, taken from my Finger and enamell'd, it would be a mournful, yet a pleasing Token for my poor Mother, and a sweet Memento of your Bounty to them, and of your inexpressible Goodness and Favour to her poor Daughter!—But how I presume! And yet just now said, I had nothing to ask!

Now I am, unawares to myself, upon the Subject of petitioning, how it would please me, could I know it, if the dear Child I have just named, were given to the Care and Example of my excellent Miss Darnford, if she would be pleased to accept of the Trust; and if Lady Davers has no Objection, and would not choose to take the pretty Soul under her

own Wing.

your

will

Wer: Vish,

! and

t was

gene-

r the

ires;

make e irre-

f the

ibble,

, M.

you;

oubts apers,

s best

h his

y beg

, un-

me,

Ap-

n all-

earest

s true Pair

s Will

r be-

if my

e dear

first

own tting

I had once great Pleafure in the Hope of having this dear Child committed to my Care-But what Pleasures, what Happiness, have I not had crowded into this last, and this first happy, thrice happy Year—even more than most of my Sex have had to boalt of, and those not unhappy neither, in a long, long Life! Every Day has brought with it some new Felicity, some new Happiness, as unlook'd for, as undeferv'd; for, Oh! best Beloved of my Heart, how have you always met me in your Comings-in, left me at your Goings-out, with Smiles and Complacency, the latter only distinguish'd from the former, by a kind Regret, as the other was from that, by a Joy, next to Transport, when all your dear generous Heart appear'd in your noble Countenance, and set my faithful one into responsive Flutters, to meet and receive it with all the grateful Emotions that the chaftest conjugal Flame could inspire!

But I must not dwell upon these charming, charming Resections!—My present Doubts will not permit me to indulge them! For, if I were—how would my Desires be rivetted to this Earth!—With what Regret should I transfer my Thoughts to a still

F 4.

mare

more important and more necessary Subject! and with what Ingratitude look up to a diviner, and still more noble Master, who ought to be the Ultimate of all our Wishes and Desires! And who has given me you, my dearest Mr. B. and with you, all that this World can make desirable! — And has therefore a Right to take away what he has given!—And if I now die, what a Glory will it be to me, to be permitted to discharge Part of my Obligations to the worthiest of Gentlemen, by laying down my Life

in the Service of his honourable Family!

But let me fay one Word for my dear worthy Mrs. Fervis. Her Care and Fidelity will be very necessary for your Affairs, dear Sir, while you remain fingle, which I hope will not be long. But, whenever, Sir, you make a fecond Choice, be pleafed to allow her fuch an Annuity as may make her independent, and pass away the Remainder of her Life with Ease and Comfort. And this I the rather prefume to request, as my late honour'd Lady * once intimated the same thing to you. If I were to name what that may be, it would not be with the Thought of heightening, but of limiting rather, the natural Bounty of your Heart; and fifty Pounds a Year would be a rich Provision, in her Opinion, and will intail upon you, dear Sir, the Bleffings of one of the faithfullest and worthiest Hearts in the Kingdom.

Nor will Christian Charity permit me to forget the once wicked, but now penitent Jewkes. I understand by Miss Darnford, that she begs for nothing but to have the Pleasure of dying in your Service, and of having by that means, an Opportunity given her of atoning for some small Slips and Mistakes in her Accounts, which she had made formerly, as she accuses herself; for she will have it, that Mr. Longman has been better to her than she deserv'd, in passing

and

ffill

rate

ven

that

ere-

And

o be

s to

Life

rthy

very

nain

ien-

d to

-sbn

Life

pre-

once

ame

ught

ural

Year

will

ne of

ing-

rget

un-

hing

vice,

iven

es in

s the

ong-

, in

fling

To

paffing one * Account particularly, to which he had, with too much Reason, objected; do, dear Sir, if your future happy Lady has no great Dislike to the poor Woman, be pleased to grant her Request, except her own Mind should alter, and she desire her Dismission: And be pleased to present her with my little Book of felect Devotions, with my Notes in the Inter-leaves: It is in the Bottom-drawer of the Right-hand, among my devotional Miscellanies: Or rather, much rather, be pleased to order a Copy of it to be made out for her, and to give the Original, it being mostly in my own Hand-writing, to This is a better Thought by my dear Father. much; for the dear good Man will esteem it the more for that. I wonder I did not think of this before.

To the other Servants, I have only to leave my Thanks and best Wishes, for their respectful Love and dutiful Behaviour to one, who from being once hardly the equal to some of them, has been exalted. to the honourable Station of their Mistress, by your superlative Goodness and Favour. No Servants, my dear Mr. B. ever deserved a Mistress's Thanks, if yours do not; for they, every one of them, most cheerfully came into all my little Schemes and Regulations; and they have encouraged me, by their ready Obedience and their respectful Loves, to pursue the natural Dictates of my own Heart, and have made all Assumings and Pride as unnecessary, as they would have been grievous to me, and centurable by every one else: For was it not my high Concern so to behave myself to all, Low as well as High, that my best beloved Benefactor should not, by my Arrogance or Inattention, have Censurers of him, added to Enviers of me, for the Step he had taken, so derogatory to his own Honour, and to that of his ancient and splendid. Family.?

* See for a Hint of this, Vol. I. p. 87.

To the Favour of the best of Masters I therefore leave them, with this Testimony of their Merits, and of my kind Regard to them, which makes me venture to call them without one Exception, from my Silver-hair'd Jonathan, to the lowest Menial, the best Set of Servants that any Gentleman ever had: Nor, by Miss Darnford's Account of the Behaviour of those at the Hall, do I find them at all unworthy of being class'd with these here, in the happy Character. And let me say, my dearest Mr. B. that I have been not a little attentive to their respective Behaviours, and have taken Mrs. Jervis's Observations, as a Help to my own, in this Particular; because I thought it my Duty to do so, as well in Justice to your dear Self, as to them.

As to Polly Barlow, to whom I was willing to behave with an Eye to my dear good Lady's Kindness to myself, I have nothing to say, by way of Distinction from the rest; having hinted to Mrs. Fervis to give her her Advice, from time to time, and that if an honest Husband should offer, she should

advise the poor Girl not to decline it.

Forgive me, dearest Sir, for thus mentioning to you, in this folemn Letter, so particularly, your Servants. But the Pleasure which their Regularity and Worthiness have given me, together with the Knowledge I have of their Fidelity and affectionate Duty to you, methinks call for this Testimony of my Satisfaction in them, and for my Recommendation of them to your Favour.

And now, what have I farther to fay, but to beg of God to shower down his most precious Blessings upon you, my dearest, my first, my last, and my enly Love! and to return to you an hundred-fold, the Benefits which you have conferr'd upon Me and Mine, and upon so many poor Souls, as you have bless'd thro' my Hands! And that you may in your next Choice be happy with a Lady, who may have

every thing I want; and who may love and honour you, with the same affectionate Duty, which has been my Delight, and my Glory to pay you: For in this I am sure, no one can exceed me!—And after having given you long Life, Prosperity, and Increase of Honour, translate you into a blessed Eternity, where, through the Merits of our common Redeemer, I hope I shall be allowed a Place, and be permitted (O let me indulge that pleasing, that consolatory Thought!) to receive and rejoice in my restored Spouse, for ever and ever; are the Prayers the last Prayers, if it so please God! of, my dearest dear Mr. B.

Your dutiful and affectionate Wife, and faithful Servant, P. B

LETTER XVIII.

From Mifs DARNFORD to Lady DARNFORD

My honcured Mamma,

fore

and

ven-

1 my

e best

Nor,

er of

hy of

cter.

been

ours,

Help

ght it

dear

ig to Linday of Fer-

and

your

arity

h the

onate

ry of

enda-

o beg

flings

d my

-fold,

e and

have

your

have

every

YOU cannot conceive how you and my dear Papa have delighted the Heart of my good Mrs. B. and obliged her Mr. B. by the Permission you have given me to attend her till the important Hour shall be over with her; for the dear Lady is exceedingly apprehensive, and one can hardly blame her; since there is hardly such another happy Couple in the World.

I am glad to hear that the Ceremony is over, so much to both your Satisfactions: May this Matrimony be but a tenth Part as happy as that I am Witness to here; and Mr. and Mrs. Murray will have that to boast of, which sew married People have, even among those we call happy!

F 6

FOF

For my Part, I believe I shall never care to marry at all; for tho' I cannot be so deserving as Mrs. B, yet I shall not bear to think of a Husband, much less excellent than hers. Nay, by what I see in her Apprehensions, and conceive of the Condition she hourly expects to be in, I don't think a Lady can be requited with a less worthy one, for all she is likely to suffer on a Husband's Account, and for the sake

of his Family and Name.

Mrs. Andrews, a discreet worthy Soul as ever I knew, and who in her Aspect and Behaviour is far from being a Disgrace even to Mr. B.'s Lady, is with her dear Daughter, to her no small Satisfaction, as you may suppose, who now-and-then says, What a soolish Creature, my dear Mother, have you for a Daughter!— You did not behave so weakly as I do, when you were in the same Circumstances, I dare say; and yet you had a dear good Husband, though not a rich one, to hope to live for!—But, come, I will have a good Heart, to make myself as worthy of the Company and Chearings of three such Eriends, as I am bless'd with in my Mother, my Miss Darnsord, and Mrs. Fervis.

Mr. B. ask'd my Advice Yesterday, about having in the House a Midwise, to be at hand, at a Moment's Warning. I told him, I fear'd the Sight of such a Person would terrify her: And so he instantly started an Expedient, of which her Mother, Mrs. Fervis, and myself, approved, and have put into Practice; for, this Day, Mrs. Harris, a distant Relation of mine, tho' not of yours, Sir and Madam, is arrived from Essex to make me a Visit; and Mr. B. has been so good as to prevail upon her, in Compliment to me, as he pretended, to accept of her Board in his House, while she stays in Town,

which, she says, will be about a Week.

Now, you must know, that this Mrs. Harris being a discreet, modest, matron-like Person, Mrs. B. took

rry B.

less Ap-

the

n be

cely

fake

er I

far

7, 15

fac-

ays,

you

as L

s, L

and,

But,

If as

fuch.

my.

ving

Mo-

nt of

ntly Mrs.

into

Re-

lam,

Mr.

com:

her

wn,

be-B.

ook

took a Liking to her at first Sight, and is already very familiar with her; and understanding that she is a Gentlewoman who was a Doctor of Physick's Lady, and takes as much Delight in administering to the Health of her own Sex, as her Husband used to do to that of both, Mrs. B. says, it is very fortunate, that she has so experienced a Lady to consult, as she is such a Novice in her own Case.

Mr. B. however, to carry on the honest Imposture better, just now, in Presence of Mrs. Harris, and Mrs. Andrews, and me, asked the former, If it was not necessary to have in the House the good Woman? This frighted Mrs. B. who turn'd pale, and said she could not bear the Thoughts of it. Mrs. Harris said, It was highly necessary that Mrs. B. if she would not permit the Gentlewoman to be in the House, should see her; and that then, she apprehended, there would be no Necessity, as she supposed she did not live far off, to have her in the House, since Mrs. B. was so uneasy upon that Account. This pleas'd Mrs. B. much, and Mrs. Thomas was admitted to attend her.

Now, you must know, that this is the Assistant of my new Relation; and she being apprized of the Matter, came; but never did I see so much Shyness and Apprehension as Mrs. B. shew'd all the time Mrs. Thomas was with her, holding sometimes her Mother, sometimes Mrs. Harris, by the Hand, and

being ready to fweat with Terror.

Mrs. Harris scrap'd Acquaintance with Mrs. Thomas, who, pretending to recollect her, gave Mrs. Harris great Praises; which increas'd Mrs. B.'s Confidence in her: And she undertakes to govern the Whole so, that the dreaded Mrs. Thomas need not come till the very Moment; which is no small Pleafure to the over-nice Lady. And she seems every Hour to be better pleas'd with Mrs. Harris, who, by her prudent Talk, will more and more familiarize

her to the Circumstance, unawares to herself in a manner. But notwithstanding this Precaution, of a Midwife in the House, Mr. B. intends to have a Gentleman of the Profession in Readiness, for fear of the worst.

I tell Mr. B, he is very happy, in this Stratagem; but that, I suppose, he has been more us'd to Contrivances of this fort than he ought to have been; and was so free as to add, That I presum'd his Lady is hardly the first he has cheated into a Child. And, indeed, I think, Mrs. B.'s Merit to the rest of her Sex, is very great, were it only in reforming such an uncommonly agreeable and manly Rake as this: for no doubt he has done, and would have done, a world of Mischief among the Thoughtless and Indiscreet in Upper Life; for, it feems, when he was at the worst, he never made the Vulgar the Subjects of his vile Attempts.

Mrs. B. has written a Letter, and the Superscription following will tell you to whom it is directed:

· To the ever-honour'd and ever-dear Mr. B. with · Prayers for his Health, Honour, and Prosperity in

this World, and everlatting Felicity in that to come.

. P. B.' It is feal'd with black Wax, and she gave it me this Moment, on her being taken ill, to give But God, of his Mercy, to Mr. B. if the dies. avert that! and preserve the dear Lady, for the Honour of her Sex, and the Happiness of all who know her, and particularly for that of your Polly Darnford; for I cannot have a greater Lofs, I am fure, while my honour'd Papa and Mamma are living: And may that be for many, very many, happy Years!

I will not close this Letter, till all is over: Happily, as I hope !- Mrs. B. is better again, and has, occasionally, made some fine Reflections, directing herself to me, but design'd for the Benefit of her Polly, na

of a

e a

fear

m;

on-

en;

ady

nd,

her

uch

, a

dil-

s at

s of

Ip-

ed:

ith

in

ne.

ave

rive

cy,

the

vho

olly.

am

are

ppy

ap-

las,

ing

her

olly

Polly, on the Subject of the Inconsideration of some of our Sex, with regard to the Circumstances she is in; inferring, that if such are her Apprehensions, tho' a lawful Wise, and such the Danger attending this Case, how must it leave a poor Creature destitute of all spiritual Consolation, (as well as of the Assistance and Comfortings of the nearest Friends, and of a kind Husband, when she has sacrific'd her Honour, and cannot think of any thing so probable, as the Moment approaches, but that God will punish her in Kind, as she call'd it; that is to say, added she, by the very Sufferings, which are the natural Consequences of the Sin she has so wickedly committed!

I knew what her Design was, and said, Ay, Polly, let you and I, and every single young Body, bear these Resections in Mind, pronounced by so excellent a

Lady, in Moments so arduous as these!

The Girl wept, and very movingly sell down by the Door, on her Knees, praying to God to preserve her dear Lady, and she should be happy for ever!

—That, as Mrs. B. so often prettily writes, was her Word.

Mrs. B. is exceedingly pleas'd with my new Relation, Mrs. Harris, as we call her, who behaves with so much Prudence, that she suspects nothing, and told Mrs. Fervis, She wish'd nobody else was to come near her. And as she goes out (being a Person of Eminence in her way) two or three times a Day, and last Night stay'd out late, Mrs. B. said, she hop'd she would not be abroad, when she should wish her to be at home.

I have the Pleasure, the very great Pleasure, my dear Papa and Mamma, to acquaint you, and I know you will rejoice with me upon it, that just half an Hour ago, my dear Mrs. B. was brought to-bed of a fine Boy.

We

PI2 PAMELA; Or,

We are all out of our Wits for Joy almost. I ran down to Mr. B. myself, who received me with trembling Impatience. A Boy! a fine Boy! dear Mr. B.

faid I: A Son and Heir, indeed!

But how does my Pamela? Is she safe? Is she like to do well? We hope so, said I: Or I had not come down to you, I'll assure you. He solded me in his Arms, in a joyful Rapture: How happy you make me, dearest Miss Darnsord! If my Pamela is safe, the Boy is welcome, welcome, indeed!—But when may I go up to thank my Jewel?

Mrs. Andrews is so overjoy'd, and so thankful,

that there's no getting her from her Knees.

A Man and Horse is dispatch'd already to Lady Davers; and another order'd to Kent, to the good old Man.

Mrs. Fervis, when I went up, faid, the must go down, and release the good Folks from their Knees; for, half an Hour before, they declar'd they would not stir from that Posture till they heard how it went with their Lady; and when the happy News was brought them of her Safety, and of a young Master, they were quite ecstatick, she says, in their Joy, and not a dry Eye among them, shaking Hands, and congratulating one another, Men and Maids: Which must make it one of the most affecting Sights that can be imagin'd. And Mr. Longman, who had no Power to leave the House for Three Days past, (tho' Business requir'd his Presence in Bedfordshire) hasted to congratulate his worthy Principal; and never was fo much moving Joy feen, as this honesthearted Steward ran over with.

I cannot draw these affecting Scenes of Joy, as Mrs. B. could have done, had she been in my Case.

Let me only say, I never saw such a Family-Joy in my Life: And who would care for Royalty, or any of its Pageantry, when Virtue can thus interest every Body in its Concerns, and, on such an Occa-

fion as this, give that general and fincere Joy to all within its Circle, which could fill a Nation on the Birth of a first-born Prince from Sovereigns the most beloved?

I did a foolish thing in my Joy—I gave Mr. B. the Letter design'd for him, had an unhappy Event follow'd; and he won't give it me again; but says, he will obtain Mrs. B.'s Leave, when she is better, to open it; and the happier Turn will augment his Thankfulness to God, and Love to her, when he shall, by this Means, be blest with Sentiments so different from what the other Case would have afforded. But I will get it from him, if I can, and give it her back; for one knows not what it may contain; yet her Innocence and Purity make one less apprehensive a good deal; for, I dare say, she has no Excuses to make for Failings he knows nothing of.

Mrs. B. had a very sharp Time. Never more, my dear Papa, talk of a Husband to me. Indeed, in the Mind I am in, I will never be marry'd.—
Place all your Expectations on Nancy! Not one of these Men, that I have yet seen, Mr. B. excepted, (and you know what a Chance it was that he would be so good) is worth running these Risques for! But his Indearments and Tenderness to his Lady, his thankful and manly Gratitude and Politeness, when he was admitted to pay his Respects to her, and his Behaviour to Mrs. Andrews, and to us all, tho' but for a Visit of Ten Minutes, was alone worthy of all her Risque!

I would give you a Description of it, had I Mrs. B.'s Pen, and of Twenty agreeable Scenes and Conversations besides: But, for want of that, must conclude, with my humble Duty, as becomes, honour'd

Sir and Madam,

ran

m-

 B_{\bullet}

like

me

his

ake

ife,

hen

ful,

ady

ood

go

ees;

ould

v it

ews

ung

heir

nds,

ids:

ghts

had

pait,

ire)

ne-

rest-

, as

lafe.

Jay

, or

erest

cca-

fion

Your ever-grateful POLLY DARNFORD.

I have

114 PAMELA; Or,

I have been Three Days writing this Letter, Piece by Piece.

LETTER XIX.

From the Same.

My honour'd Papa and Mamma,

TE have nothing but Joy and Festivity in this House; and it would be endless to tell you the Congratulations the happy Family receives every Day, from Tenants and Friends. Mr. B. you know, was always deem'd one of the kindest Landlords in England; and his Tenants are overjoy'd at the hapby Event which has given them a young Landlord of his Name: For all those who live in that large Part of the Estate, which came by Mrs. B. his Mother, were much afraid of having any of Sir Faceb Swynford's Family for their Landlord, who, they fay, are all made up of Pride and Cruelty, and would have racked them to Death: Infomuch that they had a voluntary Meeting of about Twenty of the principal of them, to rejoice on the Occasion; and it was unanimously agreed to make a Present of a Piece of gilt Plate, to serve as a Bason for the Christening, to the Value of One hundred Guineas; on which is to be engraven the following Inscription:

In Acknowledgment of the Humanity and Generosity of the best of Landlords, and as a Token of his Tenants Joy on the happy Birth of a Son and Heir, who will, it is hoped, inherit his Father's Generosity, and his Mother's Virtues, this Piece of Plate is, with all due Gratitude, presented, as a a Christening Bason to all the Children that shall proceed from such worthy Parents, and their Descendants, to the End of Time.

Piece

n this

ou the

every

mow,

rds in

e hap-

adlord

large

Jacob

they

would

ey had

rinci-

ece of

ng, to

1 is to

nerolity

of his

on and ather's

rece of

d, asa

Def-

By the obliged and joyful Tenants of the maternal Estate in Bedfordshire and Gloucestershire, the Initials of whose Names are under-engraven, viz.

Then are to follow the first Letters of each Perfon's Christian and Surname.

What an Honour is this to a Landlord! In my Opinion far, very far, surpassing the mist nomer'd Free-gifts which we read of in some Kingdoms on extraordinary Occasions, some of them like this! For here it is all truly spontaneous—A Free-gift indeed; and Mr. B. took it very kindly, and has put off the Christening for a Week, to give time for its being completed and inscribed as above.

Such good Tenants, such a good Wife, such Blessings from Heaven following him, nobody, I tell Mr. B. has so much Encouragement to be good as he has; and if hereafter he should swerve, he would not have the least Excuse, and would be the ungrate-

fullest Man breathing.

The Earl and Countess of C——, and Lord and Lady Davers, are here, to stand in Person at the Christening; and you cannot conceive how greatly my Lady Davers is transported with Joy, to have a Son and Heir to the Estate: She is, every Hour, almost, thanking her dear Sister for him; and reads in the Child all the great Qualities she forms to herself in him. 'Tis, indeed, a charming Boy, and has a great deal (if one may judge of a Child so very young) of his Father's manly Aspect. The dear Lady herself is still but weak; but the Joy of all around her, and her Spouse's Tenderness and Politeness, give her cheerful and free Spirits; and she is all Serenity, Ease, and Thankfulness.

Mrs. B. as foon as the Danger was over, asked me for her Letter with the black Seal. I had been very earnest to get it from Mr. B. but to no Purpose: So I was forced to tell her who had it. She said,

Bi

faid, but very composedly, She was forry for it, and

hop'd he had not open'd it.

He came into her Chamber soon after, and I demanded it before her. He said, He had design'd to ask her Leave to break the Seal, which he had not yet done; nor would, without her Consent.

You will fee nothing in it, Sir, faid the dear Lady, but a grateful Heart, a faithful Love, and my Prayers, that God will be as good to You, as you

have been to Me.

Will you give me Leave, my Dear, said he, to break the Seal? If you do, Sir, let it not be in my Presence; but it is too serious. Not, my Dear, now the Apprehension is so happily over: It may now add to my Joy and my Thankfulness on that Account, Then do as you please, Sir: But I had rather you would not.

Then here it is, Miss Darnford; I had it from you: It was put into your Hands; and there I place it again. That's something like, said I, considering the Gentleman. Mrs. B. I hope we shall bring

him into good Order between us in time.

So I return'd it to the dear Writer; who lifted up her Eyes, and her Lips moving, shew'd a thankful Ejaculation, that she was spared to receive it back

again; and put it into her Bosom.

I related to Lady Davers, when she came, this Circumstance; and she I believe, has got Leave to take it with her. She is very proud of all Oppornities now of justifying her Brother's Choice, and doing Honour to his Wife, with Lady Betty C. who is her great Favourite, and who delights to read Mrs. B.'s Letters.

You defire to know, my honoured Papa, how Mr. B. passes his Time, and whether it be in his Lady's Chamber? No, indeed! Catch Gentlemen, the best of them, in too great a Complaisance that way, if you can. What then, does he pass his Time with

and

de-

d to

t yet

La-

my

you

e, to

a my

now

v add

ount.

you

from

place

ider-

bring

ed up

nkful

back

this

ve to

ppor-

. who

Mrs.

how

in his

emen,

e that

Time

with you, Polly, you are pleased to ask? What a Difadvantage a Man lies under, who has been once a Rake! But I am so generally with Mrs. B. that when I tell you, Sir, that his Visits to her are pretty much of the polite Form, I believe I answer all you mean by your Questions; and especially when I remind you, Sir, that Lord and Lady Davers, and the Earl and Countess of C. and your unworthy Daughter, are at Dinner and Supper-time generally together; for Mrs. Andrews, who is not yet gone back to Kent, breakfasts, dines, and sups with her beloved Daughter, and is hardly ever out of her Room.

Then, Sir, Mr. B. and the Earl, and Lord Davers, give pretty constant Attendance to the Business of Parliament; and, now-and-then, sup abroad—So, Sir, we are all upon Honour; and I could wish, (only that your Facetiousness always gives me Pleasure, as it is a Token that you have your much-desired Health and Freedom of Spirits) that, even in Jest, my Mamma's Daughter might pass unquestioned.

But I know why you do it: It is only to put me out of Heart to ask to stay longer. Yet I wish—But I know you won't permit me to go through the whole Winter here.—Will my dear Papa grant it, do you think, my honoured Mamma, if you were to lay the highest Obligation upon your dutiful Daughter, and petition for me? And should you care to try?

I dare not hope it myself, you see, Madam: But when one sees a Gentleman here, who denies his Lady nothing that she asks, it makes one be ready to wish, methinks, that Lady Darnford was as happy in that Particular as Lady B.

Your Indulgence, for this Winter, this one Winter, or, rather this small Remainder of Winter, I make not so much doubt of, you see, Madam. I know you'll call me a bold Girl; but then you always, when you do, condescend to grant my Request:

And

And I will be as good as ever I can be afterwards. I will fetch up all the lost Time; rise an Hour sooner in the Morning, go to-bed an Hour later at Night; slower my Papa any thing he pleases; read him to sleep when he pleases; put his Gout into good Humour, when it will be soothed—And Mrs. B. to crown all, will come down with me, by Permission of her sovereign Lord, who will attend her, you may be sure: And will not all this do, to procure me a Month or two more?—If it won't, why then, I will thank you for your past Goodness to me, and, with all Duty and Cheerfulness, bid Adieu to this dear London, this dearer Family, and attend a still dearer Papa and Mamma; whose dutiful Daughter I will ever be, whilst

POLLY DARNFORD.

LETTER XX.

To the Same.

My honoured Papa and Mamma,

Have received your joint Commands, and intend to set out on Wednesday next Week. I hope I shall find my Papa in better Health than he is at present, and in better Humour too; for I am very forry he is displeased with my petitioning for a little longer Time in London. It is very severe to impute to me Want of Duty and Affection to you both, which would, if deserved, make me very unworthy of your Favour to me.

Mr. B. and his Lady are resolved to accompany me in their Coach, till your Chariot meets me, if you will be pleased to permit it so to do; and even set me down at your Gate, if it do not; but he vows, that he will not alight at your House, nor let his Lady neither. But I say, that this is a misplaced

Refent-

Resentment, because I ought to think it a Favour, that you have indulg'd me fo much as you have done. And yet even this is likewise a Favour on their side to me, because it is an Instance of their Fondness

for your unworthy Daughter's Company.

Mrs. B. is, if possible, more lovely fince her Lying in than before. She has so much Delight in her Nursery, that I fear it will take her off from her Pen, which will be a great Loss to all whom the used to oblige with her Correspondence. Indeed, this new Object of her Care is a charming Child; and she is exceedingly pleased with her Nurse; for the is not permitted, as the very much defired, to fuckle it herfelf.

She makes a great Proficiency in the French and Italian Languages; and well the may; for the has the best Schoolmaster in the World, and one whom the loves better than Lady ever lov'd a Tutor. He is lofty, and will not be disputed with; but I never faw a more polite and tender Husband, for all that; and well may a Lady, bless'd as she is, bear with a little Imperiousness sometimes; which, however, she nips in the Bud, by her Sweetness of Temper, and ready Compliance. But then he is a Man of Sense; and a Lady need be the less concern'd to yield a Point to a Man of Sense, and Generosity, as he is; who is incapable of treating her the worse for her Refignation and Complacency. Whenever I marry, it shall be to a Man of Sense, and a generous Man, against the World; for such an one cannot treat a Woman ill; as Mrs. B. often observes.

We had a splendid Christening, exceedingly well order'd, and every body was highly delighted at it. The Quality Gossips went away but on Tuesday; and my Lady Davers took Leave of her charming bilter with all the Bleffings, and all the Kindness, and affectionate Fondness, that could be express'd.

Mr.

of your mpany me, it d even but he nor let fplaced. Resent-

irds.

oner

ght;

1 to

Hu-

3. to

Mion

you

cure

then,

and,

this

ftill

nter I

D.

intend

ope i

it pre-

y forry

longer

to me

which

Mr. Andrews, that worthy old Man, came up to fee his Grandson Yesterday, and in order to attend his Wife down. You would never have forgotten the good Man's Behaviour (had you seen it) to his Daughter, and to the Charming Child: I wish I could describe it to you; but I am apt to think Mrs. B. will take Notice of it to Lady Davers; and if she enters into the Description of it while I stay, I will beg a Copy of it, to bring down with me; because I know you were pleas'd with the sensible, plain, good Man, and his Ways, when at the Hall in your Neighbourhood.

1

t

B

te

tı

fo

C

tv

th

bo

bo

M

fo

Pi

re

m

is

fai

m

M

The Child is named William, that I should have told you; but I write without any manner of Connection, just as things come uppermost: But don't, my dear Papa, construe this, too, as an Instance of Disrespect. I wish you were not so angry with me; it makes me almost as a laid, I shall set out next Wednesday in Mr. B.'s Coach; and as we shall keep the main Road all the Way, I shall see, by my being met, how I am to be receiv'd, or whether pardon'd or not. Mr. B. says, he will take me back again, if my dear Papa frown at me ever so little; and he will not deliver me up into any other

Hands but his, neither.

We have been at several Plays, and at the Opera divers times; for we make the best of our Time, since it is so short; and we fear'd how it would be; though I hoped I should not have anger neither, Mrs. B. is taken up between whiles, with writing Remarks upon the Plays, &c. she sees, in a little Book, for Lady Davers. She sent that Lady her Remarks upon one or two, with which she is so well pleased, that she will not let even her Nursery excuse her from proceeding upon those Subjects; and this will so ingross the dear Lady's Pen, that I shall not be savour'd so much as I used to be; but Lady Davers

If

Davers promises me to lend me the Book, when she has read it; so that will be some Satisfaction.

I fee but one thing that can possibly happen to diffurb the Felicity of this charming Couple; and that I will mention, in Confidence. Mr. B. and Mrs. B. and myself were at the Masquerade, before the lay in: There was a Lady greatly taken with Mr. B. She was in a Nun's Habit, and followed him wherever he went; and Mr. Turner, a Gentleman of one of the Inns of Court, who visits Mr. B. fometimes, and is an old Acquaintance of his, tells me, by the bye, that the Lady took an Opportunity to unmask to Mr. B. Mr. Turner has since found she is the young Countess Dowager of a fine Lady; but not the most referv'd in her Conduct of late, fince her Widowhood. And he has fince discovered, as he says, that a Letter or two, if not more, have passed between Mr. B. and that Lady.

Now Mrs. B. with all her Perfections, has, as she owns, a little Spice of Jealousy; and should she be once alarm'd, I tremble for the Consequences to

both their Happiness.

VOL. IV.

to

nd

en

IIS

1

S.

if

I

e-

ill

ve

n-

t,

of

2;

I

nd

or

ke

fo

er

ra

e,

r,

lė

11

fe

is

ot

y

15

It is my Opinion, that if ever any thing makes a Misunderstanding between them, it will be from some such Quarter as this. But 'tis a thousand Pities it should. And I hope, as to the actual Cor-

respondence begun, Mr. Turner is mistaken.

But be it as it will, I would not for the World, that the first Hints of this Matter should come from me.—Mr. B. is a very enterprising and gallant Man, is a fine Figure of a Man, and I don't wonder a Lady may like him. But he seems so pleas'd, so satisfy'd with his Wise, and carries it to her with so much Tenderness and Affection, that I hope her Merit, and this his Affection for her, will secure his conjugal Fidelity.

G

If it prove otherwise, and she discovers it, I know no one that would be more miserable than Mrs. B. as well from Motives of Piety and Virtue, as from the excessive Love she bears him. - But I hope for

better things, for both their fakes.

My humble Thanks for all your Indulgences to me, with Hopes, that you will not, my dear Papa and Mamma, hold your Displeasure against me, when I throw myself at your Feet, as I now soon hope to do, conclude me

> Your dutiful Daughter, M. DARNFORD,

f

th

15

W

on

W

We

gr

M

B.

ing

hir

the

Ge

0

LETTER XXI.

From Mrs. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My dear Lady,

E are just return'd from accompanying the worthy Miss Darnford as far as Bedford, in her Way home, where her Papa and Mamma met her in their Coach. Sir Simon put on his pleafant Airs, and schooled Mr. B. for persuading his Daughter to stay so long from him; me for putting her upon asking to stay longer; and she for being perfuaded by us.

I think he is worse than ever, in his way of Talk, and for my Rebukes to him; for he ran on a deal of Stuff about me, and my late Lying-in; and would have it, that I am so much improv'd, that I ought to make a Curt'sy to Mr. B. once an Hour. He faid, when I was angry at him, and his Lady blam'd him, that it was all pure Revenge for my Letter *, and for keeping his Daughter fo long from him. We

* See Vol. III. p. 101.

We tarry'd two Days together at Bedford; for we knew not how to part; and then we took a most affectionate Leave of each other.

We struck out of the Road a little, to make a Vifit to the dear House, where we tarry'd one Night; and next Morning, before any body could come to congratulate us, (designing to be incog.) we proceeded on our Journey to London, and found my dearest,

dear Boy, in charming Health.

7(

0

a

16

in

et.

It

1-

er r-

k,

of

ld

ht

le

'd

Te.

What a new Pleasure has God Almighty's Goodness bestow'd upon me; which, after every little Absence, rises upon me, in a true maternal Tenderness, every Step I move toward the dear little Blessing!—Yet sometimes, I think your dear Brother is not so fond of him as I wish him to be. He says, 'tis time enough for him to mind him, when he can return his Notice, and be grateful!—A negligent Word, i'n't it, Madam,—Considering—

My dear Father came to Town, to accompany my good Mother down to Kent, and they fet out three or four Days after your Ladyship left us. It is impossible to describe the Joy with which his worthy Heart overslow'd, when he congratulated us on the happy Event. And as he had been apprehensive for his Daughter's Sasety, judge, my Lady, what his Transports must be, to see us all sase and well, and happy, and a Son given to Mr. B. by his greatly honoured Daughter.

I was in the Nursery when he came. So was my Mother. Miss Darnford also was there. And Mr. B. who was in his Closet at his Arrival, after having received his most respectful Congratulations himself, brought him up (though he has not been there since: indeed he han't!) Pamela, said the dear

Gentleman, see who's here!

I sprang to him, and kneeled for his Bleffing:

O my Father! said I, see (pointing to the dear

G 2

Baby

Baby at the Nurse's Breast) how God Almighty has

answer'd all our Prayers!

He dropp'd down on his Knees by me, clasping me in his indulgent Arms: — O my Daughter!— My blessed Daughter!— And do I once more see you! And see you safe and well!—I do! I do!— Blessed be thy Name, O gracious God, for these

thy Mercies!

While we were thus joined, happy Father, and happy Daughter, in one Thanksgiving, the sweet Baby having fallen asleep, the Nurse had put it into the Cradle; and when my Father rose from me, he went to my Mother, God bless my dear Betty, said he: I long'd to fee you, after this Separation. Here's Joy! Here's Pleasure! O how happy are we! And taking her Hand, he kneeled down on one Side the Cradle, and my Mother on the other, both looking at the dear Baby, with Eyes running over; and, Hand in Hand, he prayed, in the most fervent manner, for a Bleffing upon the dear Infant; and that God Almighty would make him an Honour to his Father's Family, and to his Mother's Virtue, (that was his Word;) and that, in the Words of Scripture, he might grow on, and be in Favour both with the Lord, and with Men.

They both arose, and Mr. B. taking my Hand, and Miss Darnford's (your Ladyship may guess how we were moved! for she is a sweet-natur'd Lady, you know, Madam;) My dear Pamela! How these kind, these grateful Hearts affect one!—Do you often, my dear Miss Darnford, see Scenes wrought up by the Poets to this moving Height?—Here we behold and admire that noble Simplicity, in which Nature always triumphs over her Hand-maid Art!—And which makes a Scene of Joy as affecting to a noble Mind as that of the deepest Distress! Else, how could it display its Force thus sweetly on your lovely

Cheek!

ee

fe

bn

et

to

he

aid

n.

e!

ide

ok-

nd,

an-

hat

his

hat

rip-

vith

ind,

Wor

ady,

hele

you ught

e we

hich

t!-

to a

how

ovely

Mr.

Mr. B. has just put into my Hands Mr. Locke's Treatife on Education, and he commands me to give him my Thoughts upon it in Writing. has a very high Regard for this Author, and tells me, that my Tenderness for Billy will make me think some of the first Advice given in it a little harsh, perhaps; but altho' he has not read it thro', only having dipp'd into it here and there, he believes, from the Name of the Author, Ic nnot have a better Directory: And my Opinion of it, after I have well confider'd it, will inform him, he fays, of my own Capacity and Prudence, and how far he may rely upon both in the Point of a first Education.

I ask'd, if I might not be excus'd Writing, only making my Observations here and there, to himself, as I found Occasion? But he said, You will yourfelf, my Dear, better consider the Subject, and be more a Mistress of it, and I shall the better attend to your Reasonings, when they are put into Writing: And furely, Pamela, added he, you may, in fuch an important Point as this, as well oblige me with a little of your Penmanship, as your other dear Friends.

After this, your Ladyship will judge I had not another Word to fay. He cuts one to the Heart, when he speaks so feriously.

I have look'd a little into it. It is a Book quite accommodated to my Case, being written to a Gentleman, the Author's Friend, for the Regulation of h's Conduct towards his Children. But how shall I do, Madam, if in such a fam'd and renown'd Author, I fee already some few things, which I think want clearing up? Won't it look like intolerable Vanity, in such a one as me, to find Fault with fuch a Genius as Mr. Locke?

But I will consider of the Matter thoroughly, before I set Pen to Paper; for, although he writes in a very familiar and intelligible Style, perhaps I may

not understand him at once reading.

I must, on this Occasion, give your Ladyship the Particulars of a short Conversation between your Brother and me; which, however, perhaps, will not be to my Advantage, because it will shew you what a teazing Body I can be, if I am indulged.—But Mr. B. will not spoil me neither in that Way: No sear of that, I dare say!—Your Ladyship will see this in the very Dialogue I shall give you.

Thus it was. I had been reading in Mr. Locke's Book, and Mr. B. ask'd me how I lik'd it? Exceedingly well, Sir. But I have a Proposal to make, which, if you will be pleased to comply with, will give me a charming Opportunity of understanding

Mr. Locke.

What is your Proposal, my Dear? I see it is some very particular one, by that sweet Earnestness in your Look.

Why fo it is, Sir: And I must know, whether you are in high good Humour, before I make it. I think you look grave upon me; and my Proposal will not then do, I'm sure.

You have all the amusing Ways of your Sex, my dear Pamela. But tell me what you would say?

You know I don't love Suspense.

May-be your'e bufy, Sir. Perhaps I break in upon you. I believe you were going into your Closet.

True, Woman!—How you love to put one upon the Tenters! Yet, my Life for yours, by your Parale, what I just now thought important, is some pretty Trisse!—Speak it at once, or I'll be angry with you; and tapp'd my Cheek.

Well, I wish I had not come just now! — I see you are not in a quite good Humour enough for my Proposal. —— So, pray, Sir, excuse me, till To-

morrow.

He

C

C

V

V

r

t

te

d

y

a

t

it

f

ay

he

ur ot

at

ut

ee

S

1

ill

g

10

ur

er

al

y

n

n

.

e

e

He took my Hand, and led me to his Closet, calling me his pretty Impertinent; and then urging me, I faid - You know, Sir, I have not been us'd to the Company of Children. Your dear Billy will not make me fit, for a long time, to judge of any Part of Education. I can learn of the charming Boy nothing but the Baby Conduct: But now, if you would permit me to take into the House some little Master of three or four Years old, or Miss of five or fix, I should watch over all their little Ways; and now reading a Chapter in the Child, and now a Chapter in the Book, I shall be enabled to look forward, and with Advantage, into the Subject; and to go through all the Parts of Education tolerably, for one of my Capacity; for, Sir, I can, by my own Defects, and what I have wished to mend, know how to judge of, and supply that Part of Life, which carries a Child up to eleven or twelve Years of Age, which was mine, when my Lady took me.

A pretty Thought, Pamela! but tell me, who will part with their Child, think you? Would you do it, if it were your own Case, altho' you were ever so well assured of the Advantages your Little one would reap by it?—For don't you consider, my Dear, that the Child ought to be wholly subjected to your Authority? That its Father or Mother ought seldom to see it; because it should think itself absolutely dependent upon you?—And where, my Dear, will you meet with Parents so resign'd?—Besides, one would have the Child descended of genteel Parents, and not such as could do nothing for it; otherwise the Turn of Mind and Education you would give

it, might do it more Harm than Good.

All this is true, Sir, very true. But have you no other Objection, if one could find a genteelly defeended young Master? And would you join to persuade his Papa to give me up his Power, only from three Months to three Months, as I lik'd, and

G 4

the

the Child lik'd, and as the Papa approv'd of my

Proceedings?

This is so reasonable, with these last Conditions, Pamela, that I should be pleased with your Notion, if it could be put in Practice, because the Child would be benefited by your Instruction, and you would be improved in an Art, which I could wish to see you an Adept in.

But, perhaps, Sir, you had rather it were a Girl

than a Boy?

I had, my Dear, if a Girl could be found, whose Parents would give her up to you: But I suppose you have some Boy in your Head, by your putting it upon that Sex at first.

Let me see, Sir, you say you are in a good Humour! Let me see, if you be;—Looking boldly in

his Face.

What now, with some little Impatience, would

the pretty Fool be at?

Only, Sir, that you have nothing to do, but to fpeak the Word, and there is a Child, whose Papa, and Mamma too, I am sure, would consent to give up to me, for my own Instruction, as well as for her Sake; and if, to speak in the Scripture Phrase, I have found Grace in your Sight, kind Sir, speak this Word to the dear Child's Papa.

And have you thus come over with me, Pamela!

—Go, I am half angry with you, for leading me on in this manner against myself. This looks so artful, that I won't love you!—Dear Sir!—And dear Madam! too! Begone, I say!—You have surpris'd me by Art, when your Talent is Nature, and you

should keep to that!

I was fadly baulk'd, and had neither Power to go nor flay! — At last, seeing I had put him into a kind of Flutter, as now he had put me, I moved my unwilling Feet towards the Door.—He took a Turn about the Closet mean time.—Yet stay, said he, there

I

V

Y

is fomething fo generous in your Art, that, on Re-

collection, I cannot part with you.

He took Notice of the starting Tear—I am to blame! — You had surpris'd me so, that my hasty Temper got the better of my Consideration. Let me kiss away this pearly Fugitive. Forgive me, my dearest Love! What an inconsiderate Brute am I, when compared to such an Angel as my Pamela; I see, at once now, all the Force, and all the Merit, of your amiable Generosity: And to make you amends for this my Hastiness, I will coolly consider of the Matter, and will either satisfy you by my Compliance, or by the Reasons which I will give

for the contrary.

ny

ns,

on,

ild

ou

ish

irl

ose

ole

ng

lu-

in

ıld

to

oa,

ive

for

, [

his

a!

on

rt-

ear

s'd

ou

go

2

ny

rn

re

15

But fay, my Pamela; can you forgive my Harshnes?—Can I! Yes, indeed, Sir, pressing his Hand to my Lips; and bid me Go, and Begone, twenty times a Day, if I am to be thus kindly called back to you, thus nobly and condescendingly treated, in the same Breath!—I see, dear Sir, continued I, that I must be in Fault, if ever you are lastingly displeased with me.—For as soon as you turn yourself about, your Anger vanishes, and you make me rich Amends for a few harsh Words. Only one thing, dear Sir, let me add: If I have dealt artfully with you, impute it to my Fear of offending you, thro' the Nature of my Petition, and not to Design; and that I took the Example of the Prophet, to King David, in the Parable of the Ewe-Lamb.

I remember it, my Dear —— and you have well pointed your Parable, and had nothing to do, but

to fay, Thou art the Man!

I am called upon by my dear Benefactor for a little Airing, and he suffers me only to conclude this long Letter, knowing to whom I have the Honour to write, this being Post-day. And so I am obliged, with greater Abruptness than I had designed, to G 5 mention

mention thankfully your Ladyship's goodness to me; particularly in that kind, kind Letter *, in behalf of my dear Parents, had a certain Event taken place. Mr. B. shew'd it to me this Morning, and not before—I believe, for fear I should have been so much oppress'd by the Sense of your Ladyship's unmerited Goodness to me, had he let me know of it before your Departure from us, that I should not have been able to look up at you; heaping Favours and Blessings upon me, as you hourly were doing besides. What a happy Creature am I!—But my Gratitude runs me into Length; and forry I am, that I cannot have time just now to indulge it.

But yet I am apt sometimes to doubt, whether I ought to think myself so very happy; and whether it is not an Argument of a mean Spirit; because I am under Obligations, unreturnable Obligations, to every living Soul, as well as to your Ladyship; and yet can rejoice in them as if it was such a glorious thing to be obliged, when it is not in one's Power

to oblige again.

Is there nothing, my dear Lord and Lady Davers, is there nothing, my dear Lady Counters, and my good Lord C. that I can do, to shew, at least, that I have a Will, and am not an ingrateful, and a sor-

did Creature?

And yet, if you give me Power to do any thing that will have the Appearance of a Return, even that Power will be laying a fresh Obligation upon me—Which, however, I should be very proud of, because I should thereby convince you, by something more than Words, how much I am (most particularly, my dearest Lady Davers, my Sister, my Friend, my Patroness)

Your most obliged, and faithful Servant,

P. B.

Your

^{*} See Letter xvi. in this Volume, p. 97.

great

Your dear Brother joins in respectful Thankfulness to his four noble Gossips. And I made my Billy, by his Lips, subscribe his. I hope so to direct his earliest Notions, as to make him fensible of his dutiful Obligation.

LETTER XXII.

From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B.

My dearest PAMELA,

d e

S.

I

75

I

0

d

18

er

5,

at

r-

g

at

e-

ng

u-

d,

uf

ALK not to us of unreturnable Obligations. and all that, as in your last Letter. more for us, in the Entertainment you give us all, by your Letters, than we have done, or ever can do, for you. And as to me, I know no greater Pleasure in the World than that which my Brother's Felicity and yours gives me. God continue this Felicity to you both. I am fure it will be his Fault, and not yours, if it be at all diminish'd.

We have heard some idle Rumours here, as if you were a little uneasy of late; and having not had a Letter from you for this Fortnight past, it makes me write, to ask, How you all do? and, Whether you expected an Answer from me to your last?

I hope you won't be punctilious with me, my Pamela. For we have nothing to write to you about, except it be, how much we all love and honour you; and that you believe already, or else you don't do us justice.

I suppose you'll be going out of Town soon, now the Parliament is rifing. My Lord is refolv'd to put his Proxy into another Hand, and intends, I believe, to take my Brother's Advice in it. Both the Earl and his Lordship are highly pleas'd with my Brother's moderate and independent Principles. He has got G 6

great Credit among all unprejudic'd Men, by the Part he acted throughout the last Sessions, in which he has shewn, that he would no more join to distress and clog the Wheels of Government, by an unreasonable Opposition, than he would do the dirty Work of any Administration. As he has so noble a Fortune, and wants nothing of any body, he would be doubly to blame, to take any other Part than that of his Country in which he has so great a Stake.

May he act out of the House, and in the House, with equal Honour; and he will be his Country's Pride, and your Pride, and mine too! which is the Wish of

Your affectionate Sister,

B. DAVERS.

If you want a Pretence to kiss my dear Boy, give him, now-and-then, one for me. I hope he improves, under the Eye of so careful a Mamma; the little Rogue will else be unworthier than I wish him to be. I hope you proceed with my Book. I must see your Observations on Locke too. 'Twas a charming pretty Thought of yours, that of Miss Goodwin. A hasty Wretch! How could he be angry? — 'Twas well he so soon considered of the Matter, and ask'd Pardon.

LETTER XXIII.

My dearest Lady,

I HAVE been a little in Disorder, that I have. Some sew Rubs have happen'd. I hope they will be happily removed. But I am unwilling to believe all that is said. This is a wicked Town, tho'. I wish we were out of it. But I see not when that will

will be. I wish Mr. B. would permit me and my Billy to go into Kent: But I don't care to leave him behind me, neither; and he is not inclin'd to go. Excuse my Brevity, my dearest Lady—But I must break off, with only assuring your Ladyship, that I am, and ever will be,

Your obliged and grateful

P. B.

LETTER XXIV.

My dearest PAMELA,

irt

he

els

a-

ty

e a

ld

an a

fe, y's

he

S.

ve

he

mier

eed

ns

sht Sty vas

nd

ve.

vill

eve

hat

vill

I Understand Things go not so well as I wish. If you think my coming up to Town, and residing with you, while you stay in it, will be of service to you, or help to get you out of it, I will set out directly. I will pretend some Indisposition, and a Desire of consulting the London Physicians; or any thing you shall think sit to be done, by

Your Affectionate Sister, and faithful Friend, B. DAVERS.

LETTER XXV.

My dearest Lady,

A Thousand Thanks for your Goodness to me:
But I hope all will be well. I hope God will
enable me to act so prudent a Part, as will touch
his generous Breast. Be pleased to tell me what
your Ladyship has heard; but it becomes not me,
I think, till I cannot help it, to make any Appeals;
for, I know, those will not be excus'd! and I do all
I can to suppress my Uneasiness before him. But I

pay

pay for it, when I am alone. My Nursery, and my Reliance on God, (I should have faid the latter first) are all my Consolation. - God preserve and bless you, my good Lady, and my Noble Lord; (but I am apt to think your Ladyship's Presence will not avail) prays

Your affectionate and obliged

P. B.

to

fr 1

B

to

ar m

th

no

W

th

hi

ar

of

U m E

XXVI. LETTER

HY does not my sweet Girl subscribe Sister, as usual? I have done nothing amiss to you! I love you dearly, and ever will. I can't help my Brother's Faults. But I hope he treats you with Politeness and Decency. He shall be none of my Brother if he don't. I rest a great deal upon your Prudence; and it will be very meritorious, if you can overcome yourfelf, fo as to act unexceptionably, though it may not be deferved on this Occasion. For in doing fo, you'll have a Triumph over Nature itself; for my dear Girl, as you have formerly own'd, you have a little touch of Jealoufy in your Compofition. *

What I have heard, is no Secret to any body. The injured Party is generally the last who hears in these Cases, and you shall not first be told any thing by me that must afflict you, but cannot you, more than it does me. God give you Patience and Comfort! The wicked Lady has a deal to answer for, to disturb such an uncommon Happiness. But no more, than that I am

Your ever affectionate Sister,

B. DAVERS.

See p. 44 of this Volume:

I am

t)

ut

ot

1

ny

0-

0-

u-

an

y,

n.

re

d,

0 .

y.

in

ng

re

n-

to

10

m

I am all Impatience to hear how you conduct yourself upon this trying Occasion. Let me know what you have heard, and how you came to hear it.

LETTER XXVII.

Lady Davers?—I have not had the Courage to do it of late. For my Title to that Honour arises from the dear, thrice dear Mr. B. And how long I may be permitted to call him mine, I cannot fay. But fince you command it, I will call your Ladyship by that beloved Name, let the rest happen as God shall see fit.

Mr. B. cannot be unpolite, in the main; but he is cold, and a little cross, and short in his Speeches to me. I try to hide my Grief from every body, and most from him; for, my dear Lady, neither my Father, Mother, nor Miss Darnford, know any thing from me. Mrs. Fervis, from whom I seldom hide any thing, as she is on the Spot with me, hears not my Complainings, nor my Uneasiness; for I would not lessen the dear Man. He may yet see the Error of the Way he is in. God grant it, for his own sake, as well as mine!—I am even forry your Ladyship is afflicted with the Knowledge of the Matter.

The poor unhappy Lady, God forgive her! is to be pity'd: She loves him, and having strong Passions, and being unus'd to be controul'd, is lost to a Sense of Honour and Justice; poor, poor Lady!—O these wicked Masquerades! From them springs all my Unhappiness; my Spaniard was too amiable, and met with a Lady who was no Nun, but in Habit. Every one was taken with him in that Habit, so suited

fuited to the natural Dignity of his Person !- Othese

wicked, wicked Maiguerades!

I am all Patience in Appearance, all Uneafiness in Reality. I did not think I could, especially in this Point, this most affecting Point, be such an Hypccrite, It has cost me-Your Ladyship knows not what it has cost me-to be able to assume that Character! Yet my Eyes are swell'd with crying, and look red. altho' I am always breathing on my Hand, and patting them with that, and my warm Breath, to hide the Distress that will, from my over-charged Heart, appear in them.

1

1

h

1 b

tl h

h th

to

he at

P

in at

ad

A

m N

M

Wa

Then he fays, What's the matter with the little Fool! You are always in this Way of late! What

ails you, Pamela?

Only a little vapourish, Sir!—Nasty Vapours! Don't be angry at me!—Then, Billy, I thought, was not very well!

This Boy will spoil your Temper: At this Rate, what should be your Joy, will become your Misfortune. Don't receive me in this manner, I charge you.

In what manner, Sir? I always receive you with a grateful Heart! If any thing troubles me, it is in your Absence: But see, Sir, (then I try to smile and feem pleased) I am all Sunshine now you are come! -don't you see I am?

Yes, your Sunshine of late is all through a Cloud! -I know not what's the matter with you. Your

Temper will alter, and then-

It shan't alter, Sir-It shan't-if I can help it.-And then I kiss'd his Hand; that dear Hand, that, perhaps, was last about his more beloved Countels's

Neck—Distracting Reflection!

But come, may-be I think the worst !- To be fure I do!—For my Apprehensions were ever aforehand with Events, and bad must be the Case, if it is worse than I think it. But it will ripen of itself; it is a corroding Evil: It will increase to its Crisis, and then it may dissipate happily, or end in Death!

All that grieves me, (for I have had the Happiness of a whole Life crowded thick upon me in a few past Months, and so ought to be grateful for the Good I have reaped) is for his own dear sake, for his Soul's sake.—But, come, he is a young Gentleman, and may see his Error:—This may be a Trial to him, as well as to me. And if he should conquer it, what a charming Thing would that be!

You command me to let you know what I have heard, and how I came to hear it. I told your Ladyship, in one of my former *, that two Gentlemen, brought up to the Law, but above the Practice of it, though I doubt, not above Practices less honourable, had visited us, on coming to Town.

They have been often here fince, Mr. Turner particularly; and fometimes by himself, when Mr. B. has happened to be out; and he it was, as I guess'd, that gave me, at the wicked Masquerade, the Advice

to look after my Musidorus +.

hele

ness

this

rite,

at it

ter!

red,

pat-

hide eart,

ittle

hat

irs!

ght,

ate.

for-

ou.

th a

3 In

and

ne!

ud!

our

t.-

hat,

ess's

be

f it

elf;

I did not like their Visits, and his much less: For he seem'd to me a Man of an intriguing Spirit. But about three Weeks ago, Mr. B. setting out upon a Party of Pleasure to Oxford, he came, and pretending great Business with me, and I happening to be at Breassfast in the Parlour, only Polly attending me, admitted him to drink a Dish of Chocolate with me. And when Polly had stept out, he told me, after many Apologies, that he had discovered who the Nun was at the Masquerade, that had engaged Mr. B.

I faid it was very indifferent to me, who the Lady was.

He

^{*} Se this Vol. p. 6.

⁺ Ibid. p. 89.

He reply'd, (making still more Apologies, and pretending great Reluctance to speak out) That it was no less a Lady than the young Countess Dowager of —, a Lady noted for her Wit and her Beauty; but of a gay Disposition, though he believed not yet culpable.

I was alarm'd; but would not let him fee it; and he ran into the Topick of the Injustice of marry'd men who had virtuous Wives, and gave themselves

up to Intrigues of this kind.

I remember'd some of Mr. B.'s Lessons formerly, of which I once gave your Ladyship a Transcript*, particularly, that of drawing a kind of Veil over his Faults, and extenuating those I could not hide; and, still more particularly, that Caution, that if ever Rakes attempted a marry'd Woman, their Encouragement proceeded from the Slights and Contempts with which they endeavour'd to possess her against her Husband; and I told Mr. Turner, that I was so well satisfied in Mr. B.'s Affection for me and his well-known Honour, that I could not think myself obliged to any Gentleman who should endeavour to give me a less Opinion of either, than I ought to have.

0

tl

F

W

q

В

m

N

in

UF

81

W

bo

He then bluntly told me, that the very Party Mr. B. was upon, was with the Countess for one, and the Lord ——, who had marry'd her Sister.

I faid, I was glad he was in fuch good Company,

and wished him all manner of Pleasure in it.

He hoped, he said, he might trust to my Discretion, that I would not let Mr. B. know from whom I had the Information: That, indeed, his Motive in mentioning it to me, was Self-interest; for that he had presum'd to make some Overtures of an honourable Nature to the Countess, in his own Behalf; which had been rejected since that Masquerade Night:

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 318.

At

Night: And that he hoped the prudent Use I would make of the Intimation, might, some-how, be a Means to break off that Correspondence, before it was attended with had Consequences

was attended with bad Consequences.

d

It

V -

er

ed.

br

d

es

y,

*,

IS

d,

er

u-

ts

ift

fo

is

elf

to

to

F.

nd

y,

e-

m

ve

at

0-

f;

de

t:

I told him, coldly, though it stung me to the Heart, that I should not interfere in the Matter at all: That I was fully assured of Mr. B.'s Honour; and was forry he, Mr. Turner, had so bad an Opinion of a Lady for whom he professed so high a Consideration. And rising up, Will you excuse me, Sir, that I cannot attend at all to such a Subject as this; and think I

ought not; and fo must withdraw?

Only, Madam, one Word. He offer'd to take my Hand, but I would not permit it—And then he swore a great Oath, that he had told me his true and his only Motive: And that Letters had passed between the Countess and Mr. B.; adding, that one Day I would blame myself, for not endeavouring to stifle a Flame, that might now perhaps be kept under; but which, if it got head, would be of more satal Consequence to my Repose than I at present imagined.—But, said he, I beg you'll keep it within your own Breast; else, from two such hasty Spirits as his and mine, it may possibly be attended with still worse Consequences.

I will never, Sir, enter into a Subject that is not proper to be communicated, every Tittle of it, to Mr. B.; and this must be my Excuse for withdraw-

ing. And away I went from him.

Your Ladyship will judge with how uneasy a Heart; which became more so, when I sat down to reslect upon what he had told me. But I was resolved to give it as little Credit as I could, or that any thing would come of it, till Mr. B.'s own Behaviour should convince me, to my Affliction, that I had some Reason to be alarmed: So I open'd not my Lips about it, not even to Mrs. Fervis.

140 PAMELA; Or,

At Mr. B.'s Return, I received him in my usual affectionate and unreserved Manner: and he behaved himself to me with his accustomed Goodness and Kindness; or, at least, with so little Difference, that had not Mr. Turner's Officiousness made me more

watchful, I should not have perceiv'd it.

But next Day a Letter was brought by a Footman for Mr. B. He was out: So John gave it to me. The Superscription was a Lady's Writing: The Seal, the Dowager Lady's, with a Coronet. This gave me great Uneasiness: And when Mr. B. came in, I said, Here is a Letter for you, Sir; and from a Lady too!

What then ?- faid he with Quickness.

I was baulk'd, and withdrew. For I saw him turn the Seal about and about, as if he would see whether I had endeavoured to look into it.

He needed not to have been so afraid; for I would not have done such a Thing, had I known my Life

was to depend upon it.

I went up, and could not help weeping at his quick Answer; yet I did my Endeavour to hide it, when he came up.

Was not my Girl a little inquisitive upon me just

now?

I spoke pleasantly, Sir—But you were very quick on your Girl.

'Tis my Temper, my Dear-You know I mean

nothing. You should not mind it.

I should not, Sir, if I had been used to it.

He look'd at me with Sternness-Do you doubt

my Honour, Madam?

Madam! did you say, Sir!——I won't take that Word!—Dear Sir, call it back—I won't be call'd Madam!—Call me your Girl, your Rustick, your Pamela,—Call me any thing but Madam!

My Charmer, then, my Life, my Soul; will any of those do? and saluted me: But whatever you do,

let

(

1

t

n

1

fe

n

te

re

h

ar

TE

fh

Je

m

let me not see that you have any Doubts of my Ho-

nour to you.

ual

ved

nd hat

ore

ot-

g:

net.

B.

and

urn

her

uld

ife

his

it,

uft

iick

can

ubt

hat

ll'd

our

any

do,

The very mention of the Word, dear Sir, is a Security to me; I want no other; I cannot doubt: But if you speak short to me, how shall I bear that? He withdrew, speaking nothing of the Contents of his Letter; as I dare say he would, had the Subject been such as he chose to mention to me.

We being alone, after Supper, I took the Liberty to ask him, Who was of his Party to Oxford? He named the Viscountess—— and her Lord, Mr. Howard and his Daughter, Mr. Herbert and his Lady: And I had a Partner too, my Dear, to represent you.

I am much obliged to the Lady, Sir, be she who

the would.

Why, my Dear, you are so engaged in your Nursery! Then this was a sudden Thing; as, you know I told you.

Nay, Sir, as long as it was agreeable to you, I had

nothing to do, but to be pleased with it.

He watched my Eyes, and the Turn of my Countenance—You look, Pamela, as if you'd be glad to return the Lady Thanks in Person. Shall I engage her to visit you? She longs to see you.

Sir,-Sir,-hesitated I-as you please-I can't be

-l can't be-displeased-

Displeased?—interrupted he: why that Word? and what that Hesitation in your Answer? You speak very volubly, my Dear, when you're not moved.

Dear Sir, said I, almost as quick as he was, Why should I be moved? What Occasion is there for it? I hope you have a better Opinion of me than—

Than what, Pamela?—What would you fay? I know you're a little jealous Rogue, I know you are.

But, dear Sir, why should you think of imputing Jealousy to me on this Score?—What a Creature must I be, if you could not be abroad with a Lady, but

but I must be jealous of you?-No, Sir, I have Reason to rely upon your Honour; and I dorely upon it; and -

And what? Why, my Dear, you are giving me Assurances, as if you thought the Case required it!

Ah! thought I, fo it does, I fee too plainly, or apprehend I do; but I durft not fay fo, nor give him any Hint about my Informant; though now I was enough confirmed of the Truth of what Mr. Turner had told me.

Yet, I resolved, if possible, not to alter my Conduct. But my frequent Weepings, when by myfelf, could not be hid as I wished; my Eyes not keeping my Heart's Counsel.

And this gives Occasion to some of the stern

Words which I have mention'd above.

All that he further faid at this Time, was, with a negligent, yet a determin'd Air-Well, Pamela, don't be doubtful of my Honour. You know how much I love you. But, one Day or other, I shall gratify this Lady's Curiofity, and will bring her to pay you a Visit, and you shall see you need not be ashamed of her Acquaintance.—Whenever you please, Sir,was all I car'd to fay farther; for I faw he was upon the Catch, and look'd stedfastly upon me whenever I moved my Lips; and I am not a finish'd Hypocrite, and he can read the Lines of one's Face, and the Motions of one's Heart I think.

I am fure mine is a very uneasy one. But 'till I reflected, and weighed well the Matter, it was worse, and my natural Imperfection of this fort made me fee a Necessity to be the more watchful over myself, and to doubt my own Prudence. And thus I rea-

fon'd when he withdrew:

Here, thought I, I have had a greater Proportion of Happiness, without Alloy, fallen to my Share, than any of my Sex; and I ought to be prepared for fome Trials.

'Tis

2

0

16

t

hi

te

th

ha

T

C

m

th

tu

gir

ve

on

ne

1

10

im

ras

ner

n-

elf,

ng

ern

ha

n't

uch

tify

ua

of

,-

pon

er l

ite,

the

ill I

orie,

me

self,

rea-

tion

d for

'Tis

'Tis true, this is of the forest Kind; 'tis worse than Death itself to me, who had an Opinion of the dear Man's Reformation, and prided myself not a little on that Account. So that the Blow is full upon my fore Place. 'Tis on the Side I could be the most easily penetrated. But Achilles could be touched only in his Heel; and if he was to die by an Enemy's Hands, must not the Arrow find out that only vulnerable Place—My Jealousy is that Place with me, as your Ladyship observes*; but it is seated deeper than the Heel: It is in my Heart. The barbed Dart has found that out, and there it sticks up to the very Feathers.

Yet, thought I, I will take care, that I do not exasperate him by Upbraidings, when I should try to move him by Patience and Forbearance. For the Breach of his Duty cannot warrant the Neglect of mine. My Business is to reclaim, and not to provoke. And when, if it please God, this Storm shall be over-blown, let me not, by my present Behaviour, leave any Room for Heart-burnings; but, like a skilful Surgeon, so heal the Wound to the Bottom, tho' the Operation be painful, that it may not sester and break out again with fresh Violence, on surge Misunderstandings, if any shall happen.

He is a young Gentleman, has been used to have his own Will, thought I. This may be a permitted Stumbling-block in his Way, to make him stand the firmer, when recovered. The Lady may be unhappy that she cannot conquer her faulty Love. They may both see their Error, and stop short of Crime. If not, he is a Man of sine Sense; he may run an undue Length, but may reclaim; and then I shall be his Superior, by my preserved Virtue and Duty, and have it in my power to forgive him, and so repay him some of those Obli-

^{*} See this Vol. p. 134.

gations which I shall never otherwise have it in my Power to repay; -nor indeed wish to have it, in this

way, if it please God to prevent it.

Then, thought I, how much better is it to be the Suffering than the offending Person? -- But yet, Madam. to have fo fine a Gentleman, who had advanced fo far up the Hill of Virtue, to flide back all at once; and (between your Ladyship and me) to have him sink down to the Character he had despised; and, at last, if his Life should be spared (as is my hourly prayer), to have him carry his Vices into advanced Years, and become fuch a poor Man, as we fee Sir Simon Darnford, retaining a Love of his juvenile Follies, even after the Practice has left him; how my Heart

shudders at such a Thought for my Mr. B.!

Well, but, thought I, let the worst come to the worst, he perhaps may be so good as to permit me to pass the Remainder of my Days with my dear Billy, in Kent, with my Father and Mother; and fo, when I cannot rejoice in Possession of a virtuous Husband, I shall be employed in praying for him, and enjoy a two-fold Happiness, that of doing my own Duty to my dear Baby—and a pleasing Entertainment that will be ! - and that of comforting my worthy Parents, and being comforted by them;and no small Consolation this !—And who knows, but I may be permitted to fleal a Visit now-and-then to dear Lady Davers, and he called Sifter, and be deem'd a faultless Sister too!—and that will be a fine thing. But remember, my dear Lady, that if ever it come to this, I will not bear, that for my fake, you shall, with too much Asperity, blame your Brother; for I will be ingenious to find Excuses or Extenuations for him; and I will now-and-then in some disguised Habit, steal the Pleasure of seeing him, and his happier Counters; and give him, with a filent

]

(

ł

n

to

m b

101

T

fo

a filent Tear, my Bleffing for the Good I and mine

have reaped at his Hands.

ny

1.5

he

m,

far nd

ink

r),

ars,

non

ies,

eart

the

lear

and

ous

im,

my

ter-

my.

;-

ws,

hen

be

be a

it if

my

vour

ules

then eing

with

But, oh! if he takes from me my Billy, who must, after all be his Heir, and gives him to the cruel Counters, he will at once burst as funder the Strings of my Heart! For, oh my happy Rivaless! if you tear from me my Husband, he is in his own Disposal, and I cannot help it:—Nor can I indeed, if he will give you my Billy. But this I am sure of, that my Child and my Life must go together!

Your Ladyship will think I rave. Indeed I am almost crazed at times. For the dear Man is so negligent, so cold, so haughty, that I cannot bear it. He says, just now, You are quite alter'd, Pamela. I believe I am, Madam. But what can I do? He knows not that I know so much. I dare not tell him. For he will have me then reveal my Intelligencer: And what may be the Case between them?

I weep in the Night, when he is affeep; and in the Day, when he is abfent: And I am happy when I can, unobserved, steal this poor Relief. I believe already I have shed as many Tears as would drown my Baby. How many more I may have to shed, God only knows!—For, O Madam, after all my fortitude, and my Recollection, to fall from so much Happiness, and so soon, is a trying Thing!

But I will still hope the best, and resign to God's Will, and his, and see how far he will be permitted to exercise me. So don't, my good Lady, be overmuch concerned for me—For you know I am apt to be too apprehensive. And should this Matter blow over, I shall be assumed of my Weakness, and the Trouble I must give to your generous Heart, for one so undeservedly favour'd by you, as is

Your obliged Sister, and most humble Servant, P. B.

146 PAMELA; Or,

Dear Madam, let no Soul fee any Part of this out present Correspondence, for your Brother's sake, and your sake, and my sake.

LETTER XXVIII.

My dearest PAMELA,

What passes between us on this cutting Subject. Tho' I hear of it from every Mouth, yet I pretend 'tis all Falsehood and Malice. Yet Lady Betty will have it, that there is more in it than I will own; and that I know my Brother's Wickedness by my pensive Looks. She will make a Vow, she says, never to marry any Man living.

I am greatly moved by your affecting Periods. Charming Pamela! what a Tempest do you raise in one's Mind, when you please, and lay it too, at your own Will! Your Colourings are strong; but, I hope, your Imagination carries you much farther

than it is possible he should go.

I am pleased with your prudent Reasonings, and your wise Resolutions. I see nobody can advise or help you. God only can! And his Direction you beg so hourly, that I make no doubt you will have it

What vexes me is, that when the noble Uncle of this vile Lady—(why don't you call her so as well as I?)—expostulated with her on the Scandals she brought upon her Character and Family, she pretended to argue, foolish Creature! for Polygamy; and said, she had rather be a certain Gentleman's second Wise, than the first to the greatest Man in England.

I leave you to your own Workings; but if I find your Prudence unrewarded by the Wretch, the Storm

you

1

H

ac

ev

th

W

M

you saw raised at the Hall, shall be nothing to the Hurricane I will excite, to tear up by the Roots all the Happiness the two Wretches propose to themselves.

Don't let my Intelligence, which is undoubted, grieve you over-much. Try some way to move the Wretch. What must be done, must be by touching his Generosity: He has that in some Persection. But how in this Case to move it, is beyond my Power or Skill to prescribe.

God bless you, my dearest Pamela! You shall be my only Sister. And I will never own my Brother, if he be so base to your superlative Merit. Adieu once more,

From your Sifter and Friend,

B. DAVERS.

LETTER XXIX.

My dearest Lady,

uf

ng

ect.

end

vill

m;

my ays,

ods.

t, I

ther

and

le or

have

ncle

well

s the

pre-

my;

Man

find

Storm

you

A Thousand Thanks for your kind, your truly Sisterly Letter and Advice. Mr. B. is just returned from a Tour to Portsmouth, with the Counters, I believe, but am not sure.

Here I am forced to leave off.

Let me scratch thro' this last Surmise. It seems, she was not with him. This is some Comfort, however.

He is very kind; and Billy not being well when he came in, my Grief passed off without Blame. He has said a great many tender things to me: But added, that if I gave myself so much Uneasiness every Time the Child ailed any thing, he would hire the Nurse to over-lay him. Bless me, Madam! what hard-hearted, what shocking things are these Men capable of saying! — The farthest from their H 2

In the Morning he went out in the Chariot for about an Hour, and return'd in a good Humour, faying twenty agreeable things to me, which makes me so proud, and so pleas'd!

He is gone out again.

Could I but find this Matter happily conquered, for his own Soul's Sake! — But he feems, by what your Ladyship mentions, to have carry'd this Poly.

gamy Point with the Lady.

Can I live with him, Madam,—Ought I—if this be the Case? I have it under his Hand, that the Laws of his Country were sufficient to deter him from this Practice. But alas! he knew not this Countess then!

But here I must break off.

He is returned, and coming up. Go into my Bosom for the present, O Letter dedicated to dear Lady Davers—Come to my Hand, the Play Employment, so unsuited to my present afficted Mind!—Here he comes!

O Madam, Madam! my Heart is almost broken!

— Just now Mr. B. tells me, that the Countess
Dowager, and the Viscountess her Sister, are to be
here to see my Billy, and to drink Tea with me,
this very Afternoon!

I was all Confusion when he told me this. I looked around and around, and upon every thing but

him.

Will not my Friends be welcome, Pamela? faid

he, flernly.

O yes, very welcome! —— But I have these wretched Vapours so, that I wish I might be excus'd —I wish I might be allowed to take an Airing in the Chariot for two or three Hours; for I shall not

be fit to be feen by fuch—Ladies—faid I, half out of Breath.

You'll be fit to be feen by nobody, my Dear, if

you go on thus.—But, do as you please.

He was going, and I took his Hand: Stay, dear Sir, let me know what you would have me do. If you would have me stay, I will.

To be fure I would.

23

or

i,

CS

d,

at

y.

nis

he

im

his

עומ

ear

m-

nd!

en!

tels be

me,

I

but

faid

hele

us'd

g in

not

be

Well, Sir, then I will. For it is hard, thought I, if an innocent Person cannot look up, in her own House too, as it is at present, as I may say, to a guilty one!—Guilty in her Heart, at least!—Tho', poor Lady, I hope she is not so in Fact; and, if God hears my Prayers, never will, for all three of our sakes.

But, Madam, think for me, what a Task I have! How my Hearts throbs in my Bosom! How I tremble! How I struggle with myself! What Rules I form for my Behaviour to this naughty Lady! How they are dashed in Pieces as soon as formed, and new ones taken up! And yet I doubt myself when I come to the Test.

But one thing will help me. I pity the poor Lady; and as she comes with the Heart of a Robber, to invade me in my lawful Right, I pride myself in a Superiority over this Countess; and will endeavour to shew her the Country Girl in a Light which would better become her to appear in.

I must be forced to leave off here; for Mr. B. is just come in to receive his Guests; and I am in a sad Tlutter upon it. All my Resolution sails me: What shall I do!—O that this Countess was come, and gone!—I tremble so, that I shall behave like a Guilty one before the Guilty, who will enjoy their Minds, I'll warrant, as if they were innocent!—Why should that be?—But, surely, if all was bad, as this Turner has said, they could not act thus barbarously

150 P A M E L A; Or,

barously by me! For I have not deserved to be given up to be insulted! I hope I have not! — for what have I done?

I have one Comfort, however, in the midst of all my Griefs; and that is in your Ladyship's Goodness, which gives me Leave to assume the honoured Title, that, let what will happen, will always give me equal Pride and Pleasure, in subscribing myself

Your Ladyship's obliged Sister, and humble Scrvant,

P. B.

LETTER XXX.

My dear Lady,

I WILL now pursue my last affecting Subject; for the Visit is over; but a sad Situation I am in with Mr. B. for all that: But, bad as it is, I'll

try to forget it, till I come to it in course.

At four in the Afternoon Mr. B. came in to receive his Guests, whom he expected at five. He came up to me. I had just closed my last Letter; but put it up, and set before me your Ladyship's Play Subjects.

So, Pamela! - How do you do now?

Your Ladyship may guess, by what I wrote before, that I could not give any extraordinary Account of myself—As well—As well, Sir, as possible.—— Half out of Breath.

You give yourself strange melancholy Airs of late, my Dear,—You don't do well.—All that Cheerfulness which used to delight me whenever I saw you, I'm forry for it, is quite vanish'd of late.—You and I must shortly have a little serious Talk together.

When you please, Sir, — I believe it is carly not being us'd to this smoaky thick Air of London!— I shall

shall be better when you carry me into the Country.

—I dare fay I shall.—But I never was in London to long before, you know, Sir.

All in good time, Pamela! — But is this the best Appearance you choose to make, to receive such

Guefts?

en

at

of

d-

ed

ve

elf

B.

t;

m

11

e-

He

r;

e-

nt

e,

]-

u,

d

ot

11

If it displease you, Sir, I will dress otherwise in a Minute.

You look well in any thing.—But I thought you'd have been better drefs'd.—Yet it would never have less become you; for of late your Eyes have lost that Brilliancy that used to strike me with a Lustre, much surpassing that of the finest Diamonds.

I am forry for it, Sir.—But as I never could pride myself in deserving such a kind Compliment, I should be too happy, forgive me, my dearest Mr. B. if the Failure be not rather in your Eyes than in

mine.

He looked at me steadfastly.—I fear, Pamela—But don't be a Fool.

You are angry with me, Sir!

No, not I.

Would you have me dress better?

No, not I. If your Eyes looked a little more brilliant, you want no Addition.

Down he went.

Strange, short Speeches, these, my Lady, to what you have heard from his dear Mouth! — Yet they shall not rob me of the Merit of a patient Sufferer, I am resolved, thought I.

Now, my Lady, as I doubted not my Rival would come adorned with every outward Ornament, I put on only a white Damask Gown, having no Defire to vie with her in Appearance; for a virtuous and honest Heart is my Glory, I bless God! I wish the

Counters had the same to boast of!

About five, their Ladyships came in the Counters's new Charlet a for shakes not been large out of

tes's new Chariot; for she has not been long out of

her transitory Mourning, and dress'd as rich as Jewels, and a Profusion of Expence, could make her.

I faw them from the Window alight. O how my Heart throbbed !- Lie still, said I, busy thing ! Why all this Emotion ?- Those shining Ornaments cover not fuch a guileless Flutterer as thou. Why then, all this Emotion?

Polly Barlow came up instantly from Mr. B.

I hastened down; tremble, tremble, tremble, went my Feet, in spite of all the Resolution I had been endeavouring fo long to collect together.

Mr. B. presented the Countess to me, both of us cover'd with Blushes; but from very different Mo-

tives, as I imagine.

The Countess of _____, my Dear.

She faluted me, and looked, as I thought, half with Envy, half with Shame: But one is apt to form Peoples Countenances by what one judges of their Hearts.

O too lovely, too charming Rival; thought I-Would to Heaven I saw less Attraction in you! -For indeed, indeed, Madam, the is a charming Lady! - Yet she could not help calling me Mrs. B. that was some pride to me: Every little Distinction is a Pride to me now—And faid, she hoped I would excuse the Liberty she had taken: But the Character given of me by Mr. B. made her defirous of paying her Respects to me.

O these villainous Masquerades, thought I!-You would never have wanted to see me, but for

them, poor naughty Nun, that was !

Mr. B. presented also the Viscountess to me: I faluted her Ladyship; her Sister saluted me.

She is a graceful Lady; better as I hope, in Heart,

but not equal in Person to her Sister.

You have a charming Boy, I am told, Madam;

but no wonder from fuch a Pair!

O dear Heart, thought I, i'n't it so!—Your Lady-Will ship may guess what I thought farther.

Will your Ladyship see him now? said Mr. B. He did not look down, no, not one Bit !—though the Countess play'd with her Fan and look'd at him, and looked at me, and then looked down by Turns, a little consciously: While I wrapt up myself in my Innocence, my first Flutters being over, and thought I was superior, by reason of that, even to a Countess.

With all her Heart, she said.

Polly, bid Nurse bring my Billy down-

My, faid I with an Emphasis.

els,

my

hy

ver

all

ent

en

us

0-

alf

m

eir

y!

at

a

K-

er

g

or

I

,

;

I met the Nurse at the Stairs Foot, and brought in my dear Baby in my Arms: Such a Child, and fuch a Mamma, faid the Viscountess!

Will you give Mafter to my Arms, one Moment,

Madam? faid the Countels.

Yes, thought I, much rather than my dear naughty

Gentleman should any other.

I yielded it to her: I thought she would have stiffed it with her warm Kiffes. Sweet Boy! Charming Creature! and pressed it to her too lovely Bosom, with fuch Emotion, looking on the Child, and on Mr. B. that I liked it not by any means.

Go, you naughty Lady! thought I:—But I durst And go, naughty man, too! though I; not fay fo. for you feem to look too much gratify'd in your Pride, by her Fondness for your Boy. I wish I did not love you so well as I do! — But neither, your

Ladyship may believe, did I say this.

Mr. B. looked at me, but with a Bravery, A thought, too like what I had been Witness to, in some former Scenes, in as bad a Cause. — But, thought I, God delivered me then: I will confide in him.—He will now, I doubt not, restore thy Heart to my Prayers; untainted, I hope, for thy own dear fake as well as mine.

The Viscountess took the Child from her Sister, and kissed nim with great Pleasure. She is a marry'd Lady's.

H 5

Lady. Would to God, the Countess was so too! for Mr. B. never corresponded, as I told your Ladyship once *, with marry'd Ladies: So I was not afraid of her Love to my Billy .- But let me, said the Viscountefs, have the Pleasure of restoring Master to his charming Mamma. I thought, added she, I never faw a lovelier Sight in my Life, than when in his Mamma's Arms.

Why, I can't fay, faid the Countess, but Master and his Mamma do Credit to one another. Dear Madam, let us have the Pleasure of seeing him still

on your Lap, while he is so good.

I wonder'd the dear Baby was so quiet; tho', indeed, he is generally so: But he might furely, if but by Sympathy, having complained for his poor

Mamma, though she durst not for herself.

How apt one is to engage every thing in one's Distress, when it is deep! And one wonders too, that things animate and inanimate look with the fame Face, when we are greatly moved by any

extraordinary and interesting Event!

I fat down with my Baby on my Lap, looking, I believe with a righteous Boldness (I will call it so; for well fays the Text, The Righteous is as bold as a Lion!) now on my Billy, now on his Papa, and now on the Counters, with fuch a Triumph in my Heart! for I faw her blush, and look down, and the dear Gentleman feemed to eye me with a kind of conscious Tenderness, as I thought.

A Silence of five Minutes, I believe, fucceeded, we all four looking upon one another; and the little Dear was awake, and stared full upon me, with such innocent Smiles, as if he promifed to love me, and

make me Amends for all.

I kiffed

^{*} See her Journal of Saturday Morning, Letter xxxii. Vol. III.

I kissed him, and took his pretty little Hand in mine — You are very good, my Charmer, in this

Company! faid I.

I remember'd, Madam, a Scene, which made greatly for me in the Papers you have feen *, when instead of recriminating, as I might have done, before Mr. Longman, for harsh Usage, (for O my Lady, your dear Brother has a hard Heart, indeed he has, when he pleases) I only prayed for him on

my Knees.

for

np

of

n-

his

/er

118

er

ar

ill

nif

or

's

0,

ne

y

I

;

a

d

y. d

d

1,

e

h

1

.

And I hope I was not now too mean; for I had Dignity and a proud Superiority in my vain Heart, over them all—Then, it was not my Part to be upon Defiances, where I loved, and where I hoped to reclaim. Befides, what had I done by that, but justified, seemingly, by After-acts in a passionate Resentment, to their Minds, at least, their too wicked Treatment of me? Moreover, your Ladyship will remember, that Mr. B. knew not that I was acquainted with his Intrigue; for I must call it so.—if he had, he is too noble to insult me by such a Visit; and he had told me, I should see the Lady he was at Oxford with.

And this, breaking Silence, he mention'd; faying, I gave you Hope, my Dear, that I should procure you the Honour of a Visit from a Lady who

put herself under my Care at Oxford.

I bow'd my head to the Countes; but my Tears being ready to start, I kissed my Billy: Dearest Baby; said I, you are not going to cry, are you?— I would have had him just then to cry, instead of me.

The Tea Equipage was brought in. Polly, carry the Child to Nurse. I gave it another Kiss, and the Countess desired another. I grudged it, to think her naughty Lips should so closely follow mine. Her H 6

* See Vol. I. p. 90.

Sifter kiffed it also, and carry'd him to Mr. B. Take him away, Polly, said he: I owe him my Blessing.

O these young Gentlemen Papa's! said the Countess—They are like young unbroken Horses, just put into the Traces!—Are they so, thought I?—Matrimony must not expect your good Word, I doubt.

Mr. B. after Tea, at which I was far from being talkative, (for I could not tell what to fay, though I try'd, as much as I could, not to appear fullen) desir'd the Countess to play one Tune upon the Harpsichord. She did, and sung, at his Request, an Italian Song to it very prettily; too prettily, I thought. I wanted to find some Faults, some great Faults in her: But O Madam! she has too many outward Excellencies? Pity she wants a good Heart.

He could ask nothing, that she was not ready to

oblige him in! Indeed he could not.

She defired me to touch the Keys. I would have been excus'd: but could not. And the Ladies commended my Performance: But neither my Heart to play, nor my Fingers in playing, deferved their Praises. Mr. B. faid indeed, you play better sometimes, my Dear.—Do I, Sir? was all the Answer I made.

The Countess hoped, she said, I would return

her Visit, and so said the Viscountess.

I reply'd, Mr. B. would command me whenever

he pleased.

She faid, she hoped to be better acquainted — (I hope not, thought I) and that I would give her my Company for a Week or so, upon the Forest: It seems she has a Seat upon Windsor Forest.

Mr. B. fays, added she, you can't ride a single Horse; but we'll teach you there. 'Tis a sweet

Place for that Purpose.

How came Mr. B. thought I, to tell you that, Madam? I suppose you know more of me than I do myself. Indeed, my Lady, this may be too true; for she may know what is to become of me!

I told

I told her, I was very much obliged to her Ladyship; and that Mr. B. directed all my Motions.

What fay you, Sir? faid the Countefs...

3

ı-

1-

g

n n

ne

t,

I

at

y t.

0

re

1-

s.

n

er .

I

It

et

,

0

;

d

I can't promise that, Madam; for Mrs. B. wants to go down to Kent, before we go to Bedfordshire, and I am asraid I can't give her my Company thither.

Then, Sir, I shan't choose to go without you.

I suppose not, my Dear. But, if you are disposed to oblige the Countess for a Week, as you never were at Windsor—

I believe, Sir, interrupted I, what with my little Nursery, and one thing or another, I must deny my-

felf that Honour, for this Season.

Well, Madam, then I'll expect you in Pall-mall. I bowed my Head, and faid, Mr. B. would command me.

They took Leave with a Politeness natural to

Mr. B. as he handed them to the Chariot, faid fomething in *Italian* to the Countefs: The Word *Pamela* was in what he faid: She answer'd him, with a downcast Look, in the same Language, half pleas'd half ferious, and the Chariot drove away.

I would give, faid I, a good deal, Sir, to know what her Ladyship faid to you; she look'd with so

particular a Meaning, if I may fo fay.

I'll tell you, truly, Pamela: I faid to her, Well, now your Ladyship has seen my Pamela—Is she not the charming'st Girl in the World?

She answer'd, Mrs. B. is very grave, for so young a Lady: But I must needs say, she is a lovely Creature.

And did you fay fo, Sir? And did her Ladyship fo answer?—And my Heart was ready to leap out of my Bosom for Joy.

But my Folly spoil'd all again; for, to my own Surprise, and great Regret, I burst out into Tears;

tho'

tho' I even fobb'd to have suppress'd them, but could not; and so I lost a fine Opportunity to have talked to him while he was so kind: For he was more angry with me than ever.

What made me such a Fool, I wonder! But I had so long struggled with myself; and not expecting so kind a Question from the dear Gentleman, or such a savourable Answer from the Countess, I had no longer any Command of myself.

What ails the little Fool? faid he with a wrathful Countenance. This made me worse, and he added, Take care, take care, Pamela!—You'll drive me

from you in spite of my own Heart.

So he went into the best Parlour, and put on his Sword, and took his Hat.—I follow'd him, Sir, Sir! with my Arms expanded, was all I could say; but he avoided me, putting on his Hat with an Air; and out he went, bidding Abraham sollow him.

This is the Dilemma, into which, as I hinted at the Beginning of this Letter, I have brought myself with Mr. B. How strong, how prevalent, is the Passion of Jealousy, and thus it will shew itself uppermost, when it is uppermost, in spite of one's most

watchful Regards!

My Mind is so perplex'd, that I must lay down my Pen: And, indeed, your Ladyship will wonder, all Things consider'd, that I could write the above Account as I have done, in this cruel Suspense, and with such Apprehensions. But Writing is all the Diversion I have, when my Mind is oppressed. 'Tis a temporary Relief; and this Interview was so interesting, that it took up a great deal of my Attention while I wrote: But now I am come to a Period of it, (and so unhappy an one as has resulted from my ungovern'd Passion) my Apprehensions are return'd upon me with double Strength. Why did I drive the dear Gentleman from me upon such a promising Appearance?—Why did I—But all this had been pre-

prevented, had not this nasty Mr. Turner put into my Head worse Thoughts. For now I can say with the Poet:

Since Knowledge is but Sorrow's Spy, 'Twere better NOT to know.

How shall I do to look up to him now on his Return! To be sure, he plainly sees to what my Emotion is owing!—Yet I dare not tell him either my Information, or my Informant, because if he knows the one, he will know the other; and then what may be the Consequence!—

Past Ten o'Clock at Night.

I have only Time to tell your Ladyship, (for the Postman waits) that Mr. B. is just come in. He is gone into his Closet, and has shut the Door, and taken the Key on the Inside; so I dare not go to him there. In this Uncertainty and Suspense, pity and pray for

Your Ladyship's afflicted Sister and Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XXXI.

My dear Lady,

ild ed

ry

ad

fo a

no

ful

d,

ne

his

r!

nd

at

elf

af-

eroft

vn er,

nd)i-

sa

ft-

on

it,

nı'd

ve

ng en reWill now proceed with my melancholy Account. Not knowing what to do, and Mr. B. not coming near me, and the Clock striking Twelve, I ventur'd to send this Billet to him, by Polly.

Dear Sir,

Know you choose not to be invaded, when you retire into your Closet; and yet, being very un-

easy, on account of your abrupt Departure, and heavy Displeasure, I take the Liberty to write

these few Lines.
I own, Sir, that the sudden Flow of Tears which

involuntarily burst from me, at your kind Expresfions to the Countess in my Favour, when I had

thought for more than a Month past, you were an-

gry with me, and which had diffres'd my weak Mind beyond Expression, might appear unaccount-

· able to you. But had you kindly waited but one · Moment, till this Fit, which was rather owing to

my Gratitude, than to Perverseness, had been over,

(and I knew the Time when you would have ge-

• nerously soothed it!) I should have had the Happi-• ness of a more serene and savourable Parting.

· Will you suffer me, Sir, to attend you? (Polly fhall wait your Answer) I dare not come without

your Permission; for should you be as angry as you

• were, I know not how I shall bear it. But if you fay I may come down, I hope to satisfy you, that

· lay I may come down, I hope to latisfy you, that · l intended not any Offence. Do, dear Sir, permit

· me to attend you. I can fay no more, than that

· I am

Your ever-dutiful,

P. B.

t

(

ł

b

Polly return'd with the following.—So, thought I, a Letter !—I could have spared that, I am sure.

I expected no Favour from it. So, tremblingly, open'd it.

My Dear,

Would not have you fit up for me. We are getting apace into the matrimonial Recrimina-

tions. You knew the Time!—So did I, my Dear!

But it feems that Time is over with both; and I

have had the Mortification, for some past Weeks;

to come home to a very different Pamela, than I used to leave all Company and all Pleasure for.—I hope we shall better understand one another. But vou cannot see me at present with any Advantage to yourself; and I would not, that any Thing farther should pass, to add to the Regrets of both. ' wish you good Rest. I will give your Cause a fair Hearing, when I am more fit, than at prefent, to hear all your Pleas, and your Excuses. I cannot be infenfible, that the Reason for the Concern you have lately shewn, must lie deeper than, perhaps, 'you'll own, at prefent. As foon as you are prepared to speak all that is upon your Mind, and I to hear it with Temper, then we may come to an 'Till when I am ' Eclaircissement. Your affectionate, &c.'

My bufy Apprehension immediately suggested to me, that I was to be terrified, with a high Hand, into a Compliance with some new Scheme or other that was projecting. But I had resolved to make their Way as clear to one another as was in my Power, if they would have it so; and so I try'd to allay my Grief as much as I could; and it being near One, and hearing nothing from Mr. B. I bid Polly go to Bed, thinking she would wonder at our Intercourse by Letter, if I should send again.

So down I ventur'd, my Feet, however, trembling all the Way, and tapp'd at the Door of his Closet.

Who's that?

nd

te-

ch

-1:

ad

nak

t-

ne

to

er,

e-

)i-

lly

ou

uou

iat

nit

nat

Ι,

ly,

ire

12-

r!

1 I

KS,

to

I, Sir: One Word, if you please. Don't be more

angry, however, Sir.

He open'd the Door: Thus poor Hester, to her Royal Husband, ventur'd her Life, to break in upon him unbidden. But that Eastern Monarch, great as he was, extended to the fainting Suppliant the golden Sceptre!

He

He took my Hand: I hope, my Dear, by this Tragedy Speech, we are not to expect any fad Cataf-

trophe to our present Misunderstanding.

I hope not, Sir. But'tis all as God and You shall I am refolv'd to do my Duty, Sir, if possible. But, indeed, I cannot bear this cruel Suspense! Let me know what is to become of me, - Let me know but what is defigned for me, and you shall be sure of all the Acquiescence that my Duty and Conscience can give to your Pleasure.

What means the dear Creature! What means my Pamela! - Surely, your Head, Child, is a little af-

fected!

I can't tell, Sir, but it may!—But let me have my Trial, that you write about. Appoint my Day of Hearing, and speedily too; for I would not bear such another Month, as the last has been, for the World.

Come, my Dear, faid he, let me attend you to your Chamber. But your Mind has taken much too folemn a Turn, to enter further now upon this Sub-Think as well of me as I do of you, and I shall be as happy as ever.

I wept—Be not angry, dear Sir: Your kind Words have just the same Effect upon me now, as in the

Afternoon.

Your Apprehensions, my Dear, must be very strong, that a kind Word, as you call it, has such an Effect upon you! But let us wave the Subject for a few Days, because I am to set out on a little Journey at Four, and had not intended to go to Bed for fo few Hours.

When we came up, I said, I was very bold, Sir, to break in upon you; but I could not help it, if my Life had been the Forfeit: And you receiv'd me with more Goodness than I could have expected. But will you pardon me, if I ask, whither you go so foon? And if you had intended to have gone without taking Leave of me?

I go

I

t

t

I

V

(

r

I

t

I go to Tunbridge, my Dear. I should have stept up, and taken Leave of you, before I went.

Well, Sir, I will not ask you, Who is of your Party?—I will not—No, putting my Hand to his Lips—Don't tell me, Sir: It mayn't be proper.

Don't fear, my Dear; I won't tell you: Nor am I certain whether it be proper or not, 'till we are come to a better Understanding.—Only, once more, think as well of me as I do of you.

Would to Heaven, thought I, there was the fame

Reason for the one as for the other !

I intended (for my Heart was full) to enter further into this Subject, so fatal to my Repose: But the dear Gentleman had no sooner laid his Head on the Pillow, but he fell asleep, or seigned to do so, and that was as prohibitory to my Talking, as if he had. So I had all my own entertaining Reslections to myself; which gave me not one Wink of Sleep; but made me of so much Service to him, as to tell him, when the Clock struck Four, that he should not (though I did not say so, you may think, Madam) make my ready Rivaless (for I doubted not her being one of the Party) wait for him.

He arose, and was dress'd instantly; and faluting me, bid me be easy and happy, while it was yet in

my own Power.

ra-

taf-

hall

ble.

Let

WO

e of

nce

my

af-

my

of

ich

d.

to

00

b-

I

rds:

he

ry

ch

ct

tle

ed

ir,

y

ne

d.

lo

1,

50

He faid, He should be back on Saturday Night, as he believ'd. And I wish'd him most fervently, I

am fure! Health, Pleafure, and Safety.

Here, Madam, must I end this Letter. My next will, perhaps, contain my Trial, and my Sentence: God give me but Patience and Resignation, and then whatever occurs, I shall not be unhappy: Especially while I can have, in the last Resource, the Pleasure of calling myself

Your Ladyship's most obliged Sister and Servant,

P. B.

LETTER

LETTER XXXII.

My dear Lady,

Will be preparing to write to you, as I have Opportunity, not doubting but this present Letter must be a long one; and having some Apprehensions, that, as things may fall out, I may want either Head or Heart to write to your Ladyship, were I to defer it till the Catastrophe of this cruel, cruel Suspense.

O what a Happiness am I sunk from!—And in so sew Days too!—O the wicked, wicked Masquerades! They shall be always sollowed with the Execrations of an injur'd Wise in me, who, but for that wretched Diversion, had still been the happiest of her Sex!

But I was too fecure! It was fit, perhaps, that I should be humbled and mortified; and I must try to make a Virtue of the cruel Necessity, and see, if, by the Divine Grace, I cannot bring real Good out of this appearing Evil.

The following Letter, in a Woman's Hand, and fign'd, as you'll fee, by a Woman's Name, and spelt as I spell it, will account to your Ladyship for my beginning so heavily. It came by the Penny Post.

Madame,

I Ame unknowne to yowe; but yowe are not so altogathar to mee, becaus I have bene edefy'd by yowre pius Behasior att Church, whir I see yowe with Plaisir everie Sabbaoth Day. I ame welle acquaintid with the Famely of the Coumptesse of—; and yowe maie possiblie have hard what yowe wishid not to have hard concerninge hir. Butt this verie Morninge, I can assure yowe, hir Ladishippe is gon with

with yowre Spowse to Tonbrigge; and theire they are to take Lodginges, or a Hous; and Mr. B. is after to come to Towne, and settel Matters to goe downe to hir, where they are to liue as Man and Wiffe. Make what Use yowe pleas of this Information; and belieue me to have noe other Motife, than to serue yowe, becaus of yowre Vartues, whiche make yowe deserve a better Retorne. I ame, thos I shall not set my trewe Name,

)p-

tter en-

her

e I

uel

in

ue-

xehat

of

t I try

if,

out

nd

elt

ny

fo

by

W3

C-

id

ie

n

th

Wednesday Morninge, Thomasine Fuller. 9 o'Clocke.

Just above I called my State, a State of eruel Suspense! But I recall the Words: For now it is no longer Suspense; since, if this Letter says Truth, I know the worst: And there is too much Appearance that it does, let the Writer be who it will, or his or her Motive what it will; for, after all, I am apt to fancy this a Contrivance of Mr. Turner's; though, for fear of ill Consequences, I will not say so.

And now, Madam, I am endeavouring, by the Help of Religion, and cool Reflection, to bring my Mind to bear this heavy Evil, and to recollect what I was, and how much more honourable an Estate I am in, than I could ever have expected to be in; and that my Virtue and good Name are secured; and I can return innocent to my dear Father and Mother: And these were once the only Pride of my Heart.

Then, additional to what I was, at that Time, (and yet I pleased myself with my Prospects, poor as they were) I have honest Parents bountifully provided for, thank God and your ever dear Brother for this Blessing!—and not only provided for—but made useful to him, to the Amount of their Provision, well nigh! There is a Pride, my Lady!

Then

166 PAMELA; Or,

Then I shall have better Conditions from his Generosity to support myself, than I can wish for, or make use of.

Then I have my dear, charming Billy-O be contented, too charming, and too happy Rivaless, with my Husband; and tear not from me my dearest Baby, the Pledge, the beloved Pledge, of our happier Affections, and the dear Remembrance of what I once was !- But if, my dear Mr. B. you doubt the Education I can give him, fit for the Heir to your great Fortune, (for such he must be, despised or abandon'd as his poor Mother may be!) and will remove him from me, and Grief kill me not before that fad Hour, let me have some Office, not incompatible with that of his Tutor, to instil Virtue into his ductile Mind; for Tutors, although they may make Youth learned, do not always make them virtuous; and let me watch over his Steps, and whereever he goes, let me go: I shall value no Dangers nor Risques; the most distant Climes shall be native to be, wherever my Billy is; fo that I may be a Guard, under God, to his Morals, that he make no Virgin's Heart figh, nor Mother's bleed, as mine has done in both States.

But, how I rave! will your Ladyship be apt to fay—This is no good Symptom, you'll think, that I have reap'd at present that Consolation from religious Considerations, which, to a right Turn of Mind, they will afford in the heaviest Missfortunes. But this was only in fear they should take my Billy from me. A thousand pleasing Prospects, that had begun to dawn on my Mind, I can bear to have dissipated; but I cannot, indeed I cannot! permit my dear Mr. B.'s Son and Heir to be torn from me.

Yet I hope they will not be so cruel; for I will give them no Provocation to do it, if I can help it. No Law-suits, no Complainings; no Asperities

Je-

or

be

els,

rett

ap-

hat

ubt

Our

or

will

fore

om-

nto

nay

vir-

ere-

rers

tive

no has

t to

at l

eli-

of

nes.

Billy

had dif-

niy

will

relp

ities

of Expression, much less bitter Reslections, shall they ever have from me. I will be no Conscience to them: They will be punished too much, greatly too much, in their own, for what I wish; and they shall always be followed by my Prayers. I shall have Leisure for that Exercise, and shall be happy and serene, when, I doubt, I doubt, they will not be so!

But still I am running on in a Strain that shews my Impatience, rather than my Resignation: Yet some Struggles must be allowed me; I could not have loved, as I love, if I could easily part with my Interest in so beloved a Husband—For, Madam, my Interest I will part with, and will sooner die than live with a Gentleman who has another Wise, tho' I was the first.—Let Countesses, if they can, and Ladies of Birth, choose to humble themselves to this Baseness—The low-born Pamela cannot stoop to it. Pardon me, Madam; you know I only write this with a View to this poor Lady's Answer to her noble Uncle, of which you wrote me Word.

FRIDAY

Is now concluding. I hope I am calmer a great deal. For, being disappointed, in all Likelihood, in twenty agreeable Schemes and Projects, I am now forming new ones, with as much Pleasure to myself, as I may. For, my Lady, 'tis one's Duty, you know, to suit one's Mind to one's Condition; and I hope I shall be enabled to do Good in Kent, if I cannot in London, and Bedfordshire, and Lincolnshire. God every where provides us with Objects, on which to exercise one's Gratitude and Beneficence.

I am thinking to try to get good Mrs. Jervis with

Come, Madam, you must not be too much contern'd for me: After a while, I shall be no unhappy Person; Person; for the I was thankful for my splendid Fortunes, and should have been glad, to be sure I should, of continuing in them, with so dear a Gentleman; yet a high Estate had never such dazzling Charms with me as it has with some: If it had, I could not have resisted so many Temptations, possibly, as God enabled me to resist.

SATURDAY Night

Is now come. 'Tis nine, and no Mr. B. — O why, as Deborah makes the Mother of Sifera fay, is his Chariot fo long in coming? Why tarry the Wheels of his Chariot?

I have this Note now at eleven o'Clock:

My dearest PAMELA,

Dispatch this Messenger, lest, expecting me this Night, you should be uneasy. I shall not be with you till Monday, when I hope to dine with

my dearest Life.

Ever affectionately yours.

So I'll go up and pray for him, and then to Bed Yet'tis a fad thing! — I have had but poor Rest for a great while; nor shall have any till my Fate is decided. — Hard-hearted Man, he knows under what Uneasiness he left me!

MONDAY, Eleven.

If God Almighty hears my Yesterday's, and, indeed, my hourly Prayers, the dear Man will be good still: But my aking Heart, every Time I think what Company he is in, (for I find the Countes's certainly one of the Party) bodes me little Satisfaction.

25

N

do

He's come! He's come! now, just now, come! I will have my Trial over before this Night be past, if possible. I'll go down and meet him with Love unfeigned, and a Duty equal to my Love, altho' he may forget his to me. If I conquer myself on this Occasion, I conquer Nature, as your Ladyship fays; and then, by God's Grace, I can conquer every thing. They have taken their House, I suppose:—But what need they, when they'll have one in Bedfordshire, and one in Lincolnshire? But they know best. God bless him, and reform her! That's all the Harm I wish them, or will wish them!

My dear Mr. B. has received me with great Affection and Tenderness. Sure he cannot be so bad!-Sure he cannot!

I know, my Dear, faid he, I left you in great Anxiety; but 'tis an Anxiety you have brought upon yourfelf; and I have not been eafy ever fince I parted from you.

I am forry for it, Sir.

Why, my dear Love, there is still a melancholy Air in your Countenance: Indeed it feems mingled with a kind of Joy; I hope at my Return to you. But, 'tis eafy to fee which of the two is the most natural.

You should see nothing, Sir, that you would not

wish to see, if I could help it.

I am forry you cannot. But I am come home to hear all your Grievances, and to redress them, if in

my Power.

dia

e I

en-

ing

, Ĭ

ffi-

- 0

, 18 the

this

t be

vith

3ed

t for

de-

what

, in-

ll be

hink

ess is

sfac-

He's

When, Sir, am I to come upon my Trial? I have a great deal to fay to you. I will tell you every thing I think. And as it may be the last Grievances. as you are pleased to call them, I may ever trouble you with, you must promise to answer me not one Word till I have faid all I have to fay. For, if it does but hold, I have great Courage; I have in-VOL. IV.

deed! you don't know half the Sauciness that is in your Girl yet; but when I come upon my Trial, you'll wonder at my Boldness.

What means my Dearest? taking me into his Arms. You alarm me exceedingly, by this moving

Sedateness.

Don't let it alarm you, Sir! I mean nothing but good!—But I have been preparing myself to tell you all my Mind. And as an Instance of what you may expect from me, sometimes, Sir, I will be your Judge, and put home Questions to you; and sometimes you shall be mine, and at last pronounce Sentence upon me; or, if you won't, I will upon myself; a severe one to me, it shall be, but an agreeable one, perhaps, to you!—— When comes on the Trial, Sir?

He looked steadily upon me, but was silent. And I said, But don't be afraid, Sir, that I will invade your Province; for tho' I shall count myself your Judge, in some Cases, you shall be Judge Paramount still.

Dear Charmer of my Heart, said he, and clasped me to his Bosom, what a new Pamela have I in my Arms! A mysterious Charmer! Let us instantly go to my Closet, or yours, and come upon our mutual Trial; for you have fir'd my soul with Im-

patience!

No, Sir, if you please, we will dine first. I have hardly eaten any thing these four Days; and your Company will give me an Appetite perhaps. I shall be pleas'd to sit down at Table with you, Sir, taking his Hand, and trying to smile upon him; for the Moments I shall have of your Company, may be, some Time hence, very precious to my Remembrance.

I was forced then to turn my Head, to hide from him my Eyes, brimful, as they were of Tears.

He took me again into his Arms: — My dearest Pamela, if you love me, distract not my Soul thus,

by your dark and mysterious Speeches. You are displeased with me, and I thought I had Reason, of late, to take something amiss in your Conduct; but, instead of your suffering by my Anger, you have Words and an Air that penetrate my very Soul.

O Sir, Sir, treat me not thus kindly! Put on an angrier Brow, or how shall I retain my Purpose?

How shall I!

Dear, dear Creature! make not use of all your Power to melt me! Half of it is enough. For there is Eloquence in your Eyes I cannot refift; but in your present solemn Air, and affecting Sentences, you mould me to every Purpose of your Heart; fo that I am a mere Machine, a passive Instrument, to

be play'd upon at your Pleafure.

Dear, kind Sir! how you revive my Heart, by your Goodness! Perhaps I have only been in a frightful Dream, and am but just now awaken'd!-But we will not anticipate our Trial. Only, Sir, give Orders, that you are not to be spoken with by any body, when we have din'd; for I must have you all to myself, without Interruption.

Just as I had said this, a Gentleman called on him, and I retired to my Chamber, and wrote to this

Place.

Mr. B. dismis'd his Friend, without asking him to dine with him: So I had him all to mylelf at Dinner. But we faid little, and fat not above a Quarter of an Hour; looking at each other, he with Impatience, and some seeming Uneasiness; I, with more Steadiness, I believe; but now-and-then a Tear starting.

I could eat but little, though I try'd all I could, and especially as he help'd me, and courted me by Words of Tenderness and Sweetness—O why were ever fuch things as Masquerades permitted in a Chris-

tian Nation!

I chose to go into my Closet rather than into his: and here I fit, waiting the dear Gentleman's coming up to me. If I keep but my Courage, I shall be pleased. I know the worst, and that will help me; for he is too noble to use me roughly, when he fees I mean not to provoke him by Upbraidings, any more than I will act, in this Case, beneath the Cha-

racter I ought to assume as his Wife.

For, my dear Lady, this is a Point of high 1mportance. It has touch'd and rais'd my Soul beyond its Pitch; I am a new Pamela, as he fays, and a proud Pamela, as he will find - For, Madam, the Person who can support herself under an Injury like this, and can resolve to forgive it, has a Superior to the Injurer, let him be a Prince, tho' she were but a Beggar born. But the Difficulty will be, how to avoid being melted by my own Softness, and Love for the Man, more dear to me than Life; yea, more dear to me than my Billy, and than all my Hopes in the Charming Boy. But here he comes!

Now, Pamela,-Now, see what thou canst do!-Thou knowest the worst! Remember that !- And may'ft not be unhappy, even at the worst, if thou

trustest in God.

I am commanded, my dear Lady, now to write particularly my Trial, for a Reason I shall mention to you in the Conclusion of this Letter; and I must beg you to favour me with the Return of all my Letters to you, on this affecting Subject. - The Reason will appear in its Place. - And, Oh! congratulate me, my dear, dear Lady! for I am happy, and shall be happier than I ever was; and that I thought, fo did every body, was impossible. But I will not anticipate the Account of my Trial, and the Effects, the bleffed Effects, it has produced. Thus, then, it was:

Mr. B. came up, with great Impatience in his Looks. I met him at my Chamber-door, with as **fedate**

fedate a Countenance as I possibly could put on, and my Heart was high with my Purpose, and supported me better than I could have expected.—Yet, on Recollection, now, I impute to myself something of that kind of Magnanimity, that was wont to inspire the innocent Sufferers of old, for a still worthier Cause than mine; though their Motives could hardly be more pure, in that one Hope I had to be an humble Means of saving the Man I love and honour, from Errors that might be fatal to his Soul.

I took his Hand with Boldness: Dear Sir, leading him to my Closet, Here is the Bar, at which I am to take my Trial, pointing to the Backs of three Chairs which I had placed in a join'd Row, leaving just Room to go by on each Side-You must give me, Sir, all my own Way; this is the first, and perhaps the last Time, that I shall defire it. - Nay, dear Sir, turning my Face from him, look not upon me with an Eye of Tenderness: If you do, I may lose my Purposes, important to me as they are; and however fantastick my Behaviour may seem to you, I want not to move your Paffions, (for the good Impressions made upon them, may be too easily dissipated, by the Winds of Sense) - but your Reason: And if that can be done, I am fafe, and shall fear no Relapfe.

What means all this Parade, my Dear? Let me perish, that was his Word, if I know how to account for you, or your Humour.

You will presently, Sir. But give me all my Way —I pray you do, this once—This one Time only! Well, so, this is your Bar, is it? There's an Elbow-chair, I see; take your Place in it, Pamela, and here I'll stand to answer all your Questions.

No, Sir, that must not be. So I boldly led him to the Elbow-chair. You are the Judge, Sir; it is I that am to be try'd. Yet I will not say I am a I? Criminal.

174 PAMELA; Or,

Criminal. I know I am not. But that must be proved, Sir, you know.

Well, take your Way; but I fear for your Head,

my Dear, in all this.

I fear only my Heart, Sir, that's all: But there you must sit—So here (retiring to the three Chairs,

and leaning on the Backs, here) I stand.

And now, my dearest Mr. B. you must begin first: When you shew'd me the House of Peers, their Bar, at which Causes are heard, and sometimes Peers are try'd, look'd awful to me; and the present Occasion requires that this should. Now, dear Sir, you must be my Accuser as well as my Judge.

I have nothing to accuse you of, my Dear, if I must give into your moving Whimsy. You are every thing I wish you to be. But for the last Month you have seem'd to be uneasy, and have not done me the Justice to acquaint me with your Reasons for it.

I was in hopes, my Reasons might prove to be no Reasons; and I would not trouble you with my ungrounded Apprehensions. But now, Sir, we are come directly to the Point; and methinks I stand here as Paul did before Felix; and, like that poor Prisoner, if I, Sir, reason of Righteousness, Temperance, and Judgment to come, even to make you, as the great Felix did, tremble, don't put me off to another Day, to a more convenient Season, as that Governor did Paul; for you must bear patiently with all I have to say.

Strange, uncommon Girl! how unaccountable is all this!—Pry'thee, my Dear, and he pull'd a Chair by him, Come and fit down by me, and without these romantick Airs let me hear all you have to

fay; and teize me not with this Parade.

No, Sir, let me stand, if you please, while I can stand; when I am weary, I will sit down at my Bar.

Now, Sir, fince you are fo good as to fay, you have nothing but Change of Temper to accuse me

of, I am to answer to that, and assign a Cause; and I will do it without Evasion or Reserve: But I beseech you say not one Word, but Yes, or No, to my Questions, 'till I have said all I have to say, and then you shall find me all Silence and Resignation.

Well, my strange Dear! - But sure your Head

is a little turn'd! - What is your Question?

Whether, Sir, the Nun —— I speak boldly; the Case requires it—who followed you at the Masque-rade every-where, is not the Counters of ——?

What then, my Dear? (speaking with Quickness)

—I thought the Occasion of your Sullenness and Re-

ferve was this !- But Pamela-

Nay, Sir, interrupted I, only Yes, or No, if you please: I will be all Silence by-and-by.

Yes, then.

e

Well, Sir, then let me tell you, for I alk you not, (it may be too bold in me to multiply Questions) that she loves you; that you correspond by Letters with her — Yes, Sir, before that Letter from her Ladyship came, which you receiv'd from my Hand in so short and angry a manner, for fear I should have had a Curiofity to see its Contents, which would have been inexcusable in me, I own, if I had. You have talked over to her all your Polygamy Notions, and her Ladyship seems so well convinced of them, that she has declared to her noble Uncle, (who expostulated with her on the Occasions she gave for Talk) that she had rather be a certain Gentleman's fecond Wife, than the first to the greatest Man in England; and you are but just return'd from a Journey to Tunbridge, in which that Lady was a Party; and the Motive for it, I am acquainted with, by a Letter here in my Hand.

He was displeased, and frowned: I look'd down, being resolv'd not to be terrified, if I could help it.

I have caution'd you, Pamela -

14

I know

I know you have, Sir, interrupted I; but be pleafed to answer me, Has not the Countess taken a House or Lodgings at Tunbridge?

She has: --- And what then?

And is her Ladyship there, or in Town?

There-And what then?

Are you to go to Tunbridge, Sir, foon, or not? Be pleased to answer me but that one Question.

I will know, rifing up in Anger, your Informants,

Pamela.

Dear Sir, so you shall, in proper Time: You shall know all, as soon as I am convinc'd, that your Wrath will not be attended with bad Consequences to yourself and others. That is wholly the Cause of my Reserve in this Point; for I have not a Thought, and never had, since I have been yours, that I wish to be concealed from you. — But, dear Sir, your Knowledge of the Informants makes nothing at all as to the Truth of the Information—Nor will I press you too home. I doubt not, you are soon to go down to Tunbridge again.

I am, and what then? - Must the Consequence

be Crime enough to warrant your Jealoufy?

Dear Sir, don't be so very angry, still looking down; for I durst not trust myself to look up. I don't do this, as you charged me in your Letter, in a Spirit of matrimonial Recrimination: If you don't tell me, that you see the Countess with Pleasure, I ask it not of you; nor have I any thing to say by way of Upbraiding. 'Tis my Missortune, that she is too lovely, and too attractive; and it is the less Wonder, that a fine young Gentleman as you are, and a fine young Lady as she is, should engage one another's Affections.

I knew every thing, except what this Letter, which you shall read presently, communicates, when you brought the two noble Sisters to visit me: Hence proceeded my Grief; and should I, Sir, have deserv'd

to be what I am, if I was not griev'd? Religion has help'd me, and God has answer'd my Supplications, and enabled me to act this new and uncommon Part before you, at this imaginary Bar. You shall see, Sir, that as, on one hand, I want not, as I said before, to move your Passions in my Favour; so, on the other, I shall not be terrify'd by your Displeasure, dreaded by me as it used to be, and as it will be again, the Moment that my raised Spirits sink down to their usual Level; or are diverted from this my long meditated Purpose, to tell you all my Mind.

I repeat then, Sir, that I knew all this, when the two noble Sisters came to visit your poor Girl, and to see your Billy. Yet, grave, as the Countess call'd me, (dear Sir! might I not well be grave, knowing what I knew?) did I betray any Impatience of

Speech or Action, any Discomposure?

No, Sir, patting my Hand on my Breast, here all the Discomposure lay, struggling, vehemently struggling, now-and-then, and wanting that Vent at my Eyes, which it seems (overcome by my Joy, to hear mysels favourably spoken of by you and the Lady) it too soon made itself. But I could not help it

You might have feen, Sir, I could not!

But I want neither to recriminate nor expossulate, nor yet, Sir, to form Excuses for my general Conduct; for that you accuse not in the main—But be pleased, Sir, to read this Letter, It was brought by the Penny-post, as you'll see by the Mark. Who the Writer is, I know not. And did you, Sir, that Know-ledge, and your Resentment upon it, will not alter the Fact, or give it a more favourable Appearance.

I step'd to him, and giving him the Letter, came back to my Bar, and sat down on one of the Chairs while he read it, drying my Eyes; for they would

overflow as I talked, do what I could.

He was much moved at the Contents of this Letter: Call'd it d-n'd Malice, and hop'd he might I 5 find find out the Author of it, faying he would advertise

500 Guineas Reward for the Discoverer.

He put the Letter in his Pocket, well Pamela, you believe all that you have faid, no doubt; and this Matter has a black Appearance indeed, if you do. But who was your first Informant?—Was that by Letter or personally? That d—n'd Turner, I doubt not, is at the Bottom of all this. The vain Coxcomb has had the Insolence to imagine the Countess would favour an Address of his; and is enraged to meet with a Repulse; and has taken Liberties upon it, that have given Birth to all the Scandals which have been scatter'd about on this Occasion. Nor do I doubt, but he has been the Serpent at the Ear of my Eve.

I stood up at my Bar, and said, Don't be too hasty, Sir, in your Judgment—You may be mistaken?

But am I mistaken, Pamela?—You never yet told me an Untruth in Cases the most important to

you to conceal. Am I mistaken?

Dear Sir, if I should tell you it is not Mr. Turner, you'll guess at somebody else: And what avails all this to the Matter in hand? You are your own Master, and must stand or fall by your own Conscience. God grant, that that may acquit you!—But my Intention is not either to accuse or upbraid you.

But, my Dear, to the Fact then: This is a malicious and a villainous Piece of Intelligence! given you, perhaps, for the fake of Designs and Views,

that may not yet be proper to be avow'd.

By God's Grace, Sir, I defy all Defigns and Views of any one, upon my Honour!

But, my Dear, the Charge is basely false: We

have not agreed upon any fuch way of Life.

Well, Sir, all this only proves, that the Intelligence may be a little premature. But now let me, Sir, fit down one Minute or two, to recover my failing failing Spirits; and then I'll tell you all I purpose to do, and all I have to say, and that with as much Brevity as I can, for fear neither my Head nor my Heart should perform the Parts I have been so long endeavouring to prevail upon them to perform.

I fat down then, he taking the Letter out of his Pocket, and looking upon it again, with much Vexation and Anger in his Countenance and after a few Tears and Sobs, that would needs be so officious as to offer their Service, unbidden and undefired, to introduce what I had to say; I rose up, my Feet trembling, as well as my Knees; which however, leaning against the Seats of the Chairs, which made my Bar, as my Hand held by the Back, tolerably supported me, I cleared my Voice, wiped my Eyes, and said:

You have all the Excuses, dear Mr. B. that a Gentleman can have, in the Object of your present Passion.

Present Passion, Pamela!

Dear Sir, hear me out, without Interruption.

The Countess is a charming Lady. She excels your poor Girl in all those outward Graces of Form, which your kind Fancy (more valu'd by me than the Opinion of all the World besides) had made you attribute to me. And she has all those additional Advantages, as Nobleness of Birth, of Alliance, and Deportment, which I want (Happy for you, Sir, that you had known her Ladyship some Months ago, before you difgrac'd yourfelf by the Honours you have done me!) This therefore frees you from the aggravated Crime of those, who prefer to their own Ladies less amiable and less deserving Persons; and I have not the Sting which those must have, who are contemp'd and ill-treated for the fake of their Inferiors. Yet cannot the Countess love you better than your Girl loves you; not even for your Person, which must, I doubt, be her principal Attachment;

when I can truly fay, all noble and attracting to the outward Eye as it is, that is the least Confideration by far with me: No, Sir, it is your Mind, your generous and beneficent Mind, that is the principal object of my Affection; and the Pride I took in hoping that I might be an humble Means, in the Hands of Providence, to bless you hereafter as well as here, gave me more Pleasure than all the Bleffings I reaped from your Name or your Fortune. Judge then, my dearest Mr. B. what my Grief and my Disappointment must be!

But I will not expostulate; I will not, because it must be to no Purpose; for could my Fondness for you, and my watchful Duty to you, have kept you fleady, I should not now have appear'd before you in this folemn manner; and I know the Charms of my Rival are too powerful for me to contend with. Nothing but Divine Grace can touch your Heart; and that I expect not, from the Nature of the Cafe, should be instantaneous.

I will therefore, Sir, dear as you are to me (-Don't look with such tender Surprize upon me!) give up your Person to my happier, to my worthier Rival. For, fince such is your Will, and such feem to be your Engagements, what avails it to me to oppofe them.

I have only to beg, therefore, that you will be fo good as to permit me to go down to Kent, to my dear Parents, who, with many more, are daily re-

joicing in your Favour and Bounty.

I will there (holding up my folded Hands) pray for you every Hour of my Life; and for every one who shall be dear to you, not excepting your charm-

ing Countels.

I will never take your Name into my Lips, nor fuffer any other in my Hearing, but with Reverence and Gratitude, for the Good I and mine have reap'd at your Hands; nor will I wish to be freed from my ObligaObligations to you, except you shall choose to be divorced from me; and if you should, I will give your Wishes all the Forwardness that I honourably can, with regard to my own Character and yours, and that of your beloved Baby.

But you must give me something worth living for along with me; your Billy and mine!—Unless it is your Desire to kill me quite! and then, 'tis done, and nothing will stand in your happy Countess's Way, if you tear from my Arms my second earthly

Good, after I am depriv'd of you, my first.

I will there, Sir, dedicate all my Time to my first Duties; happier far, than once I could have hoped to be! And if, by any Accident, and Misunderstanding, between you, you should part by Consent, and you will have it so, my Heart shall be ever yours, and my Hopes shall be resum'd of being an instrument still for your suture Good, and I will receive your returning ever-valu'd Heart, as if nothing had happen'd, the Moment I can be sure it

For, think not, dear Sir, whatever be your Notions of Polygamy, that I will, were my Life to depend upon it, consent to live with a Gentleman, dear as, God is my Witness, (lifting up my tearful Eyes) you are to me, who lives in what I cannot but think open Sin with another! You know, Sir, and I appeal to you for the Purity, and I will aver Piety, of my Motives, when I say this, that I would not; and as you do know this, I cannot doubt, but my Proposal will be agreeable to you both. And I beg of you, dear Sir, to take me at my Word; and don't let me be tortur'd, as I have been so many Weeks, with such Anguish of Mind, that nothing but religious Considerations can make supportable to

And are you in Earnest, Pamela? coming to me, and folding me in his Arms over the Chair's Back, the

the Seat of which supported my trembling Knees-

Can you fo eafily part with me?

I can, Sir, and I will!—rather than divide my Interest in you, knowingly, with any Lady upon Earth. But say not, however, can I part with you, Sir; it is you that part with me: And tell me, Sir, tell me but what you had intended should become of me?

You talk to me, my dearest Life, as if all you had heard against me was true; and you would have

me answer you, (would you?) as if it was.

I want nothing to convince me, Sir, that the Countess loves you: You know the rest of my Information: Judge for me, what I can, what I ought to believe!—You know the Rumours of the World concerning you: Even I, who stay so much at home, and have not taken the least Pains to find out my Wretchedness, nor to confirm it, since I knew it, have come to the Hearing of it; and if you know the Licence taken with both your Characters, and yet correspond so openly, must it not look to me, that you value not your Honour in the World's Eye, nor my Lady her's? I told you, Sir, the Answer she made to her Uncle.

You told me, my Dear, as you were told. Be tender of a Lady's Reputation—for your own fake. No one is exempted from Calumny; and even Words faid, and the Occasion of faying them not known, may bear a very different Construction from what they would have done, had the Occasion been told.

This may be all true, Sir: I wish the Lady would be as tender of her Reputation as I would be, let her injure me in your Affections as she will. But can you say, Sir, that there is nothing between you, that should not be, according to my Notions of Virtue and Honour, and according to your own, which I took Pride in, before that satal Masquerade?

You answer me not, continu'd I; and may I not fairly presume you are not able to answer me as I wish to be answer'd? But come, dearest Sir, (and I put my Arms round his Neck) let me not urge you too boldly. I will never forget your Benefits and your past Kindness to me. I have been a happy Creature: No one, till within these sew Weeks, was ever so happy as I. I will love you still with a Passion as ardent as ever I loved you. Absence cannot lessen such a Love as mine: I am sure it cannot.

I see your Difficulties. You have gone too far to recede. If you can make it easy to your Conscience, I will wait with Patience my happier Destiny; and I will wish to live, (if I can be convinc'd you wish me not to die) in order to pray for you, and to be a Directress to the first Education of my dearest Baby.

You figh, dear Sir; repose your beloved Face next to my fond Heart. Tis all your own: And ever shall be, let it, or let it not, be worthy of the Honour in your Estimation.

But, yet, my dear Mr. B. if one could as eafily, in the Prime of fenfual Youth, look Twenty Years forward, as one can Twenty Years backward, what an empty Vanity, what a mere Nothing, will be all those grosser Satisfactions, that now give Wings of Desire to our debased Appetites.

Motives of Religion will have their due Force upon your Mind one Day, I hope; as, bleffed be God, they have enabled me to talk to you on fuch a touching Point (after infinite Struggles, I own) with so much Temper and Resignation; and then, my dearest Mr. B. when we come to that last Bed, from which the Piety of our Friends shall lift us, but from which we shall never be able to raise ourselves; for, dear Sir, your Countess, and You, and your poor Pamela, must all come to this!—we shall find what it is will give us the true Joy, and enable

enable us to support the Pangs of the dying Hour .-Think you, my dearest Sir, (and I pressed my Lips to his Forehead, as his Head was reclin'd on my throbbing Bosom) that then, in that important Mo. ment, what now gives us the greatest Pleasure, will have any Part in our Consideration, but as it may

give us Woe or Comfort in the Reflection?

But, I will not, I will not, O best Beloved of my Soul, afflict you farther !- Why should I thus sadden all your gaudy Prospects? I have faid enough to such a Heart as yours, if Divine Grace touches it. And if not, all I can fay will be of no avail! - I will leave you therefore to That, and to your own Reflections. And after giving you ten thousand Thanks for your kind, your indulgent Patience with me, I will only beg, that I may fet out in a Week for Kent, with my dear Billy; that you will receive one Letter at least, from me, of Gratitude and Bleffings; it shall not be of Upbraidings and Exclamations.

y

n

2

But my Child you must not deny me; for I shall haunt, like his Shadow, every Place wherein you shall put my Billy, if you should be so unkind to deny him to me !- And if, moreover, you will permit me to have the dear Miss Goodwin with me, as you had almost given me room to hope, I will read over all the Books of Education, and digest them as well as I am able, in order to fend you my Scheme, and to shew you how fit I hope your Indulgence, at least, will make you think me, of having two such

precious Trusts reposed in me!

I was filent, waiting in Tears his Answer. But his generous Heart was touch'd, and feem'd to labour

within him for Expression.

He came round to me at last, and took me in his Arms: Exalted Creature! faid he; noble minded Panela! Let no Bar be put between us henceforth! No Wonder, when one looks back to your first promifing Dawn of Excellence, that your fuller Day should

should thus irresistibly dazzle such weak Eyes as mine. Whatever it costs me, and I have been inconsiderately led on by blind Passion for an Object too charming, but which I never thought equal to my Pamela, I will (for it is yet, I bless God, in my Power) restore to your Virtue a Husband all your own.

O Sir, Sir! (and I should have sunk down with Joy, had not his kind Arms supported me) what have you said?—Can I be so happy as to behold you innocent as to Deed! God, of his infinite Goodness, continue you both so!—And oh! that the dear Lady would make me as truly love her, for the Graces of her Mind, as I admire her for the Advan-

tages of her Person!

You are Virtue itself, my dearest Life; and from this Moment I will reverence you as my tutelary Angel. I shall behold you with Awe, and implicitly give up myself to all your Dictates; for what you lay, and what you do, must be ever right.—But I will not, my dearest Life, too lavishly promise, lest you should think it the sudden Effects of Passions thus movingly touch'd, and which may subside again, when the Soul, as you observ'd in your own Case, finks to its former level: But this I promise you, (and I hope you believe me, and will pardon the Pain I have given you, which made me fear, more than once, that your Head was affected, so uncommon, yet so like yourself, has been the manner of your Acting) that I will break off a Correspondence that has given you fo much Uneafiness: And my Pamela may believe, that if I can be as good as my Word in this Point, the will never more be in danger of any Rival whatever.

But say, my dear Love, (added he) say you forgive me; and resume but your former Cheerfulness, and affectionate Regards to me; else I shall suspect the Sincerity of your Forgiveness: And you shall

indeed

indeed go to Kent; but not without me, nor your Boy neither; and, if you infift upon it, the poor Child, you have wished so often, and so generously to have, shall be given up absolutely to your

Disposal.

Do you think, Madam, I could speak any one distinct Sentence? No indeed I could not—Pardon, pardon You, dear Sir!—and I sunk down on my Knees, from his Arms—All I beg—All I hope—Your Pardon—my Thankfulness.—O spare me—fpare me but Words—And indeed I was just choak'd with my Joy; I never was so in my whole Life before. And my Eyes were in a manner fixed, as the dear Man told measterwards; and that he was a little startled, seeing nothing but the Whites; for the Sight was out of its Orbits, in a manner listed up to Heaven—in Ecstasy for a Turn so sudden, and so unexpected!

We were forced to separate soon after; for there was no bearing each other, so excessive was my Joy, and his Goodness. He left me, and went down to

his own Closet.

Judge my Employment you will, I am sure, my dear Lady. I had new Ecstasy to be blest with, in a Thankfulness so exalted, that it left me all light and pleasant, as if I had shook off Body, and trod in Air; so much Heaviness had I lost, and so much Joy had I received!—From two such Extremes, how was it possible I could presently hit the Medium!—For when I had given up my beloved Husband, as lost to me, and had dreaded the Consequences to his future State; to find him not only untainted as to Deed, but, in all Probability, mine upon better and surer Terms than ever—O, Madam! must not this give a Joy beyond all Joy, and surpassing all Expression!

About Eight o'Clock Mr. B. fent me up these Lines from his Closet, which will explain what I meant, meant, as to the Papers I must beg your Ladyship to return me.

My dear PAMELA,

or

he

eır

10

y

f

e

HAVE fo much real Concern at the Anguish I have given you, and am so much affected with the Recollection of the uncommon Scenes which ' passed between us, just now, that I write, because I know not how to look so excellent a Creature in the Face—You must therefore sup without me, ' and take your Mrs. Fervis to Bed with you; who, I doubt not, knows all this Affair; and you may tell her the happy Event.

'You must not interfere with me just now, my Dear, while I am writing upon a Subject which takes up all my Attention; and which, requiring great Delicacy, I may, possibly, be all Night be-

fore I can please myself in it:

' I am determined, absolutely, to make good my Promise to you. But if you have written to your ' Mother, to Miss Darnford, or to Lady Davers, ' any thing of this Affair, you must shew me the 'Copies of your Letters, and let me into every 'Tittle how you came by your Information.-'I folemnly promise you, on my Honour, (that ' has not yet been violated to you, and I hope never ' will) that not a Soul shall know or suffer by the ' Communication, not even Turner; for I am con-' fident he has had some Hand in it. This Request ' you must comply with, if you can confide in me; ' for I shall make some Use of it, (as prudent an one 'as I am able) for the fake of every one concern'd, in the Conclusion of the Correspondence between the Lady and myself. Whatever you may have ' faid, in the Bitterness of your Heart, in the Letters 'I require to see, or whatever any of those, to whom they are directed, shall say, on the bad · Prospect,

Prospect, shall be forgiven, and look'd upon as deserved, by

Your ever-obliged and faithful, &c.

I return'd the following:

Dearest, dear Sir,

WILL not break in upon you, while you are fo importantly employ'd. Mrs. Ferwis has indeed fo importantly employ'd. Mrs. Fervis has indeed feen my Concern for some time past, and has heard Rumours, as I know by Hints the has from time to time given me; but her Prudence, and my Referves, have kept us from faying any thing to one another of it. Neither my Mother not Miss Darnford know a Tittle of it from me. I have received a Letter of Civility from Mifs, and have answered it, taking and giving Thanks for the Pleasure of each other's Company, and best Respects from her, and the Lincolnshire Families, to your dear Self. These, my Copy, and her Original, you shall see when you please. But, in Truth, all that has passed, is between Lady Davers and me, and I have not kept Copies of mine; but · I will dispatch a Messenger to her Ladyship for them, if you please, in the Morning, before 'tis · Light; not doubting your kind Promise of excusing every Thing, and every Body.

I beg, dear Sir, you will take care your Health fuffers not by your fitting up; for the Nights are

cold and damp.

I will, now you have given me the Liberty, let Mrs. Fervis know how happy you have made me, by distipating my Fears, and the idle Rumours, as I shall call them to her, of Calumniators.

God bless you, dear Sir, for your Goodness and

Favour to

ASSERBOY .

· Your ever-dutiful

and that they can the bad

· P. B.

4 }

6

He was pleased to return me this:

· My dear Life,

TOU need not be in such haste to fend. you write to Lady Davers how the Matter has ended, let me fee the Copy of it: And be very particular in your, or rather my Trial. It shall be a standing Lesson to me for my future Instruction; as it will be a fresh Demonstration of your Excellence, which every Hour I more and more admire. I am glad Lady Davers only knows the Matter. I think I ought to avoid feeing you, till I can assure you, that every thing is accommodated to your Defire. Longman has fent me some 'Advices, which will make it proper for me to meet ' him at Bedford or Gloucester. I will not go to Tunbridge, till I have all your Papers; and so you'll ' have three days time to procure them. Your Boy, ' and your Penmanship will find you no disagreeable. 'Employment till I return. Nevertheless, on second 'Thoughts, I will do myself the Pleasure of break-' fasting with you in the Morning, to re-assure you of my unalterable Purpose to approve myself,

· My dearest Life,

· Ever faithfully Yours.'

Thus, I hope, is happily ended this dreadful Affair. My next shall inform your Ladyship of the Particulars of our Breakfast Conversation. But I would not slip this Post, without acquainting you with this blessed Turn; and to beg the Favour of you to send me back my Letters; which will lay a new Obligation upon,

Dear Madam, Your obliged Sifter, and humble Servant,

P. B.

LETTER

LETTER XXXIII.

My dearest Lady,

YOUR joyful Correspondent has obtained Leave to get every thing ready to quit London by Friday next, when your kind Brother promises to carry me down to Kent, and allows me to take my Charmer with me. There's Happiness for you, Madam! To see, as I hope I shall see, upon one blessed Spot, a dear faithful Husband, a beloved Child, and a Father and Mother, whom I so much love and honour!

Mr. B. told me this voluntarily, this Morning at Breakfast; and then, in the kindest manner, took

Leave of me, and fet out for Bedfordshire.

But I should, according to my Promise, give your Ladyshipa few Particulars of our Breakfast Con-

ference.

I bid Polly withdraw, when her Master came up to Breastfast; and I ran to the Door to meet him, and threw myself on my Knees: O forgive me, dearest, dear Sir, all my Bodness of Yesterday!—My Heart was strangely affected—or I could not have acted as I did. But never fear, my dearest Mr. B. that my future Conduct shall be different from what it used to be, or that I shall keep up to a Spirit, which you hardly thought had place in the Heart of your dutiful Pamela, till she was thus severely tried.

I have weighed well your Conduct, my dear Life, raising me to his Bosom; and I find an Uniformity

in it, that is furprifingly just.

There is in your Composition indeed, the strangest Mixture of Meekness and high Spirit, that ever I met with. Never was a saucier dear Girl than you, in your Maiden Days, when you thought your Honour in Danger: Never a more condescending Goodness,

ness, when your Fears were at an end. Now again, when you had Reason, as you believed, to apprehend a Conduct in me, unworthy of my Obligations to you, and of your Purity, you rise in your Spirit, with a Dignity that becomes an injur'd Person; and yet you forget not, in the Height of your Resentments, that angelick Sweetness of Temper, and Readiness to forgive, which so well become a Lady who lives as you live, and practises what you practise. My dearest Pamela, I see, continued he, serves not God for nought: In a better Sense I speak it, than the Maligner spoke it of Job: Since in every Action of yours, the heavenly Direction you so constantly invoke, shews itself thus beautifully.

And now again, this charming Condescension, the Moment you are made easy, is an Assurance, that your affectionate Sweetness is return'd: And I cannot fear any thing, but that I shall never be able to deserve it.

He led me to the Tea-Table, and fat down close by me. Polly came in. If every thing, said he, be here, that your Lady wants, you may withdraw; and let Colbrand and Abraham know, I shall be with them presently. Nobody shall wait upon me, but you, my Dear.

Polly withdrew.

9

0

1,

-

d

h

it

k

e

-

1,

ot

A

t

0

You are all Goodness, Sir: And how generously, how kindly, do you account for that Mixture in my Temper you speak of!—Depend upon it, dear Sir, that I will never grow upon this your Indulgence.

I always lov'd you, my Dearest, said he, and that with a passionate Fondness, which has not, I dare say, many Examples in the marry'd Life: But I revere you now. And so great is my Reverence for your Virtue, that I chose to sit up all Night, as I now do, to leave you for a few Days, until, by disengaging myself from all Intercourses that have

giver

given you Uneafines, I can convince you, that I have render'd myself as worthy as I can be, of such an Angel, even upon your own Terms. I will account to you, continued he, for every Step I shall take, and will reveal to you every Step I have taken: For this I can do, because the Lady's Honour is untainted, and wicked Rumour has treated her worse than she could deserve.

I told him, that fince he had been pleafed to name the Lady, I would take the Liberty to fay, I was glad, for her own fake, to hear that. Changing the Subject a little precipitately, as if it gave him Pain, he told me, as above, that I might prepare on Friday for Kent; and I parted with him with greater Pleafure than ever I did in my Life. So necessary fometimes are Afflictions, not only to teach one how to subdue one's Passions, and to make us, in our happiest States, know we are still on Earth, but even when they are over-blown to augment and redouble our Joys!

I am now giving Orders for my Journey, and quitting this undelightful Town, as it has been, and is, to me. My next will be from Kent, I hope; and perhaps I shall then have an Opportunity to acquaint your Ladyship with the Particulars, and (if God answers my Prayers) the Conclusion of the Affair, which

has given me fo much Uneafinefs.

synd daily country that have

Mean time, I am, with the greatest Gratitude, for the kind Share you have taken in my past Afflictions, my good Lady,

tree you now, And to greatly my Research tyour Virtue, that shoe in he op all IVly by us bowed, to first you for a dow Liave, maily by

Your Ladyship's
Most obliged Sister and Servant,

LETTER XXXIV.

My dearest PAMELA, assound a selected

1

h

-

11

-

e

0

I

n

n

r

y

W

ır

n

le

t-

s,

r-

nt

1-

ch

or

S,

R

I Nclosed are all the Letters you send for. I rejoice with you upon the Turn this afflicting Affair has taken, thro' your inimitable Prudence, and a Courage I thought not in you. — A Wretch! — to give you so much Discomposure!—But I will not, if he be good now, rave against him, as I was going to do—I am impatient to hear what Account he gives of the Matter. I hope he will be able to abandon this—I won't call her Names; for she loves the Wretch; and that, if he be just to you, will be her Punishment.

What Care ought these young Widows to take of their Reputation?—And how watchful ought they to be over themselves?—She was hardly out of her Weeds, and yet must go to a Masquerade, and tempt her Fate, with all her Passions about her, with an Independence, and an Assuence of Fortune, that made her able to think of nothing but gratifying them.

Then her Lord and she had been marry'd but barely two Years; and one of them, she was forc'd, with the gayest Temper in the World, to be his Nurse: For, always inclin'd to a consumptive Indisposition, he languished, without Hope, a twelve-month, and then died.

She has good Qualities—is generous—noble—but has strong Passions, and is thoughtless and precipitant.

My Lord came home to me last Tuesday, with a long Story of my Brother and her; for I had kept the Matter as secret as I could, for his sake and yours. It seems, he had it from Sir John — Uncle to the young Lord C. who is very earnest to bring on a Treaty of Marriage between her and his Nephew, Vot. IV.

who is in Love with her, and is a fine young Gentleman: but has held back, on the Liberties she has

lately given herself with my Brother.

I hope she is innocent, as to Fact; but I know not what to say to it. He ought to be hang'd, if he did not say she was. Yet I have a great Opinion of his Veracity: And yet he is so bold a Wretch!

And her Inconfideration is so great!

But lest I should alarm your Fears, I will wait till I have the Account he gives you of this dark Affair; till when, I congratulate you upon the Leave you have obtained to quit the Town, and on your setting out for a Place so much nearer to Tunbridge. Forgive me, Pamela; but he is an intriguing Wretch, and I would not have you to be too secure, lest the Disappointment should be worse for you, than what you knew before: But assure yourself, that I am, in all Cases and Events,

Your affectionate Sister and Admirer,

B. DAVERS.

P. S. Your Bar, and some other Parts of your Conduct in your Trial, as you call it, make me (as, by your Account, it seemed to do him) apprehensive, that you would hardly have been able to have kept your Intellect so untouched as were to be wish'd, had this Affair proceeded. And this, as it would have been the most deplorable Missortune that could have befallen us, who love and admire you so justly, redoubles my Joy, that it is likely to end so happily. God send it may!

o est on the insether modelet; feed best kept
the ditter as feeting as a could. For the talker will
yours, it seems, he had at from Sir Value - Cocher
to be a constitution who is very to sell to be being

LETTER XXXV.

From Mrs. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My dearest Lady,

n-

he

of

illi

r;

ng

ornd

if-

ou

all

25.

ur

me m)

en

ed.

le-

len re-

p-

MR. B. came back from Bedferdshire to his Time. Every thing being in Readiness, we set out with my Baby, and his Nurse. Mrs. Jervis, when every thing in London is settled by her Direc-

tion, goes to Bedfordshire.

We were met by my father and Mother in a Chaise and Pair, which your kind Brother had presented to them unknown to me, that they might often take the Air together, and go to Church in it, (which is at some Distance from them) on Sundays. The Driver is clothed in a good brown Cloth Suit, but no Livery; for that my Parents could not have borne, as Mr. B.'s Goodness made him consider.

Your Ladyship must needs think, how we were all overjoyed at this Meeting: For my own Part, I cannot express how much I was transported when we arrived at the Farm-house, to see all I delighted in, upon one happy Spot together.

Mr. B. is much pleased with the Alterations made here *; and it is a sweet, rural, and convenient

Place,

We were welcomed into these Parts by the Bells, and by the Minister, and People of most Note; and were at Church together on Sunday.

Mr. B. is to set out on Tuesday for Tunbridge, with my Papers. A happy issue attend that Affair, I pray

* See Vol. III. Letter I.

God! He has given me the following Particulars of it, to the Time of my Trial, beginning at the Masquerade.

He fays, that at the Masquerade, when, pleased with the fair Nun's Shape, Air, and Voice, he had followed her to a Corner most unobserved, she said in Italian, Why are my Retirements invaded, audacious Spaniard?

Because, my dear Nun, I hope you would have

it fo.

I can no otherwise, returned she, strike dead thy bold Presumption, than to shew thee my Scorn and Anger thus—And unmasking, she surpris'd me, said Mr. B. with a Face as beautiful, but not so soft, as my Pamela's. — And I, said Mr. B. to shew I can defy your Resentment, will shew you a Countenance as intrepid, as yours is lovely. And so he drew aside his Mask too.

He says, he observed his fair Nun to be followed wherever she went, by a Mask habited like Testimony in Sir Courtly Nice, whose Attention was fixed upon her and him; and he doubted not, that it was Mr. Turner. So he and the fair Nun took different Ways, and he joined me and Miss Darnford, and found me engaged in the manner I related to your Ladyship, in a former Letter; and his Nun at his Elbow unexpected.

That afterwards, as he was engaged in French with a Lady who had the Dress of an Indian Princess, and the Mask of an Ethiopean, his fair Nun said, in broken Spanish, Art thou at all Complexions? ——By St. Ignatius, I believe thou'rt a

Rover

l am trying, replied he, in Italian, whether I ean meet with any Lady comparable to my lovely Nun.

And

And what is the Refult? Not one: no, not one.

I wish you could not help being in earnest, said

she; and flid from him.

He engag'd her next at the Side-board, drinking under her Veil a Glass of Champaign. You know, Pamela, said he, there never was a sweeter Mouth in the World than the Countess's, except your own. She drew away the Glass, as if unobserved by any body, to shew me the lower Part of her Face.

I cannot say, continued he, but I was struck with her charming Manner, and an Unreservedness of Air and Behaviour, that I had not before seen so becoming — The Place, and the Freedom of Conversation and Deportment allowed there, gave her great Advantages, in my Eye, although her Habit requir'd, as I thought, continued he, a little more Gravity and Circumspection: And I could not tell how to resist a secret Pride and Vanity, which is but too natural to both Sexes, when they are taken notice of by Persons so worthy of Regard.

Naturally fond of every thing that carry'd the Face of an Intrigue, I long'd to know who this charming Nun was.—And next time I engag'd her, My good Sifter, faid I, how happy should I be, if I might be admitted to a Conversation with you at

your Grate?

n

a

Answer me, said she, thou bold Spaniard, (for that was a Name she seem'd fond to call me by, which gave me to imagine, that Boldness was a Qualification with which she was not displeased: Tis not unusual with our vain Sex, observed he, to construe even Reproaches to our Advantage) Is the Lady here, whose Shackles thou wearest?

Do I look like a Man shackled, my fairest Nun? No—No! not much like such an one. But I sancy thy Wife is either a Widaw or a Quaker?

K3 Neither,

Neither, reply'd I, taking, by Equivocation, her Question literally.

And art thou not a marry'd Wretch? Answer me

quickly !-We are observ'd.

No-faid I.

Swear to me, thou art not.—

By St. Ignatius then: For, my Dear, I was no

Wietch, you know.

Enough! faid she-and slid away; and the Fanatick would fain have engaged her, but she avoided

him as industriously.

Before I was aware, continued Mr. B. she was at my Elbow, and, in Italian, said, That fair Quaker yonder is the Wit of the Assemblée: Her Eyes seem always directed to thy Motions: And her Person shows some Intimacies have passed with somebody: Is it with thee?

It would be my Glory if it was, faid I, were her

Face answerable to her Person.

Is it not?

I long to know, replied Mr. B.

I am glad thou dost not.

I am glad to hear my fair Nun fay that.

Dost thou, said she, hate Shackles? Or is it, that

thy Hour is not yet come?

I wish, reply'd he, this be not the Hour, the very Hour - pretending (naughty Gentleman! - What

Ways these Men have !-) to figh.

She went again to the Side-board, put her Handkerchief upon it. Mr. B. followed her, and observed all her Motions. She drank a Glass of Lemonade, as he of Burgundy; and a Person in a Domine, who was supposed to be the King, passing by, took up every one's Attention but Mr. B's, who eyed her Handkerchief, not doubting but she laid it there on purpose to forget to take it up. Accordingly she left it there; and slipping by him, he, unobserved, as he believes, put it in his Pocket, and at one Corner

found the Cover of a Letter, To the Right Honour-

able the Countess Dowager of ____

That after this, the fair Nun was so shy, so reserved, and seem'd so studiously to avoid him, that he had no Opportunity to return her Handkerchief; and the Fanatick observing how she shunned him, said, in French, What, Monsieur, have you done to your Nun?

I found her to be a very Coquette; and told her

so; -and she is offended.

How could you affront a Lady, replied he, with

fuch a Charming Face?

e

0

d

t

r

By that, I had Reason to think, said Mr. B. that he had seen her unmask; and I said — It becomes not any Character, but that you wear, to pry into the Secrets of others, in order to make ill-natur'd Remarks, and perhaps to take ungentlemanlike Advantages.

No Man would make that Observation, returned

he, whose Views would bear prying into.

I was nettled, said Mr. B. at this warm Retort, and drew aside my Mask: Nor would any Man, who wore not a Mask, tell me so!

He took not the Challenge, and flid from me, and

I saw him no more that Night.

So! thought I, another Instance this might have been of the glorious Consequences of Masquerading—O my Lady, these Masquerades are abominable

things !

The King, they said, met with a free Speaker that Night: In Truth, I was not very forry for it; for if Monarchs will lay asside their sovereign Distinctions, and mingle thus in Masquerade with the worst as well as the highest (I cannot say best) of their Subjects, let 'em take the Consequence.—Perhaps they might have a Chance to hear more Truth here than in their Palaces—the only Good that possibly can accrue from them—that is to say—If they made

K 4 a good

a good Use of it when they heard it. For, you see, my Monarch, the' told the Truth, as it happen'd, receiv'd the Hint with more Resentment than Thankfulness!—So, 'tis too likely, did the Monarch of us both.

And now, my Lady, you need not doubt, that fo polite a Gentleman would find an Opportunity to return the Nun her Handkerchief!—To be fure he would: For what Man of Honour would rob a Lady of any Part of her Apparel? And should he that wanted to steal a Heart, content himself with a Handkerchief?—No, no, that was not to be expected.—So, what does he do, but resolve, the very next Day, after Dinner, the soonest Opportunity he could well take, because of the late Hours the Night before, to pursue this Affair! Accordingly, the poor Quaker, httle thinking of the Matter, away goes her naughty Spaniard, to find out his Nun at her Grate, or in her Parlour rather.

He asks for the Counters. Is admitted into the outward Parlour — Her Woman comes down; requires his Name and Business. His Name he mention'd not. His Business was, to restore into her Lady's own Hands, something she had dropt the

Night before. Was dehr'd to wait.

I should have told your Ladyship, that he was dres'd very richly—having no Design at all, to make Conquests; no, not he!—O this wicked Love of Intrigue!—A kind of Olive-colour'd Velvet, and fine brocaded Waisscoat. I said, when he took Leave of me, You're a charming Mr. B.—and saluted him, more pressingly than he return'd it; but little did I think, when I plaited so smooth his rich lac'd Russes, and Bosom, where he was going, or what he had in his plotting Heart.—He went in his own Charlot, that he did: So that he had no Design to conceal who he was—But Intrigue, a new Conquest, Vanity, Pride!—O these Men!—They

had need talk of Ladies! — But it is half our own Fault, indeed it is, to encourage their Vanity.

Well, Madam, he waited till his Stateliness was moved to send up again, that he would wait on her Ladyship some other Time.——So down she came, dress'd most richly, Jewels in her Breast, and in her Hair, and Ears—But with a very reserved and stately Air—He approached her—Methinks I see him, dear saucy Gentleman. You know, Madain, what a noble manner of Address he has!

He took the Handkerchief from his Bosom with an Air; and kissing it, presented it to her, saying, This happy Estray, thus restor'd, begs leave by me, to acknowledge its lovely Owner!

What mean you, Sir? - Who be you? Sir -

What mean you?

e,

n

h

at

y

e

2

e

h

e

e

y

e

2

y

t

e

+

F

Your Ladyship will excuse me: But I am incapable of meaning any thing but what is honourable.

— (No, to be sure) — This, Madam, you lest last Night, when the Domine took up every one's Attention but mine, which was much better engaged; and I take the Liberty to restore it to you.

She turn'd to the Mark; a Coronet, at one Corner. 'Tis true, Sir, I fee now it is one of mine; But such a Trisse was not worthy of being brought by such a Gentleman as you feem to be; nor of my Trouble to receive it in Person. Your Servant, Sir, might have delivered the Bagatelle to mine.

Nothing should be called so, that belongs to the Countess of

She was no Countess, Sir, that dropt that Hand-kerchief; and a Gentleman would not attempt to penetrate unbecomingly, through the Disguises that a Lady thinks proper to assume; especially at such a Place, where every Inquiry should begin and end.

This, Madam, from a Lady, who had unmask'd — because she would not be known! — Very pretty, indeed!—Oh! these slight Cobweb Airs of Modesty!

K 5

so easily seen thro'-Hence such Advantages against

us are taken by the Men.

She had looked out of her Window, and feen no Arms quarter'd with his own; for you know, my Lady, I would never permit any to be procured for me: So, she doubted not, it feems, but he was an unmarried Gentleman, as he had intimated to her

the Night before.

He told her, it was impossible, after having had the Opportunity of seeing the finest Lady in the World, not to wish to see her again; and that he hop'd he did not, unbecomingly, break through her Ladyship's Reserves: Nor had he made any Inquiries either on the Spot, or off of it; having had a much better Direction by Accident.

As how, Sir? faid she, as he told me, with so bewitching an Air, between Attentive and Pleasant, that, bold Gentleman, forgetting all manner of Distance, so early too! he clasped his Arms round her Waist, and saluted her, struggling with Anger and Indignation, he says: But I think little of that!

Whence this Insolence?—How-now, Sir!—Begone! were her Words, and the rung the Bell; but he set his Back against the Door—(I never heard such Boldness in my Life, Madam!)—till she would forgive him.—And it is plain, she was not so angry as the pretended; for her Woman coming, she was calmer: Nelthorpe, said she, setch my Snuff-box, with the Lavender in it.

Her Woman went; and then she said, You told me, Sir, last Night, of your Intrepidness: I think you are the boldest Man I over met with: But, Sir, furely you ought to know, that you are not now in

the Hay-Market.

I think, truly, Madam, the Lady might have fav'd herfelf that Speech; for, upon my Word, they neither of them wore Masks.—Tho', they ought both to have put on one of Blushes.—I am sure I do for them, while I am writing.

Her

Her irrefistible Loveliness served for an Excuses that she could not disapprove from a Man she disliked not; and his irresistible—may I say, Assurance, Madam?—found too ready an Excuse.

Well, but, Sir, faid I, pray, when her Ladyship was made acquainted that you were a married Gentleman, how then?—I long to hear, how then?—Pray, did she find it out, or did you tell her?

Patience, my Dear!

0

n

r

d

e

r

h

0

d

1

Well, pray, Sir, go on .- What was next?

Why, next, I put on a more respectful and tender Air: I would have taken her Hand indeed, but the would not permit it; and when she saw I would not go till her Lavender Snuff came down, (for fo I told her, and her Woman was not in haste) she seated herfelf; and I took my Place by her, and began to upon a Subject of a charming Lady I faw the Night before, after I had parted with her Ladyship, but not equal by any means to her: And I was confident this would engage her Attention; for I never knew the Lady, who thought herself handsome, that was not taken by this Topick. Flattery and Admiration, Pamela, are the two principal Engines by which our Sex make their first Approaches to yours; and if you liften to us, we are fure, either by the Sap or the Mine, to succeed, and blow you up whenever we please, if we do but take care to suit ourselves to your particular Foibles; or to carry on the Metaphor, point our Batteries to your weak Side: For the strongest Fortrelles, my Dear, are weaker in one Place than another - A fine thing, Sir, faid. I, to be so learned a Gentleman! --- I wish, however, thought I, you had always come honeftly by your Knowledge.

When the Lavender Snuff came down, continu'd he, we were engaged in an agreeable Disputation, which I had raised on purpose to excite her Opposition, she having all the Advantage in it; and in order

to my giving it up, when she was intent upon it; as

a Mark of my Confideration for her.

I the less wonder, Sir, said I, at your Boldness (pardon the Word!) with such a Lady, in your first Visit, because of her Freedoms, when mask'd; her Unmasking and her Handkerchief, and Letter-cover. To be sure the Lady, when she saw next Day, such a fine Gentleman, and such an handsome Equipage, had little Reason, after her other Freedoms, to be so very nice with you, as to decline an insnaring Conversation, calculated on purpose to engage her Attention, and to lengthen out your Visit. But did she not ask you who you were?

Her Servants did of mine. — And her Woman (for I knew all afterwards, when we were better acquainted) came, and whisper'd her Lady, that I was Mr. B. of Bedfordsbire; and had an immense Estate, to which they were so kind as to add two or three thousand Pounds a Year, out of pure Good-will to

me: I thank them.

But pray, dear Sir, what had you in View in all this? Did you intend to carry this Matter at first,

as far as ever you could?

I had, at first, my Dear, no View, but such as Pride and Vanity suggested to me. I was carried away by Inconsideration, and the Love of Intrigue, without so much as giving myself any Thought about the Consequences. The Lady, I observed, had abundance of fine Qualities. I thought I could converse with her, on a very agreeable Foot; and her Honour I knew, at any Time, would preserve memine, if ever I should find it in Danger: And, in my Soul, I preserved my Pamela to all the Ladies on Earth, and question'd not, but that, and your Virtue, would be another Barrier to my Fidelity.

As to the Notion of Polygamy, I never, but in the Levity of Speech, and the Wantonness of Argument, like other lively young Fellows, who think

they

they have Wit to shew, when they advance something out of the common Way, had it in my Head. I thought myself doubly bound by the Laws of my Country, to discourage that way of Thinking, as I was a Five hundredth Part of one of the Branches of the Legislature; and, inconsiderable as that is, yet it makes one too considerable, in my Opinion, to break those Laws one should rather join all one's Interest to inforce.

In a Word, therefore, Pride, Vanity, Thoughtleffness, were my Misguiders, as I said. The Countess's Honour and Character, and your Virtue and Merit, my Dear, and my Obligations to you, were my Desences: But I find one should avoid the first Appearances of Evil. One knows not one's own Strength. Tis presumptuous to depend upon it, where Wit and Beauty are in the Way on one Side, and

Youth and strong Passions on the other.

You certainly, Sir, fay right. But be pleased to tell me what her Ladyship said when she knew you.

were marry'd?

1

1

The Countess's Woman was in my Interest, and let me into some of her Lady's Secrets, having a great Share in her Considence; and particularly acquainted me, how loth her Lady was to believe I was marry'd. I had paid her Three Visits in Town, and attended her once to her Seat upon the Forest, before she heard that I was. But when she was assured of it, and directed her Nelthorpe to ask me about it, and I readily own'd it, she was greatly incensed, tho' nothing but general Civilities, and Intimacies not inconsistent with honourable Friendship, had passed between us. The Consequence was, she forbad my ever seeing her again, and set out with her Sister and the Viscount for Tunbridge, where she stay'd about Three Weeks.

I thought I had already gone too far, and blam'd myself for permitting her Ladyship so long to believe

me a fingle Man; and here the Matter had dropp'd, in all Probability, had not a Ball, given by my Lord, to which, unknown to each other, we were both, as also the Viscounters, invited, brought us again into one another's Company. The Lady withdrew, after a while, with her Sister, to another Apartment; and being resolv'd upon personal Recrimination, (which is what a Lady, who is resolved to break with a favoured Object, should never trust herself with) sent for me, and reproached me on my Conduct, in

which her Sister join'd.

I own'd frankly, that it was rather Gaiety than Defign, that made me give Cause, at the Masquerade, for her Ladyship to think I was not marry'd; for that I had a Wise, who had a thousand Excellencies, and was my Pride, and my Boast: That I held it very possible for a Gentleman and Lady to carry on an innocent and honourable Friendship, in a Family way; and I was sure, when she and her Sister saw my Spouse, they would not be displeased with her Acquaintance; and all that I had to reproach myself with, was, that after having, at the Masquerade, given Reason to think I was not marry'd, I had been loth, officiously, to say I was, altho' it never was my Intention to conceal it.

In short, I acquitted myself so well with both La-

dies, that a Family Intimacy was confented to.

I renew'd my Visits; and we accounted to one another's Honour, by entering upon a kind of Platonick System, in which Sex was to have no manner of Concern.

But, my dear Pamela, I must own myself extremely blameable, because I knew the World, and human Nature, I will say better than the Lady, who never before had been trusted into it upon her own Feet; and who, notwithstanding that Wit and Vivacity which every one admires in her, gave herself little Time for Consideration, as she had met with

with a Man, whose Person and Conversation she did not dislike, and whose Circumstances and Spirit set him above sordid or mercenary Views: And besides, I made myself useful to her in some of her Affairs, wherein she had been grossly abused; which brought us into more intimate and frequent Conversations than otherwise we should have had Opportunities for.

n

;

h

)

n

n

Ī

0

n

r

đ

8

•

e

r

1

I ought therefore to have more carefully guarded against Inconveniencies, which I knewwere so likely to arise from such Intimacies; and the rather, as I hinted, because the Lady had no Apprehension at all of any: So that, my Dear, if I have no Excuse from human Frailty, from Youth, and the Charms

I fee Mr. B. faid I, there is a great deal to be faid for the Lady. I wish I could fay there was for the Gentleman. But such a fine Lady had been safe, with all her Inconsideration, and so, forgive me, Sir, would the Gentleman, with all his intriguing Spirit, had it not been for these vile Masquerades. Never, dear Sir, think of going to another.

Why, my Dear, he was pleased to say, those are least of all to be trusted at these Diversions, who are most desirous to go to them.—Of this I am now fully convinced.

Well, Sir, I long to hear the further Particulars of this Story: For this generous Openness, now the Affair is over, cannot but be grateful to me, as it shews me you have no Reserves, and as it tends to convince me, that the Lady was less blameable than I apprehended she was: For dearly do I love, for the Honour of my Sex, to find Ladies of Birth and Quality innocent; who have so many Opportunities of knowing and practising their Duties, above what meaner Persons can have.—Else, while the one sails thro' Surprize and Ignorance, it will look as if the others were faulty from Inclination: And what a Dis-

a Difgrace is that upon the Sex in general? And what a Triumph to the wicked ones of yours?

Well observed, my Dear : This is like your gene-

rous and deep way of thinking.

Well, but, dear Sir, proceed, if you please-Your Reconciliation is now effected: A Friendship Qua. drupartite is commenced. And the Viscountess and myself are to find Cement for the erecting of an Edifice, that is to be devoted to Platonick Love. What, may I ask, came next? And what did you

defign should come of it?

The Oxford Journey, my Dear, followed next; and it was my Fault that you were not a Party in it: For both Ladies were very defirous of your Company: But it being about the Time you were going abroad, after your Lying-in, I excused you to them. Yet they both long'd to fee you; especially, as by this Time, you may believe, they knew all your Story: And besides, whenever you were mention'd, I always did Justice, as well to your Mind, as to your Person; and this, not only for the Sake of Justice, but, to fay Truth, because it gave the Two Sisters, and the Viscount, (whose softly Character, and his Lady's prudent and respectful Conduct to him, notwithstanding that, are both so well known) less Cause of Suspicion, that I had any dishonourable Designs upon the Dowager Lady.

Miss Darnford will have it, permit me, my good Lady to observe, that I shall have some Merit, with regard to the rest of my Sex, if I can be a means to reform such a dangerous Spirit of Intrigue as that of your dear Brother: And the History of this Affair from his own Mouth, made me begin to pride myself on this Head: For was he not, think you, Madam, in this Case, a sad Man? ——And how deeply was he able to lay his Mischiefs! And how much had this fine Lady been to be pity'd, had had she fallen by his Arts; as he was almost the only Man, who, by reason of the Gracefulness of his Person, his Generosity, Courage, ample Fortunes, and Wit, could have made her unhappy —God be praised, that it was stopped in Time, (altho, as it seems, but just in Time) as well for the poor Lady's

fake, as for Mr. B.'s, and my own!

r

İ

1

y

Ç

r

,

5

0.

t

e

,

Excuse me, Madam, for this Digression. But yet, for what I am going to repeat, I shall still want farther Excuse; for I cannot resist a little rising Vanity, upon a Comparison (tho' only as to Features) drawn by Mr. B. between the Countess and me; which, however the Preference he gives me in it, may be undeserv'd, yet it cannot but be very agreeable, in this particular Case of a Rivalry, to one who takes so much Pride in his good Opinion, and who makes it her chief Study, by all honest and laudable Means, to preserve it; but who, else, I hope, am far from considering such a transitory Advantage, (had I it in as great a Degree as his kind Fancy imputes it to me) but as it deserves. I will give it, as near as I can, in his own Words:

It may not be altogether amis, my Dear, now I have mention'd the Justice I always did your Character and Merit, to give you a brief Account of a Comparison, which once the Countess's Curiosity drew from me, between your Features and hers.

She and I were alone in the Bow-window of her Library, which commands a fine View over Windfor Forest, but which View we could not enjoy; for it rain'd, and blew a Hurricane almost, which detain'd us within, altho' we were ready dress'd to go abroad.

I began a Subject, which never fails to make the worst of Weather agreeable to a fine Lady; that of praising her Beauty, and the Symmetry of her Features, telling her, how much I thought every graceful one in her Face adorn'd the rest, as if they were

all form'd to give and receive Advantage from each other. I added, approaching her, as if the more attentively to peruse her fine Face, that I believ'd it possible, from the transparent Whiteness of her Skin, and the clear Blueness of her Veins, to discover the

Circulation, without a Microscope.

Keep your Distance, Mr. B. said she. Does your magnifying thus egregiously the Graces you impute to my outward Form, agree with your Platonick Scheme? Your Eye, penetrating as you imagine it to be, pierces not deep enough for a Platonick, if you cannot look farther than the White, and the Blue, and discover the Circulation of the Spirit; for our Friendship is all Mind, you know.

I

n

h

1

cl

W

10

of

fh

A

it

to

True, Madam; but if the Face is the Index of the Mind, when I contemplate yours, I see and revere the Beauties of both in one. And what Platonick Laws forbid us to do Justice to the one, when we

admire the other?

Well, sit you down, bold Mr. B. sit you down and answer me a Question or two on this Subject, since you will be always raising my Vanity upon it.

I did, saluting her Hand only; that was his Word, which I took notice of in the dear Platonick, tho' I

faid nothing.

Tell me now of a Truth, with all the Charms your too agreeable Flattery gives me, which is the most lovely, your Pamela, or myself?

I told her, you were both incomparable, in a

different Way.

Well, said she, I give up the Person and Air in general, because I have heard, that she is stenderer, and better shap'd, than most Ladies; but for a few Particulars, as to Face, (invidious as the Comparison may be, and concerned as you are to justify your Choice) I'll begin with the Hair, Mr. B. Whose HAIR is of most Advantage to her Complexion?—Come, I fancy, I shall, at least, divide Persections with your Pamela.

Your Ladyship's delicate light Brown is extremely beautiful, and infinitely better becomes your Complexion and Features, than would that lovely shineing Auburn, which suits best with my Girl's.

You must know, Pamela, I always called you my Girl, to her, as I do frequently to yourself and others.

So fhe excels me there I find!

I don't fay fo.

h

re

it

1,

e

r

e

k

it

u

r

e

e

Well, but as to the FOREHEAD, Mr. B.?

Indeed, Madam, my Girl has some Advantage, I presume to think, in her Forehead: She has a noble Openness and Freedom there, which bespeaks her Mind, and every body's Favour, the Moment she appears: Not but that your Ladyship's, next to hers, is the finest I ever saw.

So !- Next to hers! rubbing her Forehead-Well,

Brows, Mr. B.?

Your Ladyship's fine Arch-Brow is a Beauty in your fair Face, that a Pencil cannot imitate; but then your fairer Hair shews it not to that Advantage, I must needs say, which her darker Hair gives to hers; for, as to COMPLEXION, you are both so charmingly fair, that I cannot, for my life, tell to which to give the Preference.

Well, well, foolish Man, said she, peevishly, thou art strangely taken with thy Girl!—I wish thou wouldst go about thy Business—What signifies a little bad Weather to Men?—But if her Complexion is as good as mine, it must look better, because of her dark Hair.—I shall come poorly off, I find!—

Let's have the EYES, however.

for black Eyes in my Girl, and blue in your Ladyship, they are both the loveliest I ever beheld.—
And, Pamela, I was wicked enough to say, That
it would be the sweetest Travelling in the World,
to have you both placed at Fifty Miles Distance from
each other, and to pass the Prime of one's Life
from Black to Blue, and from Blue to Black; and

it would be impossible to know which to prefer, but the present.

Ah! naughty Mr. B. said I, were you not worse

than the Countess a great deal?

The Countess is not bad, my Dear. I only was in Fault.

But what, Sir, did the fay to you?

Say! Why the faucy Lady did what very few Ladies have ever done: She made the Powder fly out of my Wig, by a smart Cuff, with her nimble Fingers.

P

p

1

i

I

F

t

S

And how, Sir, did you take that?

How, my Dear!—Why I kis'd her in Revenge. Fine Doings between Two Platenicks! thought I. But I will own to you, Madam, that my Vanity in this Comparison, was too much soothed, not to wish to hear how it was carried on.

Well, Sir, did you proceed further in your Com-

parison?

I knew, my Dear, you would not let me finish at half your Picture—O Pamela—Who says, you are absolutely perfect? Who says, there is no Sex in your Mind! and tapp'd my Neck.

All is owing, Sir, to the Pride I take in your Opinion. I care not how indifferent I appear in the

Eyes of all the World besides.

The CHEEK came next, proceeded Mr. B. I allow'd her Ladyship to have a livelier Carmine in hers; and that it was somewhat rounder, her Ladyship being a little plumper than my Girl; but that your Face my Dear, being rather smaller seatur'd of the two, there was an inimitably finer Turn in your Cheek, than I had ever seen in my Life, in any Lady's.

Her Ladyship, he said, stroked her Cheek-bones, which, however, Madam, I think, are far from being bigh, (the to be sure, she is a little larger featur'd, in excellent Proportion, for all that, as she is of a taller

well, Sir; you are determin'd to mortify me. But, added her Ladyship, (which shewed, Madam, she little depended upon Platonicism in him) if you have a View in this, you will be greatly mistaken, I'll assure you: For, let me tell you, Sir, the Lady who can think meanly of herself, is any Man's Purchase.

The Nose I left in doubt, faid Mr. B. but allow'd that each were exquifitely beautiful on its own pro-

per Face.

ut

fe

23

W

Av

ole

e.

I,

ty

to

n-

at

re

ur

ur

he

I

in

y-

at 'd

in

ny

8,

ış

d,

er

Her Ladyship was sure of a Preference in her Mouth. I allow'd that her Lips were somewhat plumper—and saluting her by Surprize, (for which I had much ado to preserve my Wig from another Disorder—) a little softer of Consequence; but not quite so red—for, said I, I never saw a Lip of so rich and balmy a Red in my Life as my Girl's.

But your SMILES, Madam are more bewitchingly free and attractive; for my Girl is a little too

grave.

As to TEETH, charming as your Ladyship's are, I think hers not a whit inferior in Whiteness and

Regularity.

Her CHIN is a fweet Addition to her Face, by that easy soft half Round, that looks as if Nature had begun at Top, and gave that as her finishing Stroke to the rest: While, my dear Lady, yours is a little, little too strong featur'd; but such as so infinitely becomes your Face, that my Girl's Chin would not have half the Beauty upon your Face.

Her EARs, my Lady, are just such as your own:— Must they not be beautiful then? Her NECK, tho' it must not presume—let me see, Madam, approaching her—(Keep your Distance, Sir. I was forc'd to do so)—tho' it must not pretend to excel yours for Whiteness, yet, except yours, did I never see any Neck so beautiful. But your Ladyship, it must be

con-

confess'd, being a little plumper in Person, has the Advantage bere.

I had a smart Rap on my Knuckles with her Fan, And she would hear no more. But was resolv'd she

would fee you, she said.

And, my Dear, I am the more particular in repeating this comparative Description of the Two charmingest Persons in England, because you will fee the Reason, (and that it was not to insult you, as you rightly judg'd in your Letter to my Sifter*, but to your Advantage) that I gave way to the Importunity of the Countess to see you; for I little thought you were so well acquainted with our Intimacy; much less, that we had been made more intimate, to you, than ever, in Truth, we were, or perhaps, might have been: And when I asked you, Why you were not more richly dress'd, and had not your Jewels, you may believe, (as I had no Reason to doubt that the Countess would come in all her Ornaments) I was not willing my Girl should give way to the noble Emulatress in any Thing; being concern'd for your own Honour, as well as mine, in the Superiority of Beauty I had so justly given you.

Well, Sir, to be sure, this was kind, very kind; and little was I disposed, (knowing what I knew) to pass so favourable a Construction on your Genero-

fity to me.

My Question to her Ladyship, continu'd Mr. B. at going away, Whether you were not the charming's Girl in the World, which, seeing you together at one View, rich as she was drest, and plain as you, gave me the double Pleasure (a Pleasure she said afterwards I exulted in) of deciding in your Favour; my Readiness to explain to you what we both said, and her not ungenerous Answer, I thought would have.

n

m

h

^{*} See p. 155. l. 26.

have intitled me to a better Return than a Flood of Tears; which confirm'd me, that your past Uneasiness was a Jealousy, I was not willing to allow in you; tho' I should have been more indulgent to it, had I known the Grounds you thought you had for it; and this was the Reason of my leaving you so abruptly as I did.

Here, Madam, Mr. B. broke off, referring to another time the Conclusion of his Narrative. And, having written a great deal, I will here also close this Letter (tho' possibly I may not send it, till I send the Conclusion of this Story in my next) with the As-

furance, that I am

he

n. he

re-

vill ou,

*,

m-

tle

th

ore

or ou, not

fon her ive

ne,

ven

id;

to

ro-

. at

g'ft

at

ou,

aid

ur;

aid,

uld

ave.

Your Ladyship's obliged Sister and Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XXXVI.

My dear Lady,

Now I will proceed with my former Subject; and with the greater Pleasure, as what follows makes still more in favour of the Countess's Character, than what went before, altho' that set it in a better Light than it had at once appeared to me in.

I hegan, as follows:

Will you be pleased, Sir, to favour me with the Continuation of our last Subject? I will, my Dear. You lest off, Sir, with acquitting me (as knowing what I knew) for breaking out into that Flood of Tears, which occasioned your abrupt Departure. But, dear Sir, will you be pleased to satisfy me about that affecting Information, of your Intention and my Lady's, to live at Tunbridge together?

'Tis absolutely Malice and Falsehood. Our Intimacy had not proceeded so far; and, thoughtless as my Sister's Letters suppose the Lady, she would

have spurn'd at such a Preposal, I dare say.

Well,

Well, but then, Sir, as to the Expression to her Uncle, that she had rather have been a certain Gen-

tleman's second Wife?

I believe the might, in a Passion, say something like it to him: He had been teizing her (from the time that I held an Argument in Favour of that soolish Topick Polygamy, in his Company, and his Niece's, and in that of her Sister and the Viscount) with Cautions against conversing with a Man, who having, as he was pleased to say behind my Back, marry'd beneath him, wanted to engage the Affections of a Lady of Birth, in order to recover, by doubling the Fault upon her, the Reputation he had lost.

She despis'd his Infinuation enough to answer him, That she thought my Arguments in behalf of Polygamy were convincing. This set him a raving; and he threw some coarse Reslections upon her, which could not be repeated, if one may guess at them, by her being unable to tell me what they were; and then, to vex him more, and to revenge herself, she said something like what was reported: And this was Handle enough for her Uncle, who took care to propagate it with an Indiscretion peculiar to himself; for I heard of it in three different Companies, before I knew any thing of it from herself; and when I did, it was so repeated, as you, my Dear, would hardly have censur'd her for it, the Provocation consider'd.

Well, but then, dear Sir, there is nothing at all amis, at this Rate, in the Correspondence between

my Lady and you?

Not on her Side, I dare say, if her Ladyship can be excused to Punctilio, and for having a greater Esteem for a marry'd Man, than he can deserve, or than may be strictly desended to a Person of your Purity and Niceness.

Well, Sir, this is very noble in you. I love to hear the Gentlemen generous in Points where the Honour

her

en-

ing

the

lish

e's,

vith

nav-

nar-

ions

ling

fwer

lf of

mg;

hich, by

and

this

care

him-

mpa-

rfelf;

, the

at all

ween

p can

reater

ferve,

o hear

onour

of

of our Sex is concern'd. But, pray, Sir, what then was there on your Side, in that Matter, that made you give me so patient and so kind a Hearing?

Now, my Dear, you come to the Point: At first it was, as I have faid before, nothing in me but Vanity, Pride, and Love of Intrigue, to try my Strength, where I had met with fome Encouragement, as I thought, at the Masquerade; where the Lady went farther too than she would have done, had she not thought I was a fingle Man. For, by what I have told you, Pamela, you will observe, that she endeayour'd to fatisfy herfelf on that Head, as foon as she well could. Mrs. Nelthorpe acquainted me afterwards, when we were better known to each other, that her Lady was so partial in my Favour, (Who can always govern their Fancies, my Dear?) as to think, so early as at the Masquerade, that if every thing answered Appearances, and that I were a single Man, she, who has a noble and independent Fortune, might possibly be induc'd to make me happy in her Choice.

Supposing then, that I was unmarry'd, she left a Signal for me in her Handkerchief. I visited her; had the Honour, after the customary first Shyness, of being well received by her; and continued my Visits, till, perhaps, she would have been glad I had not been marry'd: But, when she found I was, she avoided me, as I have told you, till the Accident I mention'd threw us again upon each other; which renew'd our Intimacy upon Terms, which you would think too inconsiderate on one Side, and too designing on the other.

For myself, what can I say? Only that you gave me great Disgusts (without Cause, as I thought) by your unwonted Reception of me: Ever in Tears and Grief; the Countess ever cheerful and lively: And apprehending that your Temper was intirely thanging, I believ'd I had no bad Excuse to endeavour. IV.

vour to make myfelf easy and cheerful abroad, fince my Home became more irksome to me than ever I believ'd it could be. Then, as we naturally love those who love us, I had Vanity, and some Reason for my Vanity, (indeed all vain Men believe they have) to think the Countess had more than an indifference for me. She was so exasperated by the wrong Methods taken with an independent Lady of her generous Spirit, to break off the Acquaintance with me, that, in Revenge, the deny'd me less than ever Opportunities of her Company. The Pleafure we took in each other's Conversation was recipro-The World's Reports had united us in one common Cause; and you, as I said, had made Home less delightful to me than it used to be: What might not then have been apprehended from fo many Circumstances concurring with the Lady's Beauty and my Frailty?

I waited on her to Tunbridge. She took a House there. Where Peoples Tongues will take so much Liberty, when they have no Foundation for it at all, and where the utmost Circumspection is used, what will they not say, where so little of the latter is observ'd? No wonder then, that Terms were said to be agreed upon between us: From her Uncle's Story, of Palygamy propos'd by me, and seemingly agreed to by her, no wonder that all your Thomasine Fuller's

Information was furmifed.

And thus stood the Matter, when I was determin'd to give your Cause for Uneasiness a Hearing, and to take my Measures according to what should result from that Hearing.

From this Account, dear Sir, said I, it will not be so difficult, as I was afraid it would be, to end this

Affair, even to her Ladysbip's Satisfaction.

I hope not, my Dear.

But if, now, Sir, the Counters should still be defirous not to break with you; from so charming a Lady, who knows what may happen! Very nce

r I ove

(o)

ney

inthe

y of

nce

han

ure

one

ome

hat

any

uty

oule

uch

all,

vhat

cb-

o be

ory,

reed

ler's

in'd

d to

efult

ot be

this

de-

Very

Very true, Pamela: But, to make you still easier, I will tell you, that her Ladyship has a first Cousin marry'd to a Person going with a publick Character to several of the Italian Courts; and had it not been for my Persuasions, she would have accepted of their earnest Invitations, and pass'd a Year or two in Italy, where she once resided for three Years together, which makes her so persect a Mistress of Italian.

Now I will let her know, additionally to what I have written to her, the Uneafiness I have given you, and, fo far as it is proper, what is come to your Ears, and your generous Account of her, and the Charms of her Person, of which she will not be a little proud; for the has really noble and generous Sentiments, and thinks well (tho' her Sifter, in Pleafantry, will have it, a little enviously) of you: And when I shall endeavour to persuade her to go, for the sake of her own Character, to a Place and Country of which she was always fond, I am apt to think she will come into it; for the has a greater Opinion of my Judgment than it deferves: And I know a young Lord, who may be easily perfuaded to follow her thither, and bring her back his Lady, if he can obtain her Consent: And what say you, Pamela, to this?

O, Sir! I believe I shall begin to love the Lady dearly, and that is what I never thought I should. I

hope this will be brought about.

But I fee, give me leave to fay, Sir, how dangeroully you might have gone on, both you and the Lady, under the Notion of this *Platonick* Love, till two precious Souls might have been lost: And this shews one, as well in Spirituals as Temporals, from what slight Beginnings the greatest Mischies sometimes spring; and how easily at first a Breach may be stopp'd, that, when neglected, the Waves of Passion will widen till they bear down all before them.

Your Observation, my Dear, is just, replied Mr. B. and the I am consident the Lady was more in

L 2

earnest

earnest than myself in the Notion of Platonick Love. yet am I convinc'd, and always was, that Platonick Love is Platonick Nonfense: 'Tis the Fly buzzing about the Blaze, till its Wings are scorch'd: Or, to speak still stronger, it is a Bait of the Devil to catch the Unexperienc'd and Thoughtless: Nor ought fuch Notions to be pretended to, till the Parties are five or ten Years on the other Side of their Grand Climacteric: For Age, Old Age, and nothing else must establish the Barriers to Platonick Love, But, continued he, this was my comparative Confolation, though a very bad one, that had I fwerv'd, I should not have given the only Instance, where perfons more scrupulous than I pretend to be, have be gun Friendships even with spiritual Views, and ended them as grossly as I could have done, were the Lady to have been as frail as her Tempter.

Here, Madam, Mr. B. finished his Narrative. He is now set out for Tunbridge with all my Papers. I have no Doubt in his Honour, and kind Assurances, and hope my next will be a joyful Letter; and that I shall inform you in it, that the Assair which went so near my Heart, is absolutely concluded to my Satisfaction, to Mr. B.'s, and to the Countess's; for if it be so to all three, my Happiness, I doubt not, will be sounded on a permanent Basis. Mean time I am,

my dear good Lady,

Your most affectionate, and obliged Sister and Servant,

P. B.

ti

of

be

Si

up

rai

fin

LETTER XXXVII.

A NEW Misfortune, my dear Lady!—But this is of God Almighty's fending; so must bear it patiently. My dear Baby is taken with the Small-pox!

pox! To how many Troubles are the happiest of us subjected in this Life! One need not multiply them by one's own wilful Mismanagements!—I am able to

mind nothing else!

I

e

d

e

e

I,

t

it

if

11

I had so much Joy (as I told your Ladyship in the Beginning of my last Letter but one) to see, on our Arrival at the Farm-house, my dearest Mr. B. my beloved Baby, and my good Father and Mother, all upon one happy Spot together, that I fear I was too proud.—Yet I was truly thankful—I am sure I was!

—But I had, notwithstanding, too much Pride, and

too much Pleasure, on this happy Occasion.

I told your Ladyship, in my last, that your dear Brother set out on Tuesday Morning for Tunbridge with my Papers: And I was longing to know the Result, hoping that every thing would be concluded to the Satisfaction of all three: For, thought I, if this be so, my Happiness must be permanent: But, alas! alas! there is nothing permanent in this Life. I feel it by Experience now!—I knew it before by Theory! But that was not so near and so interesting by half!

For, in the Midst of all my Pleasures and Hopes; in the Midst of my dear Parents Joy and Congratulations on our Arrival, and on what had passed so happily since we were last here together, (in the Birth of the dear Child, and my Sasety, for which they had been so apprehensive) the poor Baby was taken ill. It was on that very Tuesday Asternoon his Papa set out for Tunbridge: But we knew not it would be the Small-pox till Thursday. O Madam! how are all the Pleasures I had form'd to myself sicken'd now

upon me! for my Billy is very bad.

They talk of a kind Sort; but, alas! they talk at random: for they come not out at all! How then can they fay they are kind?—I fear the Nurse's Conflitution is too hale and too rich for the dear Baby!—Had I been permitted—But, hush! all my repin—

L 3

ing Ifs!—Except one If; and that is,— If it be got happily over, it will be best he had it so young, and while at the Breast!

Oh! Madam, Madam! The small Appearance that there was, is gone in again: And my Child, my dear Baby, will die!—The Doctors seem to think so.

They want to fend for Mr. B. to keep me from him!—But I forbid it?—For what signifies Life or any thing, if I cannot see my Baby, while he is so

dangeroully ill!

My Father and Mother are, for the first time, quite cruel to me; they have forbid me, and I never was fo desirous of disobeying them before, to attend the Darling of my Heart: And why?-For fear of this poor Face !- For fear I should get it myself! - But I am living low, very low, and have taken proper Precautions by Bleeding, and the like, to leffen the Distemper's Fury, if I should have it: And the rest I leave to Providence. And if Mr. B.'s Value is confin'd fo much to this poor transitory Sightliness, he must not break with his Countess, I think; and if I am ever so deform'd in Person, my poor Intellects, I hope, will not be impaired, and I shall, if God spare my Billy, be useful in his first Education, and be helpful to dear Miss Goodwin-or to any Babies - with all my Heart - he may make me an humble Nurse to! - How peevish, finfully so, I doubt, does this Accident, and their affectionate Contradiction, make one!

I have this Moment received the following from

Mr. B.

My dearest Love, Maidstone.

AM greatly touched with the dear Boy's Malady, of which I have this Moment heard. I defire you instantly to come to me hither, in the

Chariot, with the Bearer Colbrand. I know what your Grief must be: But as you can do the Child

ot

nd

ce

ny

m

or

ite

vas the his

But

per

he

ue

li-

k;

or all,

ca-

ny an

bt,

ic-

om

ne.

la-

the

hat ild no on Good, I beg you'll oblige me. Every thing is in a happy Train; but I can think of nobody but you, and (for your fake principally, but not a little for my own) my Boy. I will fet out to meet you; for I choose not to come myself, lest you should endeavour to persuade me to permit your tarrying about him; and I should be forry to deny you any thing. I have taken here handsome Apartments for you, till the Event, which I pray God may be happy, shall better determine me what to do. I will be ever

· Your affectionate and faithful?

Maidstone indeed is not so very far off, but one may hear every Day once or twice, by a Man and Horse; so I will go, to shew my Obedience, since Mr. B. is so intent upon it—But I cannot live, if I am not permitted to come back. — Oh! let me be enabled, gracious Father! to close this Letter more happily than I have begun it!

I have been so dreadfully uneasy at Maidstone, that Mr. B. has been so good as to return with me hither; and I find my Baby's Case not yet quite desperate.—I am easier now I see him, in Presence of his beloved Papa—who lets me have all my Way, and approves of my preparative Method for myself; and he tells me, that, fince I will have it so, he will indulge me in my Attendance on the Child, and endeavour to imitate my Reliance on God—that is his kind Expression, — and leave the Issue to him. And on my telling him, that I feared nothing in the Diffemper, but the Loss of his Love, he said, in Presence of the Doctors, and my Father and Mother, pressing my Hand to his Lips, My dearest Life, make yourself easy under this Affliction, and apprehend nothing for yourfelf: I love you more for your Mind than for your Face. That and your Person. L 4 will

will be the same; and were that sweet Face to be cover'd with Seams and Scars, I will value you the more for the Missortune: And glad I am, that I had your Picture so well drawn in Town, to satisfy those who have heard of your Loveliness, what you were, and hitherto are. For myself, my Admiration lies deeper; and, drawing me to the other End of the Room, whisperingly he said, The last Uneasiness between us, I now begin to think, was necessary, because it has turned all my Delight in you, more than ever, to the Persections of your Mind; and so God preserves to me the Life of my Pamela, I care not, for my own Part, what ravages the Distemper makes here; and tapp'd my Cheek.

How generous, how noble, how comforting was this! — I will make this Use of it; I will now be refigned more and more to this Dispensation, and prepare myself for the worst; for it is the Dispensation of that GoD, who gave me my Baby, and all

I have!

When I retir'd, the Reflections which I made, on supposing the worst, gave Birth to the following serious Lines (for I cannot live without a Pen in my Hand) written, as by a third Person, suppose a good Minister. Your Ladyship will be pleased to give them your favourable Allowances.

Tell me, fend weeping Parent, why
Theu fear'ft so much thy Child should die?
'Tis true, the' human Frailty may,
Yet Reason can't, have much to say.
What is it thou thyself hast found
In this dull, heavy, tiresome Round
Of Life—to make thee wish thy Son
Should thro' the like dark Mazes run?

Suppose the worst!—'Twill end thy Fears, And free thee from a world of Cares.

For,

th

For, Oh! what anxious Thoughts arise From hopefull'st Youths, to damp our Joys? Who, from the Morning's brightest Ray, Can promise, what will be the Day?

When I went from my Apartment, to go to my Child, my dear Mr. B. met me at the Nursery Door, and led me back again. You must not go in again, my Dearest. They have just been giving the Child other things to try to drive out the Malady; and some Pustules seem to promise on his Breast. I made no Doubt, my Baby was then in Extremity; and I would have given the World to have shed a few Tears, but I could not.

With the most soothing Goodness he led me to my Desk, and withdrew to attend the dear Baby himself;—to see his last Gaspings, poor little Lamb,

I make no doubt!

be

he

I

DU

on

of fi-

ef-

u,

d;

if-

as be

nd n-

all

e-

od

ve

This Suspense, and my own strange Hardness of Heart, that would not give up one Tear, (for the Passage from that to my Eyes seemed quite choak'd up, which used to be so open and ready on other Occasions, affecting ones too) produced these Lines:

Why does my full-swoln Heart deny
The Tear, relief-ful, to my Eye?
If all my foys are pass'd away,
And thou, dear Boy, to Parent Clay
Art hasting, the last Debt to pay;
Resign me to thy Will, my God:
Let me, with Patience, bear this Rod.
However heavy be the Stroke,
If thou wilt not his Doom revoke,
Let me all sinful Anguish shun,
And say, resign'd, Thy Will be done!

Two Days have pass'd, dreadful Days of Suspense! and now, blessed be Gon! who has given me Hope that our Prayers are heard, the Pustules come kindly

L 5

out.

out, very thick in his Breaft, and on his Face; but of a good Sort, they tell me. - They won't let me fee him; indeed they won't !- What cruel Kindness is

this! One must believe all they tell one!

But, my dear Lady, my Spirits are so weak; I have fuch a violent Head-ach, and have fuch a strange shivering Disorder all running down my Back, and I was so hot just now, and am so cold at this present - Aguishly inclin'd - I don't know how !- that I must leave off, the Post going away, with the Affurance, that I am, and will be to the last Hour of my Life,

> Your Ladyship's grateful and obliged Sifter and Servant,

> > P. B.

LETTER XXXVIII.

From Mr. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My dear Sifter,

Take very kindly your Solicitude for the Health of my beloved Pamela. The last Line she wrote, was to you; for the took to her Bed the Moment the laid down her Pen.

I told her your kind Message, and Wishes for her Safety, by my Lord's Gentleman; and she begg'd ! would write a Line to thank you in her Name for

your affectionate Regards to her.

She is in a fine way to do well: For, with her accustomed Prudence, she had begun to prepare herfelf by a proper Regimen, the Moment the knew the Child's Illness was the Small-pox.

The worst is over with the Boy, which keeps up her Spirits; and her Mother is to excellent a Nune

but

fee is is

h a

my d at

now

the

t,

. B.

alth

ote,

t the

her

'd I

e for

her-

the !

s up

to both, and we are so happy likewise in the Care of a skilful Physician, Dr. M. (who directs and approves of every thing the good Dame does) that it is a singular Providence this Malady seized them here; and affords no small Comfort to the dear Creature hersels.

When I tell you, that to all Appearance, her charming Face will not receive any Disfigurement by this cruel Enemy to Beauty, I am fure you will congratulate me upon a Felicity so desirable: But were it to be otherwise, if I were capable of slighting a Person, whose principal Beauties are much deeper than the Skin, I should deserve to be thought the most unworthy and superficial of Husbands.

Whatever your Notions have been, my ever-ready censuring Lady Davers, of your Brother, on a certain Affair, I do assure you, that I never did, and never can, love any Woman as I love my Pamela.

It is indeed impossible I can ever love her better than I do; and her outward Beauties are far from being indifferent to me; yet, if I know myself, I am sure I have Justice enough to love her equally, and Generosity enough to be more tender of her, were she to suffer by this Dissemper. But, as her Humility, and her Affection to me, would induce her to think herself under greater Obligation to me, for such my Tenderness to her, were she to lose any the least valuable of her Persections, I rejoice, that she will have no Reason for Mortification on that Score.

My Respects to Lord Davers, and your noble Neighbours. I am,

Your affectionate Brother,

and bunb's Servant.

LETTER

From Lady DAVERS, in Answer to the preceding.

My dear Brother,

DO most heartily congratulate you on the Re-Sister is in. I am the more rejoic'd, as her sweet Face is not likely to suffer by the Malady; for, be the Beauties of the Mind what they will, those of Person are no small Recommendation, with some Folks, I am fure; and I began to be afraid, that when it was hardly possible for both conjoined to keep a roving Mind constant, that one only would not be fufficient.

This News gives me the more Pleasure, because I am well inform'd, that a certain gay Lady was pleafed to give herself Airs upon hearing of my Sister's illness; as, That she could not be forry for it; for now the should look upon herself as the prettiest Woman in England. She meant only, I suppose, as to outward prettiness, Brother!

You give me the Name of a ready Censurer. I own, I think myself to be not a little interested in all that regards my Brother, and his Honour. But when some People are not readier to censure, than others to trespass, I know not whether they can with

Justice be styled censorious.

But however that be, the Rod feems to have been held up, as a Warning-and that the Blow, in the irreparable Deprivation, is not given, is a mercy, which I hope will be deserved; tho' you never can those very fignal ones you receive at the Divine Hands, beyond any Man I know. For even (if I shall not be deemed censorious again) your very Vices have been turned

turned to your Felicity, as if God would try the Nobleness of the Heart he has given you, by overcoming you (in Answer to my Sister's constant Prayers, as well as mine) by Mercies rather than by Judgments.

I might give Instances of the Truth of this Observation, in almost all the Actions and Attempts of your past Life: And take care, (if you are displeased, I will speak it; take care) thou bold Wretch, that if this Method be ingratefully slighted, the uplisted Arm fall not down with double Weight on thy devoted Head!

I must always love and honour my Brother, but cannot help speaking my Mind: Which, after all, is the natural Result of that very Love and Honour, and which obliges me to style myself

Your truly affectionate Sister

B. DAVERS.

LETTER XL.

From Mrs. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My dearest Lady,

-

y

e

of

e

at p

e-

I

d l-

or

as

I

ut

th

en

ne

y,

an

s, be

en

ed

Y first Letter, and my first Devoirs, after those of Thankfulness to that gracious God, who has so happily conducted me thro' two such heavy Trials, as my Child's and my own Illness, must be directed to your Ladyship, with all due Acknowledgment of your generous and affectionate Concern for me.

We are now preparing for our Journey to Bedfordshire; and there, to my great Satisfaction, I am to be favoured with the Care of Miss Goodwin.

After we have tarried about a Month there, Mr. B. will make a Tour with me thro' feveral Counties, (taking the Hall in the Way, for about a Fortnight) and shew me what is remarkable every where as we pass;

pass; for this, he is pleas'd to think, will better contribute to my Health, than any other Method; for the Distemper has left upon me a kind of Weariness and Listlesiness: And he proposes to be out with me till the Bath Season begins; and by the Aid of those healing and balsamic Waters, he hopes, I shall be quite established. Afterwards he proposes to return to Bedfordsbire for a little while; then to London; and then to Kent; and, if nothing hinders, has a great mind to carry me over to Paris.

Thus most kindly does he amuse and divert me with his agreeable Schemes and Proposals. But I have made one Amendment to them; and that is, that I must not be deny'd to pay my Respects to your Ladyship, at your Seat, and to my good Lady Countess in the same Neighbourhood, and this will be far from

being the least of my Pleasures.

I have had Congratulations without Number, upon my Recovery; but one among the rest, I did not expect; from the Countess Dowager: Could you think it, Madam? Who sent me by her Gentleman the following Letter, from Tunbridge.

· Madam,

- I Hope, among the Congratulations of your numerous Admirers, on your happy Recovery, my
- very fincere ones will not be unacceptable. I have no other Motive for making you my Compliments
- on this Occasion, on so stender an Acquaintance,
- than the Pleasure it gives me, that the Publick, as well as your private Friends, have not been deprived
- of a Lady whose Example, in every Duty of Life,
- is of fo much Concern to both. May you, Madam, long rejoice in an uninterrupted State of Happines,
- answerable to your Merits, and to your own
- Wishes, are those of

· Your most obedient humble Servant."

To this kind Letter I return'd the following:

· Madam,

nor

efs he

sse

be

rn.

n;

a

he

ve

1

y-

ſs.

m

n

ot

u

n

-

ÿ

e

3

,

5

d

5

9

3'

I AM under the highest Obligation to your generous Favour, in your kind Compliments of Congratulation on my Recovery. There is something so noble and so condescending in the Honour you have done me, on so slender an Acquaintance, that it bespeaks the exalted Mind and Character of a Lady, who, in the Principles of Generosity, and in true Nobleness of Nature, has no Example. May God Almighty bless you, my dear Lady, with all the Good you wish me, and with Increase of Honour and Glory, both here and hereaster, prays, and will always pray,

Your Ladyship's
Most obliged and obedient Servant,

P. B.

This leads me to mention to your Ladyship, what my Illness would not permit me to do before, that Mr. B. met with such a Reception and Audience from the Countess, when he attended her, in all he had to offer and propose to her, and in her patient Hearing of what he thought fit to read her, from your Ladyship's Letters and mine, that he said, Don't be jealous, my dear Pamela; but I must admire her as long as I live.

He gave me the Particulars, so much to her Ladyship's Honour, that I told him, He should not only be welcome to admire her Ladyship, but that I would

admire her too.

They parted very good Friends, and with great Professions of Esteem for each other—And as Mr. B. had undertaken to inspect into some exceptionable Accounts Accounts and Managements of her Ladyship's Bailist, one of her Servants brought a Letter for him on Monday last, wholly written on that Subject. But her Ladyship was so kind and considerate, as to send it unsealed, in a Cover directed to me. When I opened it, I was frighted to see it begin to Mr. B. and I hastened to find him in the Walk up to the newrais'd Mount—Dear Sir—Here's some Mistake—You see the Direction is to Mrs. B.—'Tis very plain—But upon my Word, I have not read it.

S

So

21

W

ar

be

D

W

U

he

ce

up

be

do

on

ter

my

len

(W

qu

gra Ili

Don't be uneasy, my Love.—I know what the Subject must be; but I dare swear there is nothing, nor will there ever be, but what you or any body

may fee.

He read it, and giving it to me to peruse, said, Answer yourself the Postscript, my Dear.—That was —'If, Sir, the Trouble I give you, is likely to sub-'ject you or your Lady to Uneasiness or Apprehen-

fions, I beg you will not be concerned in it. I

will then set about the Matter myself; for my Uncle I will not trouble: Yet, Women enter into

these Particulars with as little Advantage to them-

· felves as Inclination.'

I told him, I was entirely easy and unapprehensive; and, after all his Goodness to me, should be so, if he saw the Countessevery Day. That's kindly said, my Dear, returned he; but I will not trust myself to see her every Day, or at all, for the present; I'll assure you, I will not.—But I shall be obliged to correspond with her for a Month or so, on this Occasion: Unless you prohibit it; and it shall be in your Power to do so.

I faid, With my whole Heart, he might; and I

should be quite easy in both their Honours.

Yet will I not, Pamela, said he, unless you see our Letters; for I know she will always, now she has begun, send in a Cover to you, what she will write to me, unseal'd; and whether I am at home, or abroad,

r

d

I

n

-

S

I

0

•

e

abroad, I shall take it unkindly, if you do not read

He went in with me, and wrote an Answer, which he sent by the Messenger; but would make me, whether I would or not, read it, and seal it up with his Seal. But all this needed not to me now, who think so much better of the Lady than I did before; and am so well satisfied in his own Honour and generous Affection for me; for you saw, Madam, in what I wrote before, that healways loved me, though he was angry at Times, at my Change of Temper, as he apprehended it, not knowing that I was apprised of what had passed between him and the Counters.

I really am better pleased with this Correspondence, than I should have been, had it not been carried on; because the Servants, on both Sides, will see, by my Deportment on the Occasion, (and I will officiously, with a smiling Countenance, throw myself in their Observation) that it is quite innocent; and this may help to silence the Mouths of those who have so freely censur'd their Conduct.

Indeed, Madam, I think I have received no small Good myself by that Affair, which once lay so heavy upon me: For I don't believe I shall be ever jealous again; indeed I don't think I shall. And won't that be an ugly Foible overcome? I see what may be done, in Cases not favourable to our Wishes, by the Aid of proper Resection; and that the Bee is not the only Creature that may make Honey out of the bitter Flowers, as well as the sweet.

My best and most grateful Respects and Thanks to my good Lord Davers; to the Earl, and his excellent Countess; and most particularly to Lady Betty, (with whose kind Compliments your Ladyship acquaints me) and to Mr. H. for all your united Congratulations on my Recovery. What Obligations do Ilie under to such noble and generous Well-wishers!—I can make no Return, but by my Prayers, that

234 PAMELA; Or,

God, by his Goodness, will supply all my Desects. And these will always attend you, from my dearest Lady,

> Your ever obliged Sister, and humble Servant, P. B.

l

Ph

fh

de

F

fo

CZ

ar

C

to

W

ti

ye

of of

ge

bu

po

go

de

fin

Mr. H. is just arrived. He says, he comes a special Messenger, to make a Report how my Face has come off. He makes me many Compliments upon it. How kind your Ladyship is, to enter so savourably into the minutest Concerns, which you think may any way affect my future Happiness in your dear Brother's Opinion!—I want to pour out all my Joy and my Thankfulness to God, before your Ladyship, and the good Countess of G——! For I am a happy, yea, a blessed Creature!—Mr. B's Boy, your Ladyship's Boy, and my Boy, is charmingly well; quite strong, and very forward, for his Months; and his Papa is delighted with him more and more.

LETTER XLL

My dear Mils DARNFORD,

Hope you are happy and well. You kindly say you can't be so, till you hear of my perfect Recovery. And this, blessed be God! you have heard already from Mr. B.

As to your Intimation of the fair Nun, 'tis all happily over. Blessed be God for that too! And I have a better and more endearing Husband than ever. Did you think that could be?

My Billy too improves every Day: And my Dear Father and Mother seem to have their Youth renew'd

95.

rest

B.

s a

my

m-

hip

test

ect

pi-

and

dy-

rI

B's

, 18

or-

ted

fay

Re-

ard

all

dI

er.

ear

n'd

ike

like the Eagle's. How many Bleffings have I to be thankful for!

We are about to turn Travellers, to the Northern Counties, I think, quite to the Borders: and afterwards to the Western, to Bath, to Bristel, and I know not whither myself: But among the rest, to Lincolnshire, that you may be sure of. Then how happy shall I be in my dear Miss Darnford!

I long to hear whether poor Mrs. Jewkes is better or worse for the Advice of the Doctor, whom I order'd to attend her from Stamford; and in what Frame her Mind is.

Do, my Dear, vouchsafe her a Visit in my Name; tell her, if she be low-spirited, what God hath done for me, as to my Recovery, and comfort her all you can; and bid her spare neither Expence nor Attendance, nor any thing her Heart can wish for, nor the Company of any Relations or Friends she may desire to be with her.

If she is in her last Stage, poor Soul! how noble will it be in you to give her Comfort and Consolation in her dying Hours!

Altho' we can merit nothing at the Hand of God, yet I have a Notion, that we cannot deserve more of one another, and in some Sense, for that Reason, of Him, than in our Charities on so trying an Exigence! When the poor Soul stands shivering, as it were, on the Verge of Death, and has nothing strong, but its Fears and Doubts!—Then a little Balm pour'd into the Wounds of the Mind, a little comforting Advice to rely on God's Mercies, from a good Person, how consolatory must it be! And how, like Morning Mists before the Sun, must all Dissidences, and gloomy Doubts, be chasted away by it!

But, my dear Miss Darnford, the great Occasion of my writing to you just now, is, by Lady Davers's Defire, on a quite different Subject. She knows how we love one another. And she has sent me the follow-

ing Lines by her Kinsman, who came to Kent, purposely to inquire how my Face fared in the Smallpox; and accompany'd us from Kent hither, [i. e. to Bedfordshire] and sets out To-morrow for Lord Davers's.

My dear PAMELA,

ACKEY will tell you the Reason of his Journey, my Curiosity, on your own Account: And

I fend this Letter by him; but he knows not the Contents. My good Lord Davers wants to have

his Nephew married, and settled in the World:
And his noble Father leaves the whole Matter to

my Lord, as to the Person, Settlements, &c.

Now I, as well as my Lord, think so highly of the Prudence, the Person, and Family of your Miss

· Darnford, that we shall be obliged to you, to found

· the young Lady on this Score.

I know Mr. H. would wish for no greater Happiness. But if she is engaged, or cannot love my

Nephew, I don't care, nor would my Lord, that

fuch a Proposal should be received with undue Slight.

His Birth, and the Title and Estate he is Heir to,

are Advantages that require a Lady's Confideration.
 He has not indeed so much Wit as Miss; but he

has enough for a Lord, whose Friends are born be-

fore him, as the Phrase is; is very good-humour'd,

ono Fool, no Sot, no Debauchee: And, let me tell you, these are Circumstances not to be met with

every Day in a young Man of Quality.

As to Settlements, Fortune, &c. I fancy there would be no great Difficulties. The Business is, if

Miss Darnford could love him well enough for a

· Husband? That we leave to you to found the young Lady; and if she thinks she can, we will directly

begin a Treaty with Sir Simon on that Subject. I

am, my dearest Pamela,

lear that the follow-

Your ever affectionate Sifter,

B. DAVERS.

Now,

t

h

n

h

te

21

C

Ve

pa

fh

10

fe.

tv

to

D

m

m

an

ha

tic

Now, my dear Friend, as my Lady has so well stated the Case, I beg you to enable me to return an Answer. I will not say one Word pro or con, till I know your Mind.—Only, that I think he is goodhumour'd, and might be easily persuaded to any thing

a Lady should think reasonable.

1-

1-

€.

rd

1-

nd

he

ve

d:

to

of

iss nd

ip-

ny

nat ht.

to,

on.

he

e-

'd,

tell

ith

ere, if

ra

ing

ally

W.

And now, I must tell you another Piece of News in the matrimonial way. Mr. Williams has been here to congratulate us on our multiply'd Bleffings; and he has acquainted Mr. B. that an Overture has been made him by his new Patron, of a Kinswoman of his Lordship's, a Person of Virtue and Merit, and a Fortune of 3000 l. to make him amends, as the Earl tells him, for quitting a better Living to oblige him; and that he is in great Hope of obtaining the Lady's Consent, which is all that is wanting. Mr. B. is very much pleased with so good a Prospect in Mr. Williams's Favour, and has been in the Lady's Company formerly at a Ball, at Gloucester; and he fays, the is prudent and deferving; and offers to make a Journey on Purpose to forward it, if he can be of lervice to him.

I suppose you know, that all is adjusted, according to the Scheme I formerly acquainted you with*, between Mr. Adams and that Gentleman! and both are settled in their respective Livings. But I ought to have told you, that Mr. Williams, upon mature Deliberation, declin'd the stipulated 80 l. per Annum from Mr. Adams, as he thought it would have a Si-

moniacal Appearance.

But now my Hand's in, let me tell you of a third matrimonial Proposition, which gives me more Puzzle and Dislike a great deal. And that is, Mr. Adams has, with great Reluctance, and after abundance of bashful Apologies, ask'd me, If I have any Objection to his making his Addresses to Polly Barlow? which

^{*} See her Journal of Tuesday, Letter xxxii. Vol. III.

which however, he told me, he had not mention'd to her, nor to any body living, because he would first know whether I should take it amis, as her Service was so immediately about my Person.

This unexpected Motion perplexed me a good deal. Mr. Adams is a worthy Man. He has now a very good Living; but is but just enter'd upon it; and, I think, according to his accustomed Prudence in other Respects, had better have turn'd himself about first.

But that is not the Point with me neither. I have a great Regard to the Function. I think it is as necelfary, in order to preferve the Respect due to the Clergy, that their Wives should be nearly, if not quite, as unblemish'd, and as circumspect, as themselves; and this for the Gentleman's own sake, as well as in the Eye of the World: For how shall he pursue his Studies with Comfort to himself, if he be made uneasy at home? or how shall he expect his Female Parishioners will regard his publick Preaching, if he cannot have a due Influence over the private Conduct of his Wise?

I can't say, excepting in the Instance of Mr. H. but Polly is a good fort of Body enough; so far as I know: But that is such a Blot in the poor Girl's Escutcheon, a Thing not accidental, not surpris'd into, not owing to Inattention, but to cool Premeditation, after she had slept over and over upon it; that, I think, I could wish Mr. Adams a Wife more unexceptionable.

'Tis true, Mr. Adams knows not this;—but that is one of my Difficulties. If I acquaint him withit, I shall hurt the poor Girl irreparably, and deprive her of a Husband, to whom she may possibly make a good Wise—For she is not very meanly descended—much better than myself, as the World would say, were a Judgment to be made from my Father's low Estate, when I was exalted—I never, my Dear, shall be asham'd of these Retrospections!

She

1

n

fi

ty

fe hi

M

M

the

ye

for

Fa

Wa

'nd

ıld

er-

al.

boo

nk,

le-

ave

ne-

the

not

em-

he

e be

his

pri-

but

ow:

eon,

ving

r she

ould

t that

th it,

ake a

ed-

fay,

s low fhall

She

She is genteel, has a very innocent Look, a good Face, is neat in her Person, and not addicted to any Excess, that I know of. But, still, that one premeditated Fault, is so sad a one, though she might make a good Wise for any middling Man of Business,—yet she wants, methinks, that Discretion, that Purity, which I would always have in the Wise of a good Clergyman.

Then, she has not applied her Thoughts to that sort of Oeconomy, which the Wife of a Country Clergyman ought to know something of: And has such a Turn to Dress and Appearance, that I can see, if indulged, she would not be one that would help to remove the Scandal which some severe Remarkers are apt to throw upon the Wives of Parsons, as they call them.

The Maiden, I believe, likes Mr. Adams not a little. She is very courteous to every body, but most to him of any body, and never has missed being present at our Sunday Duties; and five or fix times, Mrs. Fervis tells me, she has found her desirous to have Mr. Adams expound this Text, and that Disficulty; and the good Man is taken with her Piety: Which, and her Resormation, I hope is sincere: But, she is very sly, very subtle, as I have sound in several Instances, as soolish as she was in the Assair I hint at.

So, sometimes, I say to myself, The Girl may love Mr. Adams: Ay, but then I answer, So she did Mr. H. and on his own very bad Terms too.—In short—but I won't be too censorious neither.

So I'll say no more, than that I was perplexed; and yet should be very glad to have Polly well married; for, since that Time, I have always had some Diffidences about her—Because, you know, Miss—her Fault was so enormous, and, as I have said, so premeditated. I wanted you to advise with.—But this was the Method I took.

I appointed Mr. Adams to drink a Dish of Tea with me in the Asternoon. Polly attended, as she generally does; for I can't say I love Men Attendants in these womanly Offices—A Tea-kettle in a Man's Hand, that would, if there was no better Employment for him, be sitter to hold a Plough, or handle a Flail, or a Scythe, has such a Look with it!—This is like my low Breeding, some would say, perhaps, —But I cannot call Things polite, that I think unseemly; and, moreover, let me tell you, Lady Davers keeps me in Countenance in this my Notion; and who doubts her Politeness?

Well, but Polly attended, as I said; and there were strange Simperings, and Bowing, and Curt'sying, between them; the honest Gentleman seeming not to know how to let his Mistress wait upon him; while she behaved with as much Respect and Officiousness, as if she could not do too much for

him.

Very well, thought I; I have such an Opinion of your Veracity, Mr. Adams, that I dare say you have not, because you told me you have not, mentioned the Matter to Polly: But between her Officiousness, and your mutual Simperings and Complaisance, I see you have found out a Language between you, that is full as significant as plain English Words. Polly, thought I, sees no Difficulty in this Text; nor need you, Mr. Adams, have much Trouble to make her understand you, when you come to expound upon this Subject.

ł

in

-4

sth

W

I was forced, in short, to put on a statelier and more reserved Appearance than usual, to make them avoid Acts of Complaisance for one another, that might not be proper to be shewn before me, from one who sat as my Companion, to my Servant.

when she withdrew, the modest Gentleman hem'd, and looked on one Side, and turned to the right and

left, as if his Seat was uneasy to him, and I saw knew not how to speak; so I began in mere Compassion to him, and said, Mr. Adams, I have been thinking of what you mentioned to me, as to Polly Barlow.

Hem! Hem! faid he; and pull'd out his Handkerchief, and wip'd his Mouth—Very well, Madam;

-I hope no Offence, Madam!

No, Sir, none at all. But I am at a Loss how to distinguish in this Case; whether it may not be from a Motive of too humble Gratitude, that you don't think yourself above matching with Polly, as you may suppose her a favourite of mine; or whether it be your Value for her Person and Qualities, that makes her more agreeable in your Eyes, than any other Person would be.

Madam — Madam, said the bashful Gentleman hesitatingly——I do——I must needs say—I can't but own—that — Mrs. Mary— is a Person—whom I think very agreeable; and no less modest and vir-

tuous.

a

-5

13

i's

y-

lle

115

os,

n-

er's

nd

ere

fy-

m-

on

and

for

of

ave

ned

ess,

fee

that

olly,

reed

her

pon

and

hem

that

rom

m'd,

and

left,

You know, Sir, your own Circumstances. To be sure you have a very pretty House and a good Living, to carry a Wise to. And a Gentleman of your Prudence and Discretion wants not any Advice: But you have reaped no Benefits by your Living. It has been an Expence to you rather, which you will not presently get up: Do you propose an early Marriage, Sir? Or were it not better, that you suspended your Intentions of that sort for a Year or two more? Madam, if your Ladyship choose not to part with—

Nay, Mr. Adams, interrupted I, I say not any thing for my own sake in this Point; that is out of the Question with me. I can very willingly part with Polly, were it To-morrow, for her Good and yours.

Madam, I humbly beg pardon; but-but-De-

lays-may breed Dangers.

Vol. IV. M Oh!

Oh! very well! thought I; I'll be further, if the artful Girl has not let him know, by fome means or

other, that the has another humble Servant.

And fo, Miss, it has proved—For, dismissing my Gentleman, with assuring him, that I had no Objection at all to the Matter, or to parting with Polly, as soon as it suited with their Conveniency—I sounded her, and asked, if she thought Mr. Adams had any Affection for her?

She faid, he was a very good Gentleman.

I know it, Polly; and are you not of Opinion he

loves you a little?

Dear Ma'm, good your Ladyship—love me!—— I don't know what such a Gentleman as Mr. Adams should see in me, to love me!

Oh! thought I, does the Doubt lie on the t Side

then ?- I fee 'tis not of thine.

Well, but, Polly, if you have another Sweetheart, you should do the fair thing; it would be wrong, if you encourage any body else, if you thought of Mr. Adams.

Indeed, Ma'm, I had a letter fent me—A Letter that I received—from—from a young Man in Bed-

ford; but I never gave an Answer to it.

Oh! thought I, then thou wouldst not encourage two at once; this was as plain a Declaration as I wanted, that she had thoughts of Mr. Adams.

But how came Mr. Adams, Polly, to know of this

n

2

L

N

I

th

217

th

Letter?

How came Mr. Adams to know of it, Ma'm!—
repeated she—half surpris'd—Why, I don't know,
I can't tell how it was—but I dropp'd it near his
Desk—pulling out my Handkerchief, I believe,
Ma'm; and he brought it after me; and gave it me
again.

Well, thought I, thou'rt an intriguing Slut, I doubt, Polly — Delays may breed Dangers, quoth the poor Gentleman!—Ah! Girl, Girl! thought I, but

r

1-

y

he

7715

ide

art,

, 11

Mr.

tter

Bed-

rage

as I

this

!-

now,

r his

ieve,

it me

ut, I

n the

I, but did

did not say so, thou deservest to be blown up, and to have thy Plot spoiled, that thou dost — But if thy Forwardness should expose thee afterwards to Evils, which thou mayst avoid if thy Scheme takes Place, I should very much blame myself. And I see he loves thee — So let the Matter take its Course; I will trouble myself no more about it. I only wish, that thou wilt make Mr. Adams as good a Wise as he deserves.

And so I dismiss'd her, telling her, that whoever thought of being a Clergyman's Wise, should resolve to be as good as himself; to set an Example to all her Sex in the Parish, and shew how much his Doctrines had weight with her; should be humble, circumspect, gentle in her Temper and Manners, frugal, not proud, nor vying in Dress with the Ladies of the Laity; should resolve to sweeten his Labours, and to be obliging in her Deportment to Poor as well as Rich, that her Husband got no Discredit thro' her Means, which would weaken his Instuence upon his Auditors; and that she must be most of all obliging to him, and study his Temper, that his Mind might be more disengag'd, in order to pursue his Studies with the better Effect?

And so much, my dear Miss Darnford, for your humble Servant; and for Mr. Williams's and Mr. Adams's matrimonial Prospect;—and don't think me disrespectful, that I have mention'd my Polly's Affair in the same Letter with yours. For in High and Low, (I forget the Latin Phrase—I have not had a Lesson a long, long while, from my dear Tutor) Love is in all the same!—But whether you'll like Mr. H. as well as Polly does Mr. Adams, that's the Question. But leaving that to your own Decision, I conclude with one Observation: That although I thought ours was a House of as little Intriguing as any body's, since the dear Master of it has lest off that Practice; yet I cannot see, that any Family M 2

can be clear of some of it long together, where there are Men and Women worth plotting for, as Hus-

bands and Wives.

My best Wishes and Respects attend all your worthy Neighbours. I hope ere many Months are past, to assure them, severally, (to wit, Sir Simon, my Lady, Mrs. Jones, Mr. Peters, and his Lady, and Niece, whose kind Congratulations make me very proud, and very thankful) how much I am obliged to them; and particularly, my Dear, how much I am

Your ever-affectionate and faithful Friend and Servant,

P. B.

te

re

m

a

m

yo

LETTER XLII.

From Miss DARNFORD, in Answer to the preceding.

My dear Mrs. B.

HAVE been several times (in Company with Mr. Peters) to see Mrs. Jewkes. The poor Woman is very bad, and cannot live many Days. We comfort her all we can; but she often accuses herself of her past Behaviour to so excellent a Lady; and with Blessings upon Blessings, heaped upon you, and her Master, and your charming little Boy, she is continually declaring how much your Goodness to her aggravates her former Faults to her own Conscience.

She has a Sifter-ih-law and her Niece with her, and has fettled all her Affairs, and thinks the is not

long for this World.

Her Distemper is an inward Decay, all at once, as it were, from a Constitution that seem'd like one

of Iron; and she is a mere Skeleton: You would

not know her, I dare fay.

I will see her every Day; and she has given me up all her Keys, and Accompts, to give to Mr. Longman; who is daily expected, and I hope will be here soon; for her Sister-in-law, she says herself, is a Woman of this World, as she has been.

Mr. Peters calling upon me to go with him to vifit

her, I will break off here.

,

th

0-

Ve

7-

y;

u,

he

ess

n-

er,

101

ce,

ine

of

Mrs. Jewkes is much as she was; but your faithful Steward is come. I am glad of it — and so is she.—Nevertheless I will go every Day, and do all the Good I can for the poor Woman, according to

your charitable Defires.

I thank you, Madam, for your Communication of Lady Davers's Letter. I am much obliged to my Lord, and her Ladyship; and should have been proud of an Alliance with that noble Family: But with all Mrs. H.'s good Qualities, as my Lady paints them out, and his other Advantages I could not, for the World, make him my Husband.

I'll tell you one of my Objections, in Confidence, however (for you are only to found me, you know:) and I would not have it mention'd that I have taken any Thought about the Matter, because a stronger Reason may be given, such an one as my Lord and Lady will both allow; which I will communicate

to you by-and-by.

My Objection arises even from what you intimate, of Mr. H.'s Good humour, and his Persuadableness, if I may so call it. Now, Madam, were I of a boisterous Temper, and high Spirit, such an one as required great Patience in a Husband to bear with me, then Mr. H.'s Good-humour might have been a Consideration with me. But when I have (I pride myself in the Thought) a Temper not wholly unlike your own, and such an one as would not want to M3

contend for Superiority with a Husband, it is no Recommendation to me, that Mr. H. is a good-humour'd Gentleman, and will bear with Faults I

defign not to be guilty of.

But, my dear Mrs. B. my Husband must be a Man of Sense, and must give me Reason to think he has a superior Judgment to my own, or I shall be unhappy. He will otherwise do wrong-headed things: I shall be forced to oppose him in them: He will be tenacious and obstinate, and will be taught to talk of Prerogative, and to call himself a Man, without knowing how to behave as one, and I to despise him of course; and so be deemed a bad Wise, when, I hope, I have Qualities that would make me a tolerable good one, with a Man of Sense for my Husband. You know who says,

te

7

fe

C

n

h

ye tie

m

m

M

fe

in

m

W

he

ce

ke

an

For Fools (pardon me this harsh Word, 'tis in my For Fools are stubborn in their Way, [Author) As Coins are harden'd by th' Allay; And Obstinacy's ne'er so stiff, As when 'tis in a wrong Belief.

Now you must not think I would dispense with real Good-humour in a Man. No, I make it one of my Indispensables in a Husband. A good-natur'd Man will put the best Constructions on what happens: But he must have Sense to distinguish the best. He will be kind to little, unwilful, undesigned Failings: But he must have Judgment to distinguish what are or are not so.

But Mr. H.'s Good-humour is Softness, as I may call it; and my Husband must be such an one, in short, as I need not be ashamed to be seen with in Company; one who being my Head, must not be beneath all the Gentlemen he may happen to fall in with; and who, every time he is adjusting his Mouth for Speech, will give me Pain at my Heart, and Blushes in my Face, even before he speaks.

I could

110

od-

sI

nk

all

led

n:

be

fa

ind

pad

ald

nfe

ny

or)

ith

ne

r'd

p-

ft.

11-

fh

ay

ın

in

be

in

th

nd

ld

I could not bear, therefore, that every Gentleman, and every Lady, we encounter'd, should be prepar'd, whenever he offer'd to open his Lips, by their contemptuous Smiles, to expect fom weak and filly things from him; and when he had spoken, that he should, with a booby Grin, seem pleased that he had not disappointed them.

The only recommendatory Point in Mr. H. is, that he dresses exceedingly smart, and is no contemptible Figure of a Man, as you have observed in a sormer Letter. But, dear Madam, you know, that's so much the worse, when the Man's Talent is not Taciturnity, except before his Aunt, or before Mr. B. or you; when he is not conscious of internal Defect, and values himself upon outward Appearance.

As to his Attempt upon your Polly, tho' I don't like him the better for it, yet it is a Fault fo wickedly common among Men, that when a Woman resolves never to marry, 'till a quite virtuous Man addresses her, it is, in other Words, resolving to die single: So that I make not this the chief Objection; and yet, I must tell you, I would abate in my Expectations of half a dozen other good Qualities, rather than that one of Virtue in a Husband.

But when I reflect upon the Figure Mr. H, made in that Affair, I cannot bear him; and if I may judge of other Coxcombs by him, what Wretches are these smart, well-dressing, Querpofellows, many of which you and I have seen admiring themselves at the Plays and Operas!

This is one of my infallible Rules, and I know it is yours too; that he who is taken up with the Admiration of his own Person, will never admire a Wise's. His Delights are centered in himself, and he will not wish to get out of that narrow, that exteeding narrow Circle; and, in my Opinion, should keep no Company but that of Taylors, Wig-puffers, and Milleners.

But

But I will run on no further upon this Subject; but will tell you a Reason, which you may give to Lady Davers, why her kind Intentions to me cannot be answer'd; and which she'll take better than what I have said, were she to know it, as I hope you won't let her: And this is, my Papa has had a Proposal made to him from a Gentleman you have seen, and have thought polite *. It is from Sir W. G. of this County, who is one of your great Admirers, and Mr. B.'s too; and that, you must suppose, makes me have never the worse Opinion of him, or of his Understanding; although it requires no great Sagacity or Penetration to see how much you adorn our Sex, and human Nature too.

Every thing was adjusted between my Papa and Mamma, and Sir William, on condition we approved of each other, before I came down; which I knew not, till I had seen him here sour times; and then my Papa surprised me into half an Approbation of him: And this, it seems, was one of the Reasons

why I was fo burried down from you.

I can't say, but I like the Man as well as most I have seen; he is a Man of Sense and Sobriety, to give him his Due, and is in very easy Circumstances, and much respected by all who know him; and that's no bad Earnest, you are sensible in a Mar-

riage Prospect.

But hitherto, he seems to like me better than I do him. I don't know how it is; but I have often observ'd, that when any thing is in our own Power, we are not half so much taken with it, as we should be, perhaps, if we were kept in Suspense! Why should this be?

But this I am convinc'd of, there is no Compasifon between Sir William and Mr. Murray.

Now

it

d

ţr

λ

tu

pi

10

SI

th

bu

to

it

fti

OV Pe

^{*} See Vol. III. p. 247.

Now I have nam'd this Brother-in-law of mine;

what do you think?

£;

to

n-

an

pe

da

ve

W.

d-

p-

of

res

ch

nd

v'd

ew

en

of

ns

H

to

n-

nd

ar-

do

b-

er,

ıld

hy

12-

W

Why, that good Couple have had their House on fire three times already, and that very dangerously too. Once it was put out by Mr. Murray's Mother, who lives near them; and twice Sir Simon has been forced to carry Water to extinguish it; for, truly, Mrs. Murray would go home again to her Papa: She would not live with such a surly Wretch: And it was, with all his Heart: A fair Riddance! for there was no bearing the House with such an ill-natur'd Wise:——Her Sister Polly was worth a thousand of her!

I am forry, heartily forry, for their Unhappiness. But could she think every body must bear with her,

and her fretful Ways?

They'll jangle on, I reckon, till they are better us'd to one another; and when he fees she can't help it, why he'll bear with her, as Husbands generally do with ill-temper'd Wives; that is to say, he'll try to make himself happy abroad, and leave her to quarrel with her Maids, instead of him; for she must have somebody to vent her Spleen upon, poor Nancy!

I am glad to hear of Mr. Williams's good For-

tune.

As Mr. Adams knows not Polly's Fault and it was prevented in time, they may be happy enough. She is a fly Girl. I always thought her so: Something so innocent, and yet so artful in her very Looks! She is an odd Compound of a Girl. But these worthy and piously turn'd young Gentlemen, who have but just quitted the College, any mere Novices, as to the World; indeed, they are above it, while in it; they therefore give themselves little trouble to study it, and so, depending on the Goodness of their own hearts, are more liable to be imposed upon than People of half their Understanding.

M 5

I think,

I think, fince he feems to love her, you do right not to hinder the Girl's Fortune. But I wish she may take your Advice, in her Behaviour to him, at least; for as to her Carriage to her Neighbours, I doubt she'll be one of the Heads of the Parish, prefently, in her own Estimation.

'Tis pity, methinks, any worthy Man of the Cloth should have a Wife, who, by her bad Example, should pull down, as fast as he, by a good one, can

build up.

This is not the Case of Mrs. Peters, however; whose Example I wish was more generally follow'd by Gentlewomen, who are made so by marrying good Clergymen, if they were not so before.

Don't be surpris'd, if you should hear that poor fewkes is given over !—She made a very exemplary —Full of Blessings — And more easy and resign'd, than I apprehended she would be.

I know you'll shed a Tear for the poor Woman:

—I can't help it myself. But you will be pleas'd
that she had so much Time given her, and made so

good Use of it.

Mr. Peters has been every thing that one would wish one of his Function to be, in his Attendances and Advice to the poor Woman. Mr. Longman will take proper Care of every thing.

So, I will only add, that I am, with the fincerest Respects, in hopes to see you soon, (for I have a Multitude of things to talk to you about) dear

Mrs. B.

Your ever faithful and affectionate

POLLY DARNFORD.

LETTER XLIII.

From Mrs. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My dear Lady DAVERS,

it

I E-

th

e,

r;

ď

ng

or

ary

'd,

in:

s'd

fo

uld

ces

will

reft

e a

lear

RD.

ER

I Understand from Miss Darnford, that before she went down from us, her Papa had encourag'd a Proposal made by Sir W. G. whom you saw, when your Ladyship was a kind Visitor in Bedfordshire. We all agreed, if your Ladyship remembers, that he was a Polite and sensible Gentleman, and I find it is countenanc'd on all Hands.

Poor Mrs. Jewkes, Madam, as Miss informs me, has paid her last Debt. I hope thro' Mercy she is happy! Poor, poor Woman! But why say I so!—Since in that Case, she will be richer than an earthly Monarch!

Your Ladyship was once mentioning a Sister of Mrs. Worden's whom you could be glad to recommend to some worthy Family.—Shall I beg of you, Madam, to oblige Mr. B.'s in this Particular? I am sure she must have Merit, if your Ladyship thinks well of her; and your Commands in this, as well as in every other Particular in my Power, shall have their due Weight with

Your Ladyship's obliged Sister and humble Servant,

P. B.

Just now, dear Madam, Mr. B. tells me I shall have Miss Goodwin brought me hither To-morrow!

LETTER XLIV.

From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B. in Answer to the preceding.

My dear PAMELA,

I AM glad Miss Darnford is likely to be so happy in a Husband, as Sir W. G. will certainly make her. I was afraid that the Proposal I made would not do with her, had she not had so good a Tender. I want too, to have the foolish Fellow marry'dfor several Reasons; one of which is, he is continually teizing us to permit him to go up to Town, and to reside there for some Months, in order that he may fee the World, as he calls it. But we are convinc'd he would feel it, as well as fee it, if we gave way to his Request: For in Understanding, Dress, and inconfiderate Vanity, he is so exactly cut out and fiz'd for a Town Fop, Coxcomb, or pretty Fellow, that he will undoubtedly fall into all the Vices of those People; and, perhaps, having such Expectations as he has, will be made the Property of Rakes and Sharpers. He complains, that we use him like a Child in a Go-cart, or a Baby with Leading-strings, and that he must not be trusted out of our Sight. 'Tis a fad thing, that these Bodies will grow up to the Stature of Men, when the Minds improve not at all with them, but are still those of Boys and Children. Yet, he would certainly make a fond Husband; for at present, he has no very bad Qualities. But is such a Narcissus! - But this between ourselves, for his Uncle is wrapt up in the Fellow-And why? Because he is good-humour'd, that's all. He has vex'd me lately, which makes me write so angrily about him-But 'tis not worth troubling you with the Particulars. I hope

I hope Mrs. Jewkes is happy, as you say !-Poor Woman! she seemed to promise for a longer Life!

But what shall we fay?

he

py

ke

ld

er.

u-

nd

he

n-

ve

s,

ut

1.

es

c-

of

(e

th

ut

1-

ys

4

d

15

16

C

Your Compliment to me, about my Beck's Sifter, is a very kind one. I am greatly obliged to you for it. Mrs. Oldham is a fober, grave Widow, a little aforehand in the World, but not much; has liv'd well; understands Household Management thoroughly; is diligent, and has a Turn to serious Things, which will make you like her the better.

I'll order Beck and her to wait on you, and she will satisfy you in every thing as to what you may, or

may not, expect of her.

You can't think how kindly I take this Motion from you. You forget nothing that can oblige your Friends. Little did I think you would remember me, of (what I had forgotten in a manner) my favourable Opinion and Wishes for her, express'd so long ago—But you are what you are—a dear, obliging Creature.

Beck is all Joy and Gratitude upon it; and her Sister had rather serve you than the Princess. You need be under no Difficulties about Terms: She would serve you for nothing, if you would accept

of her Service.

I am glad, because it pleases you so much, that Miss Goodwin will be soon put into your Care. It will be happy for the Child, and I hope she will be so dutiful to you, as to give you no Pain for your generous Goodness to her. Her Mamma has sent me a Present of some choice Products of that Climate, with Acknowledgments of my Kindness to Miss. I will send Part of it to you by your new Servant; for so I presume to call her already.

What a naughty Sister are you, however, to be so far advanced again as to be obliged to shorten your intended Excursions, and yet not to send me Word of it yourself? Don't you know how much I

intereft

interest myself in every thing that makes for my Brother's Happiness and yours?—More especially in so material a Point as is the Increase of a Family, that it is my Boast to be sprung from.—Yet I must find this out by Accident, and by other Hands!—Is not this very slighting?—But never do so again, and I'll forgive you now, because of the Joy it gives me: Who am

Your truly affectionate and obliged Sister,
B. DAVERS.

I thank you for your Book upon the Plays you faw. Inclosed is a List of some others, which I desire you to read, and to oblige me with your Remarks upon them at your Leisure; tho' you may not perhaps have seen them by the Time you will favour me with your Observations.

LETTER XLV.

From Mrs. B. to Lady DAVERS.

My dear Lady DAVERS,

I HAVE a valuable Present made me by the same Lady: And therefore hope you will not take it amiss, that with abundance of Thanks, I return yours by Mrs. Worden, whose Sister I much approve of, and thank your Ladyship for your kind Recommendation of so worthy a Person. We begin with so much good Liking to one another, that I doubt not we shall be very happy together.

A moving Letter, much more valuable to me than the handsome Present, was put into my Hands, at the same time with that; of which the following

is a Copy:

I

255

From Mrs. WRIGHTSON (formerly Miss SALLY GODFREY) to Mrs. B.

· Happy, defervedly happy, dear Lady,

my

ly,

uft

in,

ves

.

ou

ch

th

10"

he

30

e

e

PErmit these Lines to kiss your Hands from one, who, tho' she is a Stranger to your Person, is onot fo to your Character: That has reach'd us here, in this remote Part of the World, where vou have as many Admirers as have heard of you. But I more particularly am bound to be so, by an

· Obligation, which I can never discharge, but by my daily Prayers for you, and the Bleffings I con-

tinually implore upon you and Yours. 'I can write my whole Mind to you, tho' I cannot, from the most deplorable Infelicity receive from you the wish'd-for Favour of a few Lines in Return, written with the same Unreservedness: · So unhappy am I, from the Effects of an Inconfideration and Weakness on one Hand, and Temptations on the other, which You, at a tenderer · Age, most nobly, for your own Honour, and that of your Sex, have escaped: Whilft I-But let my · Tears in these Blots speak the rest—as my Heart

bleeds, and has constantly bled ever since, at the grievous Remembrance—But believe me, how-

ever, dear Madam, that 'tis Shame and Sorrow,

and not Pride and Impenitence, that make me loth

to speak out, to so much Purity of Life and Man-

" ners, my own odious Weakness.

' Nevertheless, I ought, and I will accuse myself by Name: Imagine then, illustrious Lady, truly 'illustrious, for Virtues, which are infinitely superior to all the Advantages of Birth and Fortune!-· Imagine, I fay, that in this Letter, you fee before ' you the once guilty, and therefore, I doubt, always guilty, but ever penitent, Sarah Godfrey; the un-' happy, tho' fond and tender Mother of the poor 'Infant, to whom your generous Goodness, as I am inform'd,

256 PAMELA; Or,

inform'd, has extended itself in such a manner, as
to make you desirous of taking her under your

worthy Protection: God for ever bless you for it!

prays an indulgent Mother, who admires, at an

' awful Distance, that Virtue in you, which she

· could not practife herself.

And will you, my dearest Lady, will you take under your own immediate Protection, the poor unguilty Infant? Will you love her, for the sake

of her fuffering Mamma, whom you know not;

for the fake of the Gentleman, now so dear to you, and so worthy of you, as I hear, with Plea-

· fure he is? And will you, by the best Example

in the World, give me a moral Affurance, that he will never fink into the Fault, the Weakness,

the Crime (I ought not to scruple to call it so)

of her poor inconsiderate—But You are her Mam-

ma now: I will not think of a guilty one there-

· fore. And what a Joy is it to me, in the midst of my heavy Resections on my past Misconduct, that

my beloved Sally can boast a virtuous and innocent

· Mamma, who has withstood the Snares and Temp-

tations, that have been so fatal-elsewhere !- and

whose Example, and Instructions, next to God's

Grace, will be the strongest Fences that can be

wish'd for, to her Honour!—Once more I say,

and on my Knees I write it! God for ever bless you here, and augment your Joys hereafter, for

vour generous Goodness to my poor, and, till now,

motherles Infant.

I hope the dear Child, by her Duty and Obligingness, will do all in her little Power to make

vou Amends, and never give you Cause to repent

of this your unexampled Kindness to her and to me.

She cannot, I hope, (except her Mother's Crime

has had an Influence upon her, too much like

that of an original Stain) be of a fordid, or an ingrateful Nature. And, O my poor Sally! if you

are,

.

are, and if ever you fail in your Duty to your new Mamma, to whose Care and Authority I transfer my whole Right in you, remember that you have ono more a Mamma in me, nor can you be entitled to my Bleffing, or to the Fruits of my Prayers for vou, which I make now, on that only Condition, vour implicit Obedience to all your new Mam-

ma's Commands and Directions.

as

ur

t!

an

he

ke

or

kę

t;

to

a-

le

at

S,

0)

1-

e-

of

at

nt

-

id

s

ne

у,

br

٧,

i-

9

it

e.

e

e

n

' You may have the Curiofity, Madam, to wish to know how I live: For no doubt you have heard all my fad, fad Story !- Know then, that I am as happy, as a poor Creature can be, who has once fo deplorably, fo inexcufably fallen. I have a worthy Gentleman for my Husband, who marry'd me as a Widow, whose only Child by my former was the Care of her Papa's Friends, particularly of good Lady Davers and her Brother .- Poor unhappy I! to be under such a sad Necessity to difguise the Truth !- Mr. Wrightson, (whose Name I am unworthily honour'd by) has feveral times ear-' nestly intreated me to send for the poor Child, and to let her be join'd as his—killing thought, that it cannot be !- with Two Children I have by ' him !- Judge, my good Lady, how that very Ge-' nerofity, which, had I been guiltless, would have ' added to my Joys, must wound me deeper, than even ungenerous or unkind Usage from him could do! And how heavy that Crime must lie upon me, which turns my very Pleafures to Mifery, and fixes ' all the Joy I can know, in Repentance for my patt ' Misdeeds !- How happy are You, Madam, on the contrary, You, who have nothing of this fort to ' pall, nothing to mingle with your Felicities! who, blefs'd in an Honour untainted, and a Conscience that cannot reproach you, are enabled to enjoy ' every well-deserv'd Comfort, as it offers itself; and ' can improve it too, by Reflection on your past Con-

258 PAMELA; Or,

duct! While mine-alas!-like a Winter Frost,

in ips in the Bud every rifing Satisfaction!

My Husband is rich as well as generous, and very tender of me—Happy, if I could think myfelf

as deferving as he thinks me !- My principal Com-

fort, as I hinted, is in my Penitence for my past

Faults; and that I have a merciful God for my Judge, who knows that Penitence to be fincere!

You may guess, Madam, from what I have faid,

in what Light I must appear here; and if you

would favour me with a Line or two, in answer to the Letter you have now in your Hand, it will be

one of the greatest Pleasures I can receive: A Pleasures I can

fure next to that which I have received in know-

ing, that the Gentleman you love best, has had the

Grace to repent of all his Evils; has early feen

his Errors; and has thereby, I hope, freed two

Persons from being, one Day, mutual Accusers of

each other: For now I please myself to think, that

the Crimes of both may be wash'd away in the

Blood of that Saviour God, whom both have fo

· grievously offended!

May that good GoD, who has not fuffer'd me to be abandon'd entirely to my own Shame, as I

deserved, continue to shower down upon You

those Blessings, which a Virtue like yours may

expect from his Mercy! May you long be happy

• in the Possession of all you wish! And late, very

late, (for the Good of Thousands, I wish this!)

may you receive the Reward of your Piety, your

Generofity, and your filial, your focial, and con-

· jugal Virtues! are the Prayers of

Your most unworthy Admirer, and obliged humble Servant,

SARAH WRIGHTSON.

Mr. Wrightson begs your Acceptance of a small Present, Part of which can have no Value, but

but what its excelling Qualities, for what it is, will give it at fo great a Distance as that dear

England, which I once left with so much

Shame and Regret; but with a laudable Purpose, however, because I would not incur still

greater Shame, and of Consequence give

'Cause for still greater Regret!'

To this Letter, my dear Lady Davers, I have written the following Answer, which Mr. B. will take care to have convey'd to her.

· Dearest Madam,

roff,

and

yJelf

om-

pait

my

e! aid,

you

r to

l be lea-

-wo

the

feen

treo

s of

hat

the

e fo

me

s I

ou

nay

py

ery

s!)

ruc

n-

N.

all

e,

ut

'I Embrace with great Pleasure the Opportunity you have so kindly given me, of writing to a Lady whose Person the I have not the Honour to know, yet whose Character, and noble Qualities I truly revere.

'I am infinitely oblig'd to you, Madam, for the precious Trust you have reposed in me, and the Right you make over to me, of your maternal In-

terest in a Child, on whom I set my Heart, the

'Moment I saw her.
'Lady Davers, whose Love and Tenderness for 'Miss, as well for her Mamma's sake, as your late worthy Spouse's, had, from her kind Opinion of me, consented to grant me this Favour; and I was, by Mr. B.'s Leave, in actual Possession of my pretty Ward about a Week before your kind Letter

'came to my Hands.
'As I had been long very folicitous for this Favour, judge how welcome your kind Concurrence
was to me; and the rather, as, had I known, that
a Letter from you was on the Way to me, I should
have apprehended, that you would have infisted
upon depriving the surviving Friends of her dear
Papa, of the Pleasure they take in the dear Child.
Indeed, Madam, I believe we should one and all

have join'd to disobey you, had that been the

· Case; and it is a great Satisfaction to us, that we

are not under so hard a Necessity, as to dispute with a tender Mamma the Possession of her own Child.

Affure yourself, dearest, worthiest, kindest Ma-

dam, of a Care and Tenderness in me to the dear Child, truly maternal, and answerable, as much

as in my Power, to the Trust you repose in me.

The little Boy, that God has given me, shall not be more dear to me, than my sweet Miss Goodwin

fhall be; and my Care, by GoD's Grace, shall ex-

tend to her future as well as to her present Profesces, that the may be worthy of that Piety, and

truly religious Excellence, which I admire in your

· Character.

We all rejoice, dear Madam, in the Account you give of your present Happiness. It was impos-

6 fible that Gon Almighty should desert a Lady so

exemplarily deferving; and HE certainly conducted you in your Resolutions to abandon every Thing

that you loved in England, after the Loss of your

· dear Spouse, because it seems to have been the In-

tention of His Providence that you should reward the Merit of Mr. Wrightson, and meet with your

own Reward in fo doing.

Miss is very fond of my little Billy: She is a charming Child, is easy and genteel in her Shape:

and very pretty, the dances finely, has a sweet Air,

and is improving every Das in Musick; works with her Needle, and reads admirably, for her

Years; and takes a Delight in both, which gives

me no small Pleasure. But she is not very forward

in her Penmanship, as you will see by what sol-

lows: The Inditing too is her own; but in that,

and the Writing, she took a good deal of Time,

on a separate Paper.

-

6

6

6

6

6

" Dearest dear Mamma,

the

we

wn

Ma-

dear

uch

me.

not

lwin

ex-

rofand

your

ount

pol-

y fo

icted

hing

your e In-

ward

your

15 a

ape:

Air,

orks her

gives

ward

t fol-

that,

ime,

earest

"Y Our Sally is full of Joy, to have any Commands from her honoured Mamma. I promise to follow all your Directions. Indeed, and
apon my Word, I will. You please me mightily
in giving me so dear a new Mamma here. Now
I know indeed I have a Mamma, and I will
love and obey her, as if she was you your own
self. Indeed I will. You must always bless me,
because I will be always good. I hope you will
believe me, because I am above telling Fibs. I
am, my honoured Mamma, on the other Side of
the Water, and ever will be, as if you was here,

Your dutiful Daughter, SALLY GOODWIN."

· Miss (permit me, dear Madam, to subjoin) is a very good-temper'd Child, easy to be persuaded, and I hope loves me dearly; and I will endeavour to make her love me better and better; for on that Love will depend the Regard which, I hope, she will pay to all I shall say and do for her Good.

Repeating my Acknowledgments for the kind Trust you repose in me, and with Thanks for the valuable Present you have sent me, we all here join in Respects to worthy Mr. Wrightson, and in wishing you, Madam, a Continuance and Increase of worldly Felicity; and I, particularly, beg Leave to assure you, that I am, and ever will be, with the highest Respect and Gratitude, tho' personally unknown, dearest Madam,

The affectionate Admirer of your Piety, and your obliged humble Servant,

P. B.

Your Ladyship will see how I was circumscrib'd and limited; otherwise I would have told the good Lady

Lady (what I have mentioned more than once) how I admire and honour her for her Penitence, and for that noble Resolution, which enabled her to do what thousands could not have the Heart to do, abandon her Country, her Relations, Friends, Baby, and all that was dear to her, as well as the Seducer, whom the too well loved, and hazard the Sea, the Dangers of Pirates, and possibly of other wicked Attempters of the mischievous Sex, in a World she knew nothing of, among Strangers; and all to avoid repeating a Sin, the had been unhappily drawn into; and for which the still abhors herself.

Must not such a Lady as this, dear Madam, have as much Merit, as many even of those, who, having not had her Temptations, have not fallen? This, at least, one may aver, that next to not committing an Error, is the Resolution to retrieve it all that one may, to repent of it, and studiously to avoid the Repetition. But who, besides this excellent Mrs. Wrightfon, having fo fallen, and being still fo ardently folicited and pursued, (and flatter'd perhaps, by fond Hopes, that her Spoiler would one Day do her all the Justice he could, - for who can do complete Justice to a Woman he has robb'd of her : Honour?)—could resolve as she resolved, and act as

the acted?

Miss Goodwin is a sweet Child; but permit me to fay, has a little of her Papa's Spirit; halty, yet generous and acknowledging when the is convinc'd of her Fault; a little haughtier and prouder than I wish her to be; but in every thing else deserves the Character I give of her to her Mamma.

She is very fond of fine Clothes, is a little too lively to the Servants—Told me once, when I took notice, that Softness and Mildness of Speech became a young Lady, That they were but Servants; and the could fay no more, than Pray, and I

defires

01

W

pe

m

ca

W

eal

an

a (

Co

hei

her

Wil

tha

tha

tha

fery

W

10

at

on

Ill

m

ers

ers

ng

a

or

ive

ng

at

an

ne

the

lrs.

ar-

ps,

)ay

do

her

t as

: to

ne-

d of

vish

ha-

too

ook

be-

its;

d I

desire, and I wish you'd be so kind—to her Uncle or to me.

I told her, that good Servants deserved any civil Diffinctions; and that so long as they were ready to oblige her in every thing, by a kind Word, it would be very wrong to give them imperative ones, which could serve for no other End, but to convince Observers of the Haughtiness of one's own Temper; and looked, as if one would question their Compliance with our Wills, unless we would exact it with an high Hand; which might cast a Slur upon the Command we gave, as if we thought it was hardly so reasonable, as otherwise to obtain their Observation of it.

Besides, my Dear, said I, you don't consider, that if you speak as haughtily and commandingly to them on common, as on extraordinary Occasions, you weaken your own Authority, if ever you should be permitted to have any, and they'll regard you no more in the one Case than in the other.

She takes great Notice of what I say; and when her little proud Heart is subdu'd by Reasonings she cannot answer, she will sit as if she were studying what to say, that she may come off as slyingly as she can: and as the Case requires, I let her go off easily, or I push the little Dear to her last Resuge, and make her quit her Post, and yield up her Spirit a Captive to Reason and Discretion: Two excellent Commanders, with whom, I tell her, I must bring her to be intimately acquainted.

Yet after all, till I can be fure that I can inspire her with the Love of Virtue, for its own Sake, I will rather try to conduct her Spirit to proper Ends, than endeavour totally to subdue it; being sensible that our Passions are given us for excellent Ends, and that they may, by a proper Direction, be made sub-

servient to the noblest Purposes.

I tell her sometimes, there may be a decent Pride in Humility, and that it is very possible for a young Lady to behave with so much true Dignity, as shall command Respect by the Turn of her Eye, sooner than by Asperity of Speech; that she may depend upon it, that the Person who is always finding Faults, frequently causes them; and that it is no Glory to be better born than Servants, if she is not better behav'd too.

Besides, I tell her Humility is a Grace that shines in a high Condition, but cannot equally in a low one; because that is already too much humbled perhaps: And that, tho' there is a Censure lies against being poor and proud, yet I would rather forgive Pride in a poor Body, than in a rich; for in the Rich it is Insult and Arrogance, proceeding from their high Condition; but in the Poor it may be a Desensative against Dishonesty, and may shew a natural Bravery of Mind, perhaps, if properly directed, and manifested on right Occasions, that the Frowns of Fortune cannot depress.

She fays, She hears every Day Things from me,

which her Governels never taught her.

That may very well be, I tell her, because her Governess has many young Ladies to take care of; I but one: and that I want to make her wise and prudent betimes, that she may be an Example to other Misses; and that Governesses and Mamma's shall say to their Misses, When will you be like Miss Goodwin? Do you ever hear Miss Goodwin say a naughty Word? Would Miss Goodwin, think you, have done so or so?

She threw her Arms about my Neck, on one such Occasion as this: Oh, said she, what a charming Mamma have I got! I will be in every thing as like you, Madam, as ever I can!—And then You will love me, and so will my Uncle, and so will Every.

body elfe.

Mr.

(

1

9

W

di

of

fo

M

po

w

to

wh

Lo

har

to '

me.

Int

hop

For

to !

a I

Tu

ther

I

Mr. B. whom, now-and-then, she says, she loves as well as if he were her own Papa, sees with Pleafure how we go on; and loves us both, if possible, better and better. But she tells me, I must not have any Daughter but her, and is very jealous on the Occasion about which your Ladyship so kindly

reproaches me.

le

er

ts,

be

e-

168

e;

)\$:

ing

in

igh

tive

ery

mi+

une

me,

her

; 1

and

e to

ma's

Mils

ay a

you,

fuch

ning

like

will

very-

Mr.

There is a Pride, you know, Madam, in some of our Sex, that serves to useful Purposes, and is a good Desence against improper Matches, and mean Actions; and this is not wholly to be subdu'd, for that Reason; for, the it is not Virtue, yet, if it can be Virtue's Substitute, in high, rash, and inconsiderate Minds, it may turn to good Account. So I will not quite discourage my dear Pupil neither, till I see what Discretion, and riper Years, may add to her distinguishing Faculty. For, as some have no Notion of Pride, separate from Imperiousness and Arrogance; so others know no Disserence between Humility and Meanness.

There is a golden Mean in every thing; and if it please God to spare us both, I will endeavour to point her Passions, and such even of those Foibles, which seem too deeply rooted to be soon eradicated, to useful Purposes; choosing to imitate Physicians, who in certain chronical Illnesses, as I have read in Lord Bacon, rather proceed by Passiatives, than by harsh Extirpatives, which, thro' the Resistance given to'em by the Constitution, may create such Ferments in it, as may destroy that Health it was their Intention to establish.

But whither am I running?—Your Ladyship, I hope will excuse this parading Freedom of my Pen: For tho' these Notions are well enough with regard to Miss Goodwin, they must be very impertinent to a Lady, who can so much better instruct Miss's Tutoress than that vain Tutoress can her Pupil. And therefore, with my humblest Respects to my good Vol. IV.

Lord Dovers, and your noble Neighbours, and to Mr. H. I haften to conclude myself

Your Ladyship's obliged Sister, and obedient Servant,

P. B.

1

d

r

h

th

h

th

B

Your Billy, Madam, is a charming Dear!—I long to have you fee him. He fends you a Kifs upon this Paper. You'll fee it stain'd, just here. The Charmer has cut two Teeth, and is about more: So you'll excuse the dear, pretty, slabbering Boy. Miss Goodwin is ready to eat him with Love: And Mr. B. is fonder and fonder of us all: and then your Ladyship, and my good Lord Davers, love us too. O Madam, what a blessed Creature am I!

Miss Goodwin begs I'll send her Duty to her Noble Uncle and Aunt; that's her just Distinction always, when she speaks of you both, which is not seldom. She ask'd me, pretty Dear! just now, if I think there is such a happy Girl in the World, as she is? I tell her, God always blesses good Misses, and makes them happier and happier.

LETTER XLVI.

My dear Lady DAVERS,

I HAVE three Marriages to acquaint you with, in one Letter. In the first Place, Sir W. G. has fent, by the particular Desire of my dear Friend, that he was made one of the happiest Men in England, on the 18th past; and so I have no longer my Miss Darnford to boast of. I have a very good Opinion of the Gentleman; but if he be but half so good a Husband as she will make a Wise,

Wife, they will be exceedingly happy in one another.

ta

u a

ı'd,

eth,

ear,

ady

nder

hip,

0

Toble

tion

h is

just

· in

vays

pier

vith,

G.

dear

Men

e no

ve a

f he

ke a

Vife,

Mr. Williams's Marriage to a Kinswoman of his Noble Patron, (as you have heard was in Treaty) is the next; and there is great Reason to believe, from the Character of both, that they will likewise do Credit to the State.

The third is Mr. Adams and Polly Barlow; and I wish them, for both their Sakes, as happy as either of the former. They are set out to his Living, highly pleas'd with one another; and I hope will have Reason to continue so to be.

As to the first, I did not indeed think the Affair would have been so soon concluded; and Miss kept it off so long, as I understand, that her Papa was angry with her: And, indeed, as the Gentleman's Family, Circumstances, and Character, were such, that there could lie no Objection against him, I think it would have been wrong to have delayed it.

I should have written to your Ladyship before; but have been favour'd with Mr. B.'s Company into Kent, on a Visit to my good Mother, who was indisposed. We tarry'd there a Week, and left both my dear Parents, to my thankful Satisfaction, in as good Health as ever they were in their Lives.

Mrs. Judy Swynford, or Miss Swynford, (as she refuses not being called, now-and-then) has been with us for this Week past; and she expects her Brother, Sir Jacob, to fetch her away about a Week hence

It does not become me to write the least Word that may appear disrespectful of any Person who has the Honour to bear a Relation to your Ladyship and Mr. B. Otherwise I should say, that the B-s and the S-s are directly the Opposites of one another. But yet, as (she says) she never saw your Ladyship but once, you will forgive me to mention N 2 a Word

2 Word or two about this Lady, because she is a

Character that is in a manner new to me.

She is a Maiden Lady, as you know, Madam, and though she will not part with the green Leaf from her Hand, one sees by the Grey-goose Down on her Brows and her Head, that she cannot be less than fifty-five——But so much Pains does she take, by Powder, to have never a dark Hair in her Head, because she has one half of them White, that I am sorry to see, what is a Subject for Reverence, should be deem'd by the good Lady, Matter of Concealment.

She is often in Conversation, indeed, seemingly reproaching herself, that she is an old Maid, and an old Woman; but it is very discernible, that she expects a Compliment, that she is not so, every time she is so free with herself: And if nobody makes her one, she will say something of that sort in her

t

F

0

th

25

te

tat

th

mi

and

for

Wh

foo

own Behalf.

Transactions which happen to be talked of, her Memory will never carry her back above thirty Years; and then it is, about thirty Years ago, when I was a Girl, or, when I was in Hanging-Sleeves; and so she makes herself, for twenty Years of her Life, a very useless and insignificant Person.

If her Teeth, which, for her Time of Life, are very good, though not over-white, (and which, by the Care she takes of them, she seems to look upon as the last Remains of her better Days) would but fail her, I imagine it would help her to a Conviction, that would set her ten Years forwarder at least. But, poor Lady! she is so young, in Spite of her Wrinkles, that I am really concern'd for her Affectation; because it exposes her to the Remarks and Ridicule of the Gentlemen, and gives one Pain for her.

Surely, these Ladies don't act prudently at all; fince, for every Year Mrs. Judy would take from her

her Age, her Censurers add two to it; and, behind her Back, make her going on towards seventy; whereas, if she would lay claim to her Reverentials, as I may say, and not endeavour to conceal her Age, she would have a great many Compliments for looking so well at her Time of Life. And many a young Body would hope to be the better for her Advice and Experience, who now are afraid of affronting her, if they suppose she has lived much longer in the World than themselves.

Then she laughs back to the Years she owns, when more slippant Ladies, at the Laughing-time of Life, delight to be frolick: She tries to sing too, altho', if ever she had a Voice, she has out-liv'd it; and her Songs are of so antique a Date, that they would betray her; only, as she tells us, they were learnt her by her Grandmother, who was a fine Lady at the Restoration: She will join in a Dance; and though her Limbs move not so pliantly as might be expected of a Lady no older than she would be thought to be, and whose Dancing-days are not intirely over, yet that was owing to a Fall from her Horse some Years ago, which, she doubts, she shall never recover, so as to be quite well; though she sinds she grows better and better every Year.

Thus she loses the Respect, the Reverence, she might receive, were it not for this miserable Affectation; takes Pains, by aping Youth, to make herself unworthy of her Years, and is content to be thought less discreet than she might otherwise be deemed, for fear she should be imagined older if she appeared wifer.

What a fad thing is this, Madam? ——What a mistaken Conduct? We pray to live to old Age; and it is promised as a Blessing, and as a Reward for the Performance of certain Duties; and yet, when we come to it, we had rather be thought as soolish as Youth, than to be deemed wise, and in

N 3

Possession

her are

15 2

and

rom

n her

than

by

be-

orty

d be

ent.

ngly

and

t the

time

akes

her

olick

her

hirty

vhen

ves;

apon but vicer at

fther ffecand

her. all; from her Possession of it. And so we show little we deserve what we have been so long coveting; and yet covet on: For what? Why, to be more and more asham'd, and more and more unworthy of what we covet!

How fantastick a Character is this! — Well may irreverent, unthinking Youth despise, instead of revering the hoary Head, which the Wearer is so much

asham'd of.

Will you forgive me, Madam? The Lady boafts a Relationship to you, and to Mr. B. and, I think, I am very bold. But my Reverence for Years, and the Difgust I have to see any Body behave unworthy of them, makes me take the greater Liberty: Which, however, I shall wish I had not taken, if it meets not with that Allowance, which I have always had from your Ladyship in what I write.

God knows whether ever I may enjoy the Bleffing I so much revere in others. For now my heavy Time approaches. But I was so apprehensive before, and so troublesome to my best Friends, with my vapourish Fears, that now (with a perfect Refignation to the Divine Will) I will only add, that I am

Your Ladyship's most obliged Sister and Servant,

P. B.

My dear Billy, and Miss Goodwin, improve both of them every Day, and are all I can defire or expect them to be. Could Miss's poor Mamina be here with a Wish, and back again, how much would she be delighted with one of our Afternoon Conferences; our Sunday Employments, especially !- And let me tell your Ladyship, that I am very happy in another young Gentleman of the Dean's recommending, instead of Mr. Adams.

LETTER XLVII.

My dearest Lady,

we

ore we

re-

ich

afts

, 1

and

thy

ch,

eets

had

ing

avy

be-

rith

lig-

am

nt,

B.

oth

or s

ima

uch

ter-

nts,

up,

rle-

of

T-

A M once more, blessed be God for all his Mercies to me! enabled to dedicate to you the first Fruits of my Penmanship, on my Upsitting, to thank you, and my noble Lord, for all your kind Solicitudes for my Welfare. Billy every Day improves, Miss is all I wish her to be, and my second dear Boy continues to be as lovely and as fine a Baby as your Ladyship was pleased to think him; and their Papa, the best of Husbands!

I am glad to hear Lady Betty is likely to be so happy. Mr. B. says, her noble Admirer is as worthy a Gentleman as any in the Peerage; and I beg of your Ladyship to congratulate the dear Lady, and her noble Parents, in my Name, if I should be at a Distance, when the Nuptials are celebrated.

I have had the honour of a Visit from my Lady, the Countess Dowager, on occasion of her leaving the Kingdom for a Year or two, for which Space she designs to reside in Italy; principally at Naples or Florence; a Design she took up, some time ago, as I believe I mentioned to your Ladyship; but which it seems she could not conveniently put into execution till now.

Mr. B. was abroad when her Ladyship came, having taken a Turn to Gloucester the Day before, and I expected him not till the next Day. Her Ladyship sent her Gentleman, the preceding Evening, to let me know, that Business had brought her as far as Wooburn; and if it would not be unacceptable, she would pay her Respects to me, at Breakfast, the next Morning, being speedily to leave England. I returned, that I should be very proud of that Honour. And about ten her Ladyship came.

N 4

She

She was exceedingly fond of my two Boys, the little Man, and the pretty Baby, as she call'd them; and I had very different Emotions from the Expresfion of her Love to Billy, and her Vifit to me, from what I had once before. She was forry, she faid, Mr. B. was abroad; though her Business was principally with me. For Mrs. B. faid she, I come to tell you all that palled between Mr. B. and myself, that you may not think worse of either of us than we deferve; and I could not leave England, till I had done myself the Pleasure of waiting on you for this Purpose; and yet, perhaps, from the Distance of Time, you'll think it needless now. And indeed, I should have waited on you before, to have cleared up my Character with you, had I thought I should have been so long kept on this Side of the Water.

I faid, I was very forry I had ever been uneafy, when I had two Persons of so much honour-Nay, faid she, interrupting me, you have no need to apologize: Things looked bad enough, as they were represented to you, to justify greater Uneafiness

than you express'd.

She ask'd me, Who that pretty genteel Miss was? - I faid, a Relation of Lord Davers, who was intrusted lately to my Care. Then, Miss, said her Ladyship, and kissed her, you are very happy.

Believing the Countefs was defirous of being alone with me, I faid, My dear Miss Goodwin, won't you go to your little Nursery, my Love? For so she calls my last Bleffing - You'd be forry the Baby should cry for you-For she was so taken with the charming Lady, that the was loth to leave us—But on my faying this, withdrew.

When we were alone, the Countess began her Story with a fweet Confusion, which added to her Loveliness. She said, she would be brief, because fhe should exact all my Attention, and not suffer me

to interrupt her till the had done.

She

6

· I

4 1

& C

60

6

6 t

f t

40

6 6

She began with acknowledging, 'that she thought, when she first faw Mr. B. at the Masquerade, that he was the finest Gentleman she had ever seen; that the allow'd Freedoms of the Place had made her take Liberties in following him, and engaging 'him wherever he went. She blamed him very freely for passing for a single Man; for that she ' faid, (fince she had so splendid a Fortune of her own) was all the was folicitous about; having 'never, as the confess'd, seen a Man the could like fo well; her former Marriage having been in some fort forced upon her, at an Age when she knew onot how to distinguish; and that she was very 'loth to believe him marry'd, even when she had 'no Reason to doubt it. Yet, this I must say, ' Madam, faid her Ladyship, I never heard a Man, 'when he owned he was married, express himself with more affectionate Regard and Fondness than: he did of you, whenever he spoke of you to me; which made me long to fee you: For I had a great Opinion of those personal Advantages which every one flattered me with; and was very unwilbling to yield the Palm of Beauty to you.

for permitting his Visits, after I knew he was marry'd. To be sure, that was a thoughtless, and a faulty Part of my Conduct—But the World's saucy Cenfures, and my Friends indiscreet Interposals, incensed me; and, knowing the Uprightness of my own Heart, I was resolved to disregard both, where I sound they could not think worse of me than

they did.

,

n d

f

I

d

d

,

-

9

S

S

er

le

u

Is

d

1-

y

er

er

le

e

e

I am naturally of a high Spirit, impatient of Contradiction, always gave myself Freedoms, for which, fatisfy'd with my own Innocence, I thought myfelf above being accountable to any body—And then Mr. B. has such noble Sentiments, a Cou-

PAMELA; Or, 274

rage and Fearleffness, which I saw on more Occafions than one, that all Ladies who know the Weakness of their own Sex, and how much they want the Protection of the Brave, are taken with. · Then his personal Address was so peculiarly distinguishing, that having an Opinion of his Honour, I was embarrass'd greatly how to deny

myself his Conversation; although, you'll pardon ' me, Mrs. B. I began to be afraid, that my Reputation might fuffer in the World's Opinion for the

· Indulgence.

'Then, when I had resolved, as I did several times, to see him no more, some unforeseen Accident threw him in my way again, at one Entertainment or other; for I love Balls and Concerts,

and publick Diversions, perhaps, better than I ought; and then I had all my Resolves to begin

again. 'Yet this I can truly fay, whatever his Views were, I never heard from him the least indecent · Expression, nor saw in his Behaviour to me, aught that might make me very apprehensive; faving, that I began to fear, that by his infinuating Address, and noble Manner, I should be too much in his Power, and too little in my own, if I went on so little doubting, and so little alarmed, if ever

he should avow dishonourable Designs.

· I had often lamented, faid her Ladyship, that our Sex were prohibited, by the Defigns of the other upon their Honour, and by the World's · Censures, from conversing with the same Ease and Freedom with Gentlemen, as with one another. · And when once I asked myself, to what this Conversation might tend at last? and where the Pleafure each feem'd to take in the other's, might opossibly end? I resolved to break it off; and told him my Refolution next time I faw him. But he flopp'd my Mouth with a romantick Notion, as 6. fince

fince think it, (tho' a forry Plea will have Weight

in favour of a Proposal, to which one has no

Aversion) of Platonick Love; and we had an Inter-

course by Letters, to the Number of fix or eight, · I believe, on that and other Subjects.

'Yet all this time, I was the less apprehensive, because he always spoke so tenderly, and even with

Delight, whenever he mentioned his Lady; and I

' could not find, that you were at all alarmed at our

· Acquaintance; for I never scrupled to send my

Letters, by my own Livery, to your House, sealed.

with my own Seal.

At last, indeed, he began to tell me, that from the sweetest and the evenest Temper in the World, you feemed to be leaning towards melancholy, were always in Tears, or shewed you had been

' weeping, when he came home; and that you did

onot make his Return to you so agreeable as he used

to find it.

r

' I asked, if it were not owing to some Alteration: in his own Temper? If you might not be uneasy at our Acquaintance, and at his frequent Absence from you, and the like? He answered, No!—that

you were above Disguises, were of a noble and.

frank Nature, and would have taken some Oppor-

tunity to hint it to him, if you had.

'This, however, when I began to think ferioufly: of the Matter, gave me but little Satisfaction; and I was more and more convinced, that my Honour

e required it of me, to break off this Intimacy.

" And although I permitted Mr. B. to go with me to Tunbridge, when I went to take a House there, ' yet I was uneasy, as he saw. And, indeed, so was he, though he tarry'd a Day or two longer than he defigned, on account of a little Excursion my Sifter and her Lord, and he and I, made into Suffex, to see an Estate that I had thoughts of purchafing; for he was fo good as to look into my

N. 6.

Affairs for me, and has put them upon an admirable
Establishment.

'His Uneafiness, he told me, was upon your

Account, and he fent you a Letter to excuse himfelf for not waiting on you on Saturday, and to

tell you, he would dine with you on Monday.

And I remember, when I faid, Mr. B. you feem to be chagrined at something; you are more

thoughtful than usual; his Answer was—Madam, you are right. Mrs. B. and I have had a little

· Misunderstanding. She is so solemn and so me-

cult Matter to put her out of her right Mind:

· And I love her fo well, that then I should hardly

keep my own.

Is there no Reason think you, said I, to imagine, that your Acquaintance with me gives her Uneafiness? You know, Mr. B. how that Villain

. T. (a Man, faid she, whose insolent Address I

rejected with the Contempt it deserved) has slander'd us. How know you, but he has found a

way to your Wife's Ear, as he has done to my

Uncle's, and to all my Friends? And if so, it is best for us both to discontinue a Friendship, that,

e at the best, may be attended with disagreeable

· Consequences.

· He faid, he should find it out on his Return to you. And will you, faid I, ingenuously, acquaint

me with the Issue of your Inquiries? for, added

I, I never beheld a Countenance in fo young a

Lady, that seemed to mean more than Mrs. B.'s, when I saw her in Town; and notwithstanding

her Prudence, I could fee a Reserve and Thought-

fulness in it, that, if it was not natural to it, must

· indicate too much.

He returned to you, Madam: He wrote to me, in a very moving Letter, the Issue of your Con-

ference, and referred to some Papers of yours, that

he would shew me, as soon as he could procure them, they being out of your own Hands; and let me know, that T. was the Accuser, as I had suf-

· pected.

e

r

0

.

n

e

,

e

-

-

y

1-

er

n I

1-

a

y

15

t;

le

to.

nt

ed-

's,

ng

it-

ne,

n-

nat,

'In brief, Madam, when you went down into Kent, he came to me, and read some part of your Account to Lady Davers, of your Informant and Information; your Apprehensions; your Prudence; your Affection for him; the Reason of your Melancholy; and, according to the Appearance Things bore, Reason enough you had, especially from the Letter of Thomasine Fuller, which was one of T.'s vile Forgeries: For the we had often, for Argument's fake, talked of Polygamy, (he ar-' guing for it, I against it) yet had not Mr. B. dared, I will fay, nor was he inclined, I verily believe, to opropose any such thing to me: No, Madam, I was onot so much abandon'd of a Sense of Honour, as to give Reason for any one, but my impertinent and foolish Uncle, to impute such a Folly to me; and he had so behaved to me, that I cared not

what he thought.
Then, what he read to me, here and there, as

he pleased, gave me Reason to admire you for your generous Opinion of one you had so much

feeming Cause to be afraid of: He told me his

Apprehensions, from your uncommon Manner, that your Mind was in some Degree affected, and

bat your Mind was in some Degree affected, and your strange Proposal of parting with a Husband

every one knows you so dearly love: And we agreed

to forbear feeing each other, and all manner of Correspondence, except by Letter for one Month,

till some of my Affairs were settled, which had

been in great Diforder, and were in his kind Ma-

nagement then; and I had not one Relation, whom I car'd to trouble with them, because of their

Treatment of me on Mr. B.'s Account. And this

this, I told him, should not be neither, but thro'

· your Hands, and with your Consent.

And thus, Madam, said her Ladyship, have I told you the naked Truth of the whole Affair.

I have seen Mr. B. very seldom since, and when I have, it has been either at a Horse-race, in the open Field, or at some publick Diversion, by Ac-

cident, where only distant Civilities have passed

between us.

I respect him greatly; you must allow me to say that. Except in the Article of permitting me to

believe, for some Time, that he was a single Gen-

tleman, which is a Fault he cannot be excused for, and which made me heartily quarrel with him,

when I first knew it. He has behaved towards me

with fo much Generosity and Honour, that I could

have wished I had been of his Sex, fince he had a

Lady fo much more deserving than myself; and

then, had he had the same Esteem for me, there never would have been a more perfect Friendship.

I am now going, continu'd her Ladyship, to

embark for France, and shall pass a Year or two in

• Haly; and then I shall, I hope, return as solid, as

grave, as circumspect, tho' not so wise, as

Mrs. B.

In this manner the Countess concluded the Narrative! and I told her, that I was greatly obliged to her for the Honour she did me in this Visit, and the kind and considerate Occasion of it: But, that Mr. B. had made me entirely happy in every Particular, and had done her Ladyship the Justice she so well deserved, having taken upon himself the Blame of passing as a single Man, at his first Acquaintance with her.

Ladded, That I could hope her Ladyship might be prevented, by some happy Man, from leaving a KingKingdom, to which she was so great an Ornament, as well by her Birth, her Quality, and Fortune, as

by her Perfections of Person and Mind.

She faid, she had not been the happiest of her Sex in her former Marriage; altho' nobody, her Youth consider'd, thought her a bad Wife; and her Lord's Goodness to her, at his Death, had demonstrated his own favourable Opinion of her by Deeds, as he had done by Words, upon all Occasions: But that fhe was yet young; a little too gay and unfettled; and had her Head turn'd towards France and Italy, having pass'd some Time in those Countries, which fhe thought of with Pleasure, tho' then but a Girl of Twelve or Thirteen: That for this Reason, and having been on a late Occasion still more unsettled; (looking down with Blushes, which often overspread her Face, as the talked) the had refused some Offers, not despicable: That indeed Lord C- threatened to follow her to Italy, in hopes of meeting better Success there, than he had met with here; but if he did, tho' she would make no Resolutions, she believed the should be too much offended with him, to give him Reason to boast of his Journey; and this the rather, as she had Grounds to think, he had once entertained no very honourable Notions of her Friendship for Mr. B.

She wished to see Mr. B. and to take Leave of him, but not out of my Company, she was pleased to say. Your Ladyship's Consideration for me, reply'd I, lays me under high Obligation; but indeed, Madam, there is no Occasion for it, from any Diffidences I have in yours or in Mr. B.'s Honour. And if your Ladyship will give me the Pleasure of knowing when it will be most acceptable, I will beg of Mr. B. to oblige me with his Company to return this

Favour, the first Visit I make abroad.

You are very kind, Mrs. B. faid she: But I think to go to Tunbridge for a Fortnight, when I have disposed of every thing for my Embarkation, and so set out from thence. And if you should then be both in Kent, I should be glad to take you at your Word.

To be fure, I faid, Mr. B. at least, would attend her Ladyship there, if any thing should happen to

deprive me of that Honour.

You are very obliging, faid the Countes:—Itake great Concern to myself, for having been the Means of giving you a Moment's Uneasiness formerly: But I must now endeavour to be circumspect, in order to retrieve my Character, which has been so basely traduced by that presumptuous Fellow Turner, who hoped, I suppose, by that means, to bring me down to his Level.

Her Ladyship would not be prevailed upon to stay. Dinner; and saying, she should be at Wooburn all the next Day, took a very kind and tender Leave of me, wishing me all manner of Happiness, as I did her.

Mr. B. came home in the Evening, and next. Morning rode to Woodurn, to pay his Respects to the Countess, and came back in the Evening.

Thus happily, and to the Satisfaction of all Three,

I

t

W fo

b

de

fil

yo

as I hope, ended this perplexing Affair.

Mr. B. asks me, Madam, How I relish Mr. Locke's Treatise of Education? which he put into my Hands some time since, as I told your Ladyship. I answer'd, Very well; and I thought it an excellent Piece in the main.

I'll tell you, said he, what you shall do. You have not shewed me any thing you have written for a good while. I would be glad, you would fill up your Leisure Time, since you cannot be without a Pen, with your Observations on that Treatise, that I may know what you can object to it; for you say, Int.

In the main, which shews, that you do not intirely approve of every Part of it.

But will not that be presumptuous, Sir?

I admire Mr. Locke, reply'd he; and I admire my Pamela. I have no Doubt of his Excellencies; but I want to know the Sentiments of a young Mother, as well as of a learned Gentleman, upon the Subject of Education; because I have heard several Ladies censure some Part of his Regimen, when I am convinc'd, that the Fault lies in their own over-great Fondness for their Children.

As to myself, Sir, who, in the early Part of my Life, have not been brought up too tenderly, you will hardly meet with any Objection to the Part which I imagine you have heard most objected to by Ladies who have been more indulgently treated in their first Stage. But there are a few other Things that want clearing up to my Understanding; but which, however, may be the Fault of that.

Then, my Dear, said he, suppose me at a Distance from you, cannot you give me your Remarks in the same manner, as if you were writing to Lady Davers,

or to Miss Darnford, that was?

Yes, Sir, depending on your kind Favour to me,

I believe I could.

1

ı

p a I

>

Do then; and the less Restraint you write with, the more I shall be pleased with it. But I confine you not to Time or Place. We will make our Excursions as I once proposed to you; and do you write tome a Letter now-and-then upon the Subject; for the Places and Remarkables you will see, will be new only to yourself; nor will either of those Ladies expect from you an Itinerary, or a particular Description of Countries, which they will find better described by Authors, who have made it their Business to treat upon those Subjects. By this means, you will be usefully employed in your own way, which may turn to good Account to us both, and

to the dear Children, which it may please God to bestow upon us.

You don't expect, Sir, any thing regular or di-

gested from me?

I don't, my Dear. Let your Fancy and your Judgment be both employ'd; and I require no Method; for I know, in your easy, natural way, that would be a Confinement, which would cramp your Genius, and give what you write a stiff, formal Air, that I might expect in a Pedagogue, but not in my Pamela.

Well, but Sir, altho' I may write nothing to the Purpose, yet if Lady Davers is desirous to give it a Reading, you will allow me to transmit what I shall write to her Hands, when you have perus'd it yourself? For your good Sister is so indulgent to my Scribble, that she will expect to be always hearing from me; and this way I shall oblige her Ladyship, while I obey her Brother.

With all my Heart, he was pleased to say.

So, my Lady, I shall now-and-then pay my Respects to you in the writing way, tho' I must address myself, it seems, to my dearest Mr. B.; and I hope I shall be receiv'd on these my own Terms, since they are your Brother's Terms also; and at the same time, such as will convince you, how much I wish to approve myself, to the best of my poor Ability,

Your Ladyship's most obliged Sister,

and humble Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XLVIII.

My dearest Mr. B.

r :-

at

11

r,

y

ne

ll

r-

17

ng

p,

e-

ess

e I

ey

ie,

p-

B.

R

I HAVE been confidering of your Commands, in relation to Mr. Locke's Book; and fince you are pleas'd to give me Time to acquit myself of the Task, I shall take the liberty to propose to include in a little Book my humble Sentiments, as I did to Lady Davers, in that I shew'd you in relation to the Plays I had feen. And fince you confine me not to Time or Place, perhaps, I shall be three or four Years in completing it, because I shall reserve some Subjects to my further Experience in Childrens Ways and Tempers, and in order to benefit myself by those good Instructions, which I shall receive from your delightful Conversation, in that Compass of Time, if God spare us to one another: And then it will, moreover, be still worthier, than it can otherwise be, of the Perusal of the most honour'd and best belov'd of all my Correspondents, much honour'd and belov'd as they all are.

I must needs say, my dear Mr. B. that this is a Subject to which I was always particularly attentive; and among the Charities your bountiful Heart permits me to dispense to the Poor and Indigent, I have had always a watchful Eye upon the Children of fuch, and endeavoured, by Questions put to them, as well as to their Parents, to inform myself of their little Ways and Tempers, and how Nature delights to work in different Minds, and how it might be pointed to their Good, according to their respective Capacities; and I have for this Purpose erected, with your Approbation, a little School of Seven or Eight Children, among which are Four in the earliest Stages, when they can but just speak, and call for what they want, or love: And I am not a little pleas'd to observe, when I visit them in their School-time, that Principles

Principles of Goodness and Virtue may be instilled into their little Hearts much earlier than is usually imagin'd. And why should it not be so? for may not the Child, that can tell its Wants, and make known its Inclination, be easily made sensible of yours, and what you expect from it, provided you take a proper Method? For, sometimes, Signs and Tokens, (and even Looks) uniformly practised, will do as well as Words; as we see in such of the Young of the Brute Creation as we are disposed to domesticate, and to teach to practice those little Tricks, of which the Aptness or Docinty of their Natures makes them capable.

But yet, dearest Sir, I know not enough of the next Stage, the maturer Part of Life, to touch upon that, as I wish'd to do; and yet there is a natural Connection and Progression from the one to the other: And I would not be thought a vain Creature, who believes herself equal to every Subject, because she is indulg'd with the good Opinion of her Friends, in a few, which are supposed to be within her own

Capacity.

For, I humbly conceive, that it is no small Point of Wisdom to know, and not to mistake, one's own Talents; and for this Reason, permit me, dear Sir, to suspend, till I am better qualify'd for it, even my own Proposal of beginning my little Book; and, in the mean time, to touch upon a few Places of the admirable Author you have put into my Hand, that seem to me to warrant another way of Thinking, than that which he prescribes.

But, dear Sir, let me premise, that all that your dear Babies can demand of my Attention for some time to come, is their Health; and it has pleas'd God to bless them with such sound Limbs, and, to all Appearance, good Constitutions, that I have very little to do, but to pray for them every time I pray for their dear Papa; and that is hourly; and yet not

fo often as you confer upon me Benefits and Favours, and new Obligations, even to the Prevention of all my Wishes, were I to fit down to study for what must be the next.

As to this Point of Health, Mr. Locke gives thefe

plain and eafy to be observed Rules.

2

d

f

S

e

n

al

ie

e, fe

S,

n

nt

n

r,

ly

in he

at

g,

ur

ne s'd

to

ery

ay

So.

He prescribes, First, Plenty of open Air. That this is right, the Infant will inform one, who, tho' it cannot speak, will make Signs to be carry'd abroad, and is never so well pleas'd, as when it is enjoying the open and free Air; for which Reason I conclude, that this is one of those natural Pointings, as one may call them, that are implanted in every Creature, teaching it to choose its Good, and to avoid its Evil.

Sleep is the next, which he injoins to be indulg'd to its utmost Extent: An admirable Rule, as I humbly conceive; fince found Sleep is one of the greatest Nourishers of Nature, both to the once Young and to the twice Young, if I may be allow'd the Phrase. And I the rather approve of this Rule, because it keeps the Nurse unemploy'd, who otherwise, perhaps, would be doing it the greatest Mischief, by cramming and stuffing its little Bowels, till they were ready to burst. And, if I am right, what an inconfiderate, and foolish, as well as pernicious Practice is it, for a Nurse to waken the Child from its nourishing Sleep, for fear it should suffer by Hunger, and instantly pop the Breast into its pretty Mouth, or provoke it to feed, when it has no Inclination to either; and for want of Digestion, must have its Nutriment turn to Repletion, and bad Humours!

Excuse me, dear Sir, these lesser Particulars. Mr. Locke begins with them; and surely they may be allowed in a young Mamma, writing (however it be to a Gentleman of Genius and Learning) to a Papa, on a Subject, that in its lowest Beginnings ought not to be unattended to by either. I will therefore pursue my excellent Author without further

Apology,

Apology, fince you have put his Work into my Hands.

The next Thing then, which he prescribes, is plain Diet. This speaks for itself; for the Baby can have no corrupt Taste to gratify: All is pure, as out of the Hand of Nature; and what is not plain and natural, must vitiate and offend.

Then, no Wine, or strong Drink. Equally just;

and for the same Reasons.

Little or no Physick. Undoubtedly right. For the Use of Physick, without Necessity, or by way of Precaution, as some call it, begets the Necessity of Physick; and the very Word supposes Distemper or Disorder; and where there is none, would a Parent beget one; or, by frequent Use, render the salutary Force of Medicine inessectual, when it was wanted?

Next, he forbids too warm and too freight Clothing. Dear Sir, this is just as I wish it. How has my Heart ached, many and many a time, when I have feen poor Babies roll'd and fwath'd, ten or a dozen times round; then Blanket upon Blanket, Mantle upon that; its little Neck pinn'd down to one Posture; its Head, more than it frequently needs, triple-crown'd like a young Pope, with Covering upon Covering; its Legs and Arms, as if to prevent that kindly Stretching, which we rather ought to promote, when it is in Health, and which is only aiming at Growth and Enlargement, the former bundled up, the latter pinn'd down; and how the poor Thing lies on the Nurse's Lap, a miserable little pinion'd Captive, goggling and staring with its Eyes, theonly Organs it has at Liberty, as if it was supplicating for Freedom to its fetter'd Limbs! Nor has it any Comfort at all, till, with a Sigh or two, like a dying Deer, it drops afleep; and happy then will it be, till the officious Nurse's Care shall awaken it for its undefired Food, just as if the good Woman was refolv'd

refolv'd to try its Constitution, and were willing to see how many Difficulties it could overcome.

ny

15

an

out

nd

ft;

the

of

of

or

ent

ary

4?

th-

has

n I

or

cet,

one

ds,

ing

ent

to

nly

ner

the

ttle

yes,

pli-

is it

e a

ll it

for

was

lv'd

Then this Gentleman advises, that the Head and Feet should be kept cold; and the latter often us'd to cold Water, and expos'd to Wet, in order to lay the Foundation, as he fays, of an healthy and hardy Constitution.

Now, Sir, what a Pleasure is it to your Pamela, that her Notions, and her Practice too, fall in fo exactly with this learned Gentleman's Advice, that, excepting one Article, which is, that your Billy has not yet been accustom'd to be wet-shod, every other Particular has been observ'd! -And don't you see what a charming, charming Baby he is?—Nay, and so is your little Davers, for his Age—pretty Soul!

Perhaps some, were they to see this, would not be so ready, as I know you will be, to excuse me; and would be apt to fay, What Nursery Impertinencies are these to trouble a Man with !- But, with all their Wisdom, they would be mistaken; for if a Child has not good Health, (and are not these Rules the moral Foundation, as I may say, of that Bleffing?) its animal Org ons will play but poorly in a weak or crazy Case. These, therefore, are necellary Rules to be observed for the first two or three Years; for then the little Buds of their Minds will begin to open, and their watchful Mamma will be employ'd, like a skilful Gardener, in affisting and encouraging the charming Flowerthro' its feveral hopeful Stages to Perfection, when it shall become one of the principal Ornaments of that delicate Garden, your honour'd Family. Pardon me, Sir, if in the above Paragraph I am too figurative. I begin to be afraid I am out of my Sphere, writing to your dear Self, on these important Subjects.

But be that as it may, I will here put an end to this my first Letter, (on the earliest Part of my Subject) rejoicing in the Opportunity you have given me of

producing

producing a fresh Instance of that Duty and Affection, wherewith I am, and shall ever be, my dearest Mr. B.

Your gratefully happy P. B.

LETTER XLIX.

Twill L now, my dearest, my best beloved Correspondent of all, begin, since the tender Age of my dear Babies will not permit me to have an Eye yet to their better Part, to tell you what are the little Matters to which I am not quite so well reconciled in Mr. Locke: And this I shall be better enabled to do, by my Observations upon the Temper and natural Bent of my dear Miss Goodwin, as well as by those which my Visits to the bigger Children of my little School, and those at the Cottages adjacent, have enabled me to make: For human Nature, Sir, you are not to be told, is human Nature, whether in the High-born, or in the Low.

This excellent Author, in the Fifty-second Section, having justly disallow'd of slavish and corporal Punishments in the Education of those we would have to be wife, good, and ingenious Men, adds:—— On

the other Side, to flatter Children by Rewards of Things, that are pleasant to them, is as carefully

to be avoided. He that will give his Son Apples,

or Sugar-plumbs, or what else of this kind he is most delighted with, to make him learn his Book,

does but authorize his Love of Pleasure, and

cockers up that dangerous Propenfity, which he ought by all means, to subdue and stifle in him.

You can never hope to teach him to master it,

whilst you compound for the Check you give his Inclination in one Place, by the Satisfaction you

propose to it in another: To make a good, a

wife, and a virtuous Man, 'tis fit he should learn

to cross his Appetite, and deny his Inclination to

Riches, Finery, or pleafing his Palate, &c.'

r-

of

ye

tle

l'd

to

u-

ofe

tle

n-

are

the

011,

th-

to

On

s of

illy

les,

ie is

ook,

and

n he

him. er it,

e his

you

learn

6 to

This, Sir, is excellently faid; but is it not a little too philosophical and abstracted, not only for the generality of Children, but for the Age he supposes them to be of, if one may guess by the Apples and the Sugar-plums proposed for the Rewards of their Well-doing? Would not this, Sir, require that Memory or Reslection in Children, which the same Author, in another Place, calls the Concomitant of Prudence and Age, and not of Childhood?

It is undoubtedly very right, to check an unreasonable Appetite, and that at its first Appearance. But if so small and so reasonable an Inducement will prevail, surely, Sir, it might be complied with. A generous Mind takes Delight to win over others by good Usage and Mildness, rather than by Severity; and it must be a great Pain to such an one, to be always inculcating, on his Children or Pupils, the Doctrine of Self-

denial, by Methods quite grievous to his own Nature. What I would then humbly propose, is, that the Encouragements offer'd to Youth, should, indeed, be innocent ones, as the Gentleman injoins, and not such as would lead to Luxury, either of Food or Apparel: But I humbly think it necessary, that Rewards, proper Rewards, should be propos'd as Incentives to laudable Actions: For is it not by this Method that the whole World is influenc'd and govern'd? Does not God himself, by Rewards and Punishments, make it our Interest, as well as our Duty, to obey HIM? And can we propose to ourselves, for the Government of our Children, a better Example than that of the Creator?

This fine Author feems, dear Sir, to think he had been a little of the strictest, and liable to some Exception. I say not this, proceeds he, (§ 53. that I would have Children kept from the Conveniences or Pleasures of Life, that are not injurious to their Vol. IV.

them as may be, in a plentiful Enjoyment of what-

foever might innocently delight them.' And yet, dear Sir, he immediately subjoins a very hard and difficult Proviso to the Indulgence he has now granted:—— Provided, says he, it be with this Caution,

that they have those Enjoyments only as the Conse quences of the State of Esteem and Acceptation

s they are in with their Parents and Governors.'

I doubt, my dear Mr. B. this is expecting such a Distinction and Discretion in Children, as they are feldom capable of in their tender Years, and requiring fuch Capacities as are not commonly to be met with: So that it is not prescribing to the Generality, as this excellent Author intended. 'Tis, I humbly conceive, next to impossible that their tender Minds should diffinguish beyond Facts: They covet this or that Play-thing, and the Parent, or Governor, takes Advantage of its Defires, and annexes to the Indulgence which the Child hopes for, fuch or fuch a Task or Duty, as a Condition; and shews himself pleased with its Compliance with it: So the Child wins its Play-thing, and receives the Praise and Commendation fo necessary to lead on young Minds to laudable Pursuits. But, dear Sir, shall it not be fuffered to enjoy the innocent Reward of its Compliance, unless it can give Satisfaction, that its greatest Delight is not in having the thing coveted, but in performing the Task, or obeying the Injunctions imposed upon it as a Condition of its being oblig'd? I doubt, Sir, this is a little too strict, and not to be expected from Children. A Servant, full grown, would not be able to shew, that, on condition he comply'd with such and such Terms, (which, it is to be suppos'd by the Offer, he would not have comply'd with, but for that Inducement) he should have fuch and fuch a Reward; I fay, he would hardly

hardly be able to shew, that he preferr'd the Pleasure of performing the requisite Conditions to the stipulated Reward. Nor is it necessary he should; for he is not the less a good Servant, or a virtuous Man, if he own the Conditions painful, and the Reward necessary to his low State in the World, and that otherwise he would not undergo any Service at all.

—Why then should this be exacted from a Child?

t,

d

t-

n,

e-

n

1 2

re

ir-

ty,

bly

nds

s or kes

lul-

h a

felf

hild

and

inds

t be

om-

atest

at in

tions

ig'd?

to be

own,

on he

, it is

have

hould

would

hardly

Let therefore, if I may presume to say so, innocent Rewards be proposed, and let us be contented to lead on the ductile Minds of Children to a Love of their Duty, by obliging them with fuch: We may tell them what we expect in this Case; but we ought not, I humbly conceive, to be too rigorous in exacting it; for, after all, the Inducement will certainly be the uppermost Consideration with the Child: 'Tis out of Nature to suppose it otherwise; nor, as I hinted, had it been offer'd to it, if the Parent himfelf had not thought fo. And therefore, we can only let the Child know his Duty in this respect, and that he ought to give a Preference to that; and then rest ourselves contented, although we should discern, that the Reward is the chief Incentive, if it do but oblige to the Performance of it. For this, from whatever Motive inculcated, may beget a Habit in the Child of doing it; and then, as it improves in Years, one may hope, that Reason will take Place, and enable him, from the most solid and durable Motives, to give a Preference to the Duty.

Upon the whole, then, may I, Sir, venture to fay, that we should not insist upon it, that the Child should so nicely distinguish away its little innate Passions, as if we expected it to be born a Philosopher? Self-denial is indeed a most excellent Doctrine to be inculcated into Children, and it must be done early too: But we must not be too severe in our exacting it; for a Duty too rigidly insisted upon, will make it odious. This Mr. Locke himself excel-

Q 2 lently

lently observes in another Place, on the Head of too great Severity; which he illustrates by a familiar Comparison: Offensive Circumstances, says he,

ordinarily infect innocent things, which they are ioined with. And the very Sight of a Cup, where-

in any one uses to take nauseous Physick, turns his Stomach; so that nothing will relish well out

of it, though the Cup be never fo clean and well-

· shaped, and of the richest Materials.'

Permit me, dear Sir, to add, that Mr. Locke proceeds to explain himself still more rigorously on the Subject of Rewards; which I quote, to shew I have not misunderstood him: 'But these Enjoyments, fays he, should never be offer'd or bestow'd on Children, as the Rewards of this or that particular · Performance, that they shew an Aversion to, or to which they would not have applied themselves without that Temptation.' If, my dear Mr. B. the Minds of Children can be led on by innocent Inducements to the Performance of a Duty, of which they are capable, what I have humbly offer. ed, is enough, I prefume, to convince one, that it may be done. But if ever a particular Study be proposed to be master'd, or a Bias to be overcome, (that is not an indistensable Requisite to his future Life or Morals) to which the Child shews an Aversion, I would not, methinks, have him be too much tempted or compell'd to conquer or fubdue it, especially if it appear to be a natural or rivetted Aversion.

For, Sir, permit me to observe, that the Education and Studies of Children ought, as much as possible, to be suited to their Capacities and Inclinations: And, by this means, we may expect to have always useful, and often great Men, in different Professions: For, that Genius, which does not prompt to the Prosecution of one Study, may shine in another no less necessary Part of Science. But,

if the Promise of innocent Rewards would conquer this Aversion, yet they should not be applied with this View; for the best Consequence that can be hoped for, will be tolerable Skill in one thing, in-

stead of most excellent, in another.

S

t

-

e

e

5,

-

ar

to

es

B.

nt

of

r.

it

0-

at

or

I

ot-

lly

ca-

of-

11-

to

Fe-

not

ine

ut,

if

Nevertheless, I must repeat, that is, as the Child grows up, and is capable of so much Reason, that, from the Love of the Inducement, one can raise his Mind to the Love of the Duty, it should be done by all means. But, my dear Mr. B. I am asraid, that that Parent or Tutor will meet but with little success, who, in a Child's tender Years, shall resuse to comply with its Foibles, till he sees it values its Duty, and the Pleasure of obeying his Commands, beyond the little Enjoyment on which its Heart is fixed. For, as I humbly conceive, that Mind, which can be brought to preser its Duty to its Appetites, will want little of the Persection of the wifest Philosophers.

Besides, Sir, permit me to say, that I am asraid, this perpetual Opposition between the Passions of the Child, and the Duty to be enforced, especially when it fees how other Children are indulg'd, (for if this Regimen could be observ'd by any, it would be impossible it should become general, while the fond and the inconsiderate Parents are so large a Part of Mankind) will cow and dispirit a Child; and will, perhaps, produce a Necessity of making use of Severity to subdue him to this Temper of Self-denial; for if the Child refuses, the Parent must infift; and what will be the Consequence?— Must it not introduce a harsher Discipline than this Gentleman allows of? - and which, I prefume to fay, did never yet do Good to any but to flavish and base Spirits, if to them: A Discipline which Mr. Locke every where justly condemns.

See here, dear Sir, a Specimen of the Presumption of your Girl: What will she come to in time? you

will perhaps fay — Her next Step will be to arraign myself.—No, no, dear Sir, don't think so: For my Duty, my Love, and my Reverence, shall be your Guards, and defend you from every thing saucy in me, but the bold Approaches of my Gratitude, which shall always testify for me, how much I am

Your obliged and dutiful

P. B.

LETTER L.

My dearest Mr. B.

I will continue my Subject, altho' I have not had an Opportunity to know whether you approve of my Notions or not, by reason of the Excursions you have been pleas'd to allow me to make in your beloved Company to the Sea-ports of this Kingdom, and to the more noted inland Towns of Essex, Kent, Sussex, Hampshire, and Dorsetshire, which have given me infinite Delight and Pleasure, and enlarged my Notions of the Wealth and Power of the Kingdom, in which God's Goodness has given you so considerable a Stake.

My next Topick will be upon a Home Education, which Mr. Locke prefers, for several weighty Reasons, to a School one, provided such a Tutor can be procured, as he makes next to an Impossibility to procure. The Gentleman has set forth the Inconveniencies of both, and was himself so discouraged on a Review of them, that he was ready, as he says, to throw up his Pen. My chief Cares, dear Sir, on this Head, are three: 1st, The Difficulty, which, as I said, Mr. Locke makes almost insuperable, to find a qualified Tutor. 2dly, The Necessity there is, according to Mr. Locke, of keeping the Youth out of the Company of the meaner Servants, who

may fet him bad Examples. And, 3dly, Those still greater Difficulties, which will arise from the Examples of his Parents, if they are not very discreet and

circumspect.

n

y

ır

n

h

ad

ve

ns

ur

n,

nt,

en

ny

n,

si-

a-

ty

an

to

n-

ed.

ys,

on

ch,

to

ere

ith

ho

ay

As to the Qualifications of the Tutor, Mr. Locke fupposes, that he is to be so learned, so discreet, so wise, in short, so perfect a Man, that, I doubt, and so does Mr. Locke, such a one is hardly possible to be met with for this bumble and slavish Employment. I presume, Sir, to call it so, because of the too little Regard that is generally paid to these useful Men in the Families of the Great, where they are frequently put upon a Foot with the uppermost Servants, and the rather, if they happen to be Men of Modesty.

I would, fays this Gentleman, from Childrens first beginning to talk, have some discreet, sober,

' nay, wife Person about them, whose Care it should

be to fathion them right, and to keep them from all

Ill; especially the Infection of bad Company. I

think, continues be, this Province requires great Sobriety, Temperance, Tenderness, Diligence,

and Diferetion; Qualities hardly to be found united

in Persons that are to be had for ordinary Salaries,

" nor eafily to be found any where."

If this, Sir, be the Cafe, does not this excellent Author recommend a Scheme, that is render'd in a

manner impracticable from this Difficulty?

As to these Qualities being more rarely to be met with in Persons that are to be had for ordinary Salaries, I cannot help being of Opinion, (altho', with Mr. Locke, I think, no Expence should be spared, if that would do) that there is as good a Chance for sinding a proper Person among the needy Scholars, (if not of a low and fordid Turn of Mind) as among the more Assuent: Because the narrow Circumstances of the former, (which probably became a Spur to his own Improvement) will, it is likely, at O 4

first setting out in the World; make him be glad to embrace an Offer of this kind in a Family which has Interest enough to prefer him, and will quicken his Diligence to make him deferve Preferment: And if fuch a one wanted any thing of that requifite Politeness, which some would naturally expect from Scholars of better Fortune, might not that be supplied to the Youth by the Conversation of Parents, Relations, and Visitors, in conjunction with those other Helps which young Men of Family and large Expectations confrantly have, and which few learned Tutors can give him.

I fay not this, dear Sir, to countenance the wretched Niggardliness (which this Gentleman justly censures) of those who grudge a handsome Confideration to so necessary and painful a Labour as that of a Tutor, which, where a deferving Man can be met with, cannot be too genteelly rewarded, nor himself too respectfully treated. I only take the Liberty to deliver my Opinion, that a low Condition is as likely, as any other, with a Mind not ungenerous, as I faid, to produce a Man who has these good Qualities, as well for the Reasons I have hinted at, as for others, which might be men-

tion'd.

But Wir. Lucke proceeds with his Difficulties in this Particular: 'To form a young Gentleman as he should be, says he, 'tis fit his Governor should be well-bred, understand the Ways of Carriage, and Measures of Civility, in all the Variety of · Persons, Times, and Places; and keep his Pupil, as far as his Age requires, constantly to the Observation of them. This is an Art, continues be, not to be learnt or taught by Books. Nothing can e give it, but good Company, and Observation, 'join'd together.'

And in another Place, 'Befides being well bred, the Tutor should know the World well; the Ways,

Ways, the Humours, the Follies, the Cheats, the · Faults of the Age he has fallen into, and particularly of the Country he lives in: These he should be able to shew to his Pupil, as he finds him capable; teach him Skill in Men and their Manners; e pull off the Mask, which their several Callings and Pretences cover them with; and make his · Pupil discern what lies at the Bottom, under such Appearances, that he may not, as unexperienced ' young Men are apt to do, if they are unwarn'd, take one thing for another, judge by the Out-' fides, and give himself up to Shew, and the Infi-' nuation of a fair Carriage, or an obliging Application: Teach him to guess at, and beware of, the Designs of Men he hath to do with, neither with ' too much Suspicion, nor too much Confidence.'

1

,

e

e

d

e

n

e

r

n

1,

e

-

1-

15

I

14

n

28

ld

e,

of

as.

r-

ot

in

n,

d,

ne

S,

This, dear Sir, is excellently faid: 'Tis noble Theory, and if the Tutor be a Man void of Refentment and Caprice, and will not be govern'd by partial Confiderations in his own Judgment of Persons and Things, all will be well: But if otherwise, may he not take advantage of the Confidence placed in him, to the Injury of some worthy Person, and by degrees monopolize the young Gentleman to himfelf, and govern his Passions as absolutely, as I have heard some first Ministers have done those of their Prince, equally to his own personal Disreputation, and to the Disadvantage of his People? But,

All this, and much more, according to Mr. Locke, is the Duty of a Tutor; and on the finding out such a one, depends his Scheme of a Home Education. No Wonder then, that he himself says, "When I ' confider the Scruples and Cautions I here lay in vour Way, methinks it looks as if I advised you to ' fomething, which I would have offer'd at, but in ' effect not done,' &c. Permit me, dear Sir, in this. Place, to express my Fear, that it is hardly possible: for any one, of Talents inferior to those of Mr. Locke

himfelf 0.5

himself, to come up to the Rules he has laid down upon this Subject; and 'tis to be question'd, whether even he, with all that vast Stock of natural Reason, and solid Sense, for which, as you tell me, Sir, he was so famous, had attain'd to these Persections, at

his first setting out into Life.

Now, therefore, dear Sir, you can't imagine how these Difficulties perplex me, as to my knowing how to judge which is best, a Home or a School Education. -For hear what this excellent Author justly observes on the latter, among other things no less to the purpose: 'I am sure, he who is able to be at the Charge of a Tutor at Home, may there give his Son a more egenteel Carriage, more manly Thoughts, and a Sense of what is worthy and becoming, with a greater Proficiency in Learning into the Bargain, and ripen him up fooner into a Man, than any at School can do. Not that I blame the Schoolmaster, in this, says he, or think it to be laid to his • Charge. The Difference is great between two or three Pupils in the same House, and three or four-· fcore Boys lodg'd up and down: For let the Mafter's Industry and Skill be never so great, it is imposfible he should have 50 or 100 Scholars under his • Eye any longer than they are in the School together.' But then, Sir, if there be such a Difficulty, as Mr. Locke fays, to meet with a proper Tutor for the Home Education, which he thus prefers, what a perplexing thing is this?

But still, according to this Gentleman, another Difficulty attends a Home Education; and that is, what I hinted at before, in my fecond Article, the Necessity of keeping the Youth out of the Company of the meaner Servants, who may set him bad Examples. For thus he says: 'Here is another great Inconvenience, which Children receive from the ill Examples which they meet with from the meaner Servants. They are wholly, if possible, to

be kept from fuch Conversation: For, the Contagion of these ill Precedents, both in Civility and

Virtue, horribly infects Children, as often as they come within the Reach of it. They frequently learn

from unbred or debauch'd Servants, fuch Language, untowardly Tricks and Vices, as otherwise they

would be ignorant of all their Lives. 'Tis a hard

· Matter wholly to prevent this Mischief, continues

he; you will have very good Luck, if you never have a clownish or vicious Servant, and if from

them your Children never get any Infection.'

a

a

S

r

S

r

Then, Sir, my third Point (which I mention'd in the Beginning of this Letter) makes a still stronger Objection, as it may happen, against a Home Education; to wit, the Example of the Parents themselves, if they be not very circumspect and discreet.

All these Difficulties being put together, let me, dear Sir, humbly propose it, as a Matter for your Confideration and Determination, Whether there be not a middle Way to be found out in a School-Education, that may remedy fome of these Inconveniencies? For suppose, you cannot get a Tutor so qualified, as Mr. Locke thinks he ought to be, for your Billy, as he grows up. Suppose there is Danger from your meaner Servants; and suppose we his Parents should not be able to lay ourselves under the requifite Restraints, in order to form his Mind by our own Examples, which, I hope, by God's Grace, however, will not be the Case—Cannot some Master be found out, who shall be fo well rewarded for his Care of a few young Gentlemen, as shall make it worth his while to be contented with those few? suppose five, fix, seven, or eight at most; whose Morals and breeding he may attend to, as well as to their Learning? The farther this Master lives from the young Gentleman's Friends, the better it may be. We will hope, that he is a Man of a mild Dif-0 6

position, but strict in his Discipline, and who shall make it a Rule not to give Correction for small Faults, or till every other Method has been try'd; who carries fuch a just Dignity in his Manner, without the Appearance of Tyranny, that his Looks may be of greater Force, than the Words of some, and his Words than the Blows of others; and who will rather endeavour to shame, than terrify, a Youth out of his Faults. Then, Sir, suppose this Gentleman was to allot a particular Portion of Time for the more learned Studies; and before the Youth was tired with them, suppose another Portion was allotted for the Writing and Arithmetick Parts; and then, to relieve his Mind from both, suppose the Dancingmaster should take his Part; and innocent Exercises of mere Diversion, to fill up the rest, at his own Choice; in which, diverted by such a Rotation of Employments, (all thus render'd delightful by their fuccessive Variety) he would hardly wish to pass much Time. For the Dancing of itself, with the Dancing-mafter's Instructions, if a well-bred Man, will answer both Parts, that of Breeding, and that of Exercise: And thus different Studies, at one Time, may be master'd.

Moreover, the Emulation, which will be inspired, where there are several young Gentlemen, will be of inconceivable Use both to Tutor and Pupil, in lessening the Trouble of the one, and advancing the Learning of the other, which cannot be expected, where there is but a single Youth to be taken care of.

Such a Master will know it to be his Interest, as well as his Duty, to have a watchful Eye over the Conduct and Behaviour of his Servants. His Assistants, in the different Branches of Science and Education, will be Persons of approved Prudence, for whom he will think himself answerable, since his own Reputation, as well as his Livelihood, will de-

depend upon their Behaviour. The young Gentlemen will have young Gentlemen for their Companions, all under the Influence of the same Precepts and Directions; and if some chosen Period were fixed, once a Week, as a Reward for some Excellence, where, at a little Desk, raised a Step or two above the other Seats, the excelling Youth should be set to read, under the Master's Direction, a little Portion from the best Translations of the Greek and Roman Historians, and even from the best English Authors; this might, in a very engaging manner, initiate them into the Knowledge of the History of past Times, and of their own Country, and give them a Curiofity to pass some of their vacant Hours in the fame laudable Pursuit: For, dear Sir, I must still insist, that Rewards, and innocent Gratifications, as also little Honours and Distinctions, must needs be very attractive to the Minds of Youth.

For, don't you think, dear Sir, that the pretty Ride, and Dairy-house Breakfasting*, by which Miss Goodwin's Governess distinguishes the little Ladies who excel in their allotted Tasks, is a fine Encouragement to their ductile Minds?—Yes, it is, to be fure!—And I have often thought of it with Pleafure, and have, in a manner partaken of the Delight with which I have supposed their pretty Hearts must be fill'd on that Occasion. And why may not fuch little Triumphs be, in proportion, as incentive to Children, to make them endeavour to master laudable Tasks, as the Roman Triumphs, of different Kinds, and their Mural and Civick Crowns, all which I have heard you speak of, were to their Heroes and Warriors of old? For Mr. Dryden well observes, That

Men

e

o'e

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 360.

Men are but Children of a larger Growth: Our Appetites are apt to change as theirs, And full as craving too, and full as vain.

Permit me, Sir, to transcribe four or five Lines more for the Beauty of the Thought:

And yet the Soul, shut up in her dark Room, Viewing so clear abroad, at home sees nothing: But like a Mole in Earth, busy and blind, Works all her Folly up, and casts it outward To the World's open View—

Improving the Thought; methinks, I can fee the dear little Miss, who has, in some eminent Task, borne away the Palm, make her publick Entry, as I may call it, after her Dairy Breakfast, and pretty Airing, into the Governess's Court-yard, through a Row of her School-fellows, drawn out on each Side, to admire her; her Governess and Assistants receiving her at the Porch, their little Capitol, and lifting her out with Applauses and Encomiums, with a Thus shall it be done to the Miss, whom her Governess delighteth to honour! I fee not, my Mr. B. why the dear Miss, in this Case, as she moves thro' her admiring School-fellows, may not have her little Heart beat with as much Delight, be as gloriously elated, proportionably, as that of the greatest Hero in his Triumphal Car, who has return'd from Exploits, perhaps, much less laudable.

But how I ramble!—Yet, furely, Sir, you don't expect Method or Connection from your Girl. The Education of our Sex will not permit that, where it is best. We are forced to struggle for Knowledge, like the poor feeble Infant in the Month, who, as I describ'd in my first Letter on this Subject, is pinn'd and fetter'd down upon the Nurse's Lap; and who, if its little Arms happen, by chance, to escape its Nurse's Observation, and offer but to expand themselves, are

un-

immediately taken into Custody, and pinion'd down to their passive Behaviour. So, when a poor Girl, in spite of her narrow Education, breaks out into Notice, her Genius is immediately tamed by trisling Employments, lest, perhaps, she should become the Envy of one Sex, and the Equal of the other. But you, Sir, act more nobly with your Pamela; for you throw in her Way all the Opportunities of Improvement that can offer; and she has only to regret, that she cannot make a better use of them, and, of consequence, render herself more worthy of your generous Indulgence.

I know not how, Sir, to recover my Thread; and fo must break off with that Delight, which I always take, when I come near the Bottom of my Letters to your dear Self; because then I can boast of the

Honour which I have in being

,

t

e

t

i

d

if

s

1-

Your ever dutiful

P. B.

LETTER LI.

think from my last rambling Letter, that I am most inclin'd to a School Education for your Billy, some Years hence, if it shall please Ged to spare him to us. But indeed I cannot say that I am: I only lay several things together in my usual indigested and roving way, to take your Opinion upon, which, as it ought, will always be decisive with me. And indeed I am so thoroughly convinc'd by Mr. Locke's Reasons, where the Behaviour of Servants can be so well answered for, as that of yours can be, and where the Example of the Parents will be, as I hope, rather edifying than otherwise, that without being sway'd, as I think, by maternal Fondness, in this Case, I must needs

needs give a Preference to the Home Education; and the little Scheme I presum'd to form in my last, was only, as you will be pleas'd to remember, on a Supposition, that those necessary Points could not be so well secured.

In my Observations on this Head, I shall take the Liberty, in one or two Particulars, a little to differ from an Author, that I admire exceedingly; and that is the present Design of my writing these Letters; for I shall hereafter, if God spare my Life, in my little Book, (when you have kindly decided upon the Points in which I presume to differ from that Gentleman) . Thew you, Sir, my great Reverence and Esteem for him; and shall then be able to let you know all my Sentiments on this important Subject, and that more undoubtingly, as I shall be more improved by Years, and your Conversation; especially, Sir, if I have the Honour and Happiness of a foreign Tour with you, of which you give me Hope; so much are you pleas'd with the Delight I take in these improving Excurfions, which you have now favour'd me with at times, thro' more than half the Kingdom.

Well then, Sir, I will proceed to consider a little more particularly the Subject of a Home Education, with an Eye to those Difficulties, of which Mr. Locke fa

fo

pe

be

ot!

COL

fou

Bel

let

mit

culi

to n

to w

that

Leav

takes notice, as I mention'd in my laft.

10

As to the first, that of finding a qualified Tutor; we must not expect so much Perfection, I doubt, as Mr. Locke lays down as necessary. What, therefore, I humbly conceive is best to be done, will be to avoid choosing a Man of bigoted and narrow Principles, who yet shall not be tainted with sceptical or heterodox Notions; who shall not be a mere Scholaror Pedant; who has travell'd, and yet preserv'd his moral Character untainted; and whose Behaviour and Carriage is easy, unaffected, unformal, and genteel, as well acquiredly as naturally so, if possible; who shall not

not be dogmatical, positive, over-bearing, on one hand; nor too yielding, suppliant, fawning, on the other; who shall study the Child's natural Bent, in order to direct his Studies to the Point in which he is most likely to excel. In order to preserve the Respect due to his own Character from every one, he must not be a Busy-body in the Family, a Whisperer, a Tale-bearer; but be a Person of a benevolent Turn of Mind, ready to compose Differences: who shall avoid, of all things, that Foppishness of Dress and Appearance, which diftinguishes the Petit-maîtres, and French Ushers, (that I have seen at some Boarding-schools) for Coxcombs, rather than Guides of Education: For as I have heard you, my best Tutor, often observe, the Peculiarities of Habit, where a Person aims at something fantastick, or out of Character, are an undoubted Sign of a wrong Head: For fuch a one is fo kind as always to hang out on his Sign what fort of Furniture he has in his Shop, to fave you the Trouble of asking Questions about him; fo that one may as eafily know by his outward Appearance what he is, as one can know a Widow by her Weeds.

Such a Person as I have thus negatively describ'd, may be sound without very much Difficulty perhaps, because some of these Requisites are personal, and others are such as are obvious at first Sight, to a common Penetration; or, where not so, may be sound out, by Inquiry into his general Character and Behaviour: and to the Care of such a one, dear Sir, let me for the present suppose your Billy is committed: And so we acquit ourselves of the first Difficulty, as well as we can, that of the Tutor; who, to make himself more perfect, may form himself, as to what he wants, by Mr. Locke's excellent Rules on that Head.

But before I quit this Subject, will you give me Leave, Sir, to remind you of your own Opinion upon

S

11.

t

upon it, in a Conversation that pass'd between you and Sir George Stuart, and his Nephew, in London; in which you feem'd to prefer a Scottish Gentlemen for a Tutor, to those of your own Nation, and still more than to those of France? Don't you remember it, dear Sir? And how much those Gentlemen were pleas'd with your facetious Freedom with their Country, and faid, You made them amends for that, in the Preference you gave to their learn'd and travell'd Youth? If you have forgot it, I will here transcribe it from my Records, as I call my Book of Memorandums; for every time I am pleas'd with a Converfation, and have Leisure, before it goes out of my Memory, I enter it down as near the very Words as I can; and now you have made me your Correspondent, I shall sometimes perhaps give you back some Valuables from your own Treasure.

Miss Darnford, and Mr. Turner, and Mr. Fanshaw, were present, I well remember. These are your

Words, as I have written them down:

Since the Union of the Two Kingdoms, we have many Persons of Condition, who have taken their Tutors for their Sons from Scotland; which Prac-

tice, to speak impartially, has been attended with

fome advantageous Circumstances, that should not be overlook'd. For, Sir George, it must be confess'd,

that notwithstanding your narrow and stiff manner

of Education in Scotland, a Spirit of manly Learning, a kind of poetick Liberty, as I may call it, has

begun to exert itself in that Part of the Island. The

blustering North, forgive me Gentlemen, seems to have harden'd the Foreheads of her hungry Sons;

and the Keenness with which they set out for Pre-

ferment in the kindlier South, has taught them to

know a good deal of the World betimes. Thro'the

eafy Termson which Learning is generally attained there, as it is earlier inculcated, so it may, probably,

take deeper Root: And since 'tis hardly possible, for-

6 give

•

. (

.]

· t

i t

u

; n

11

er

re

1-

he

'd

be

0-

er-

ny

as

n-

me

w,

our

ave

neir

ac-

vith

not

s'd,

ner

arn-

has

The

is to

ons;

Pre-

m to

'the

ained

ably,

for-

give

e give me, dear Sir George, and Mr. Stuart, they can go to a worse Country on this Side Greenland, than ' some of the Northern Parts of Scotland; so their 'Education, with a View to travel, and to better themselves by Settlements in other Countries, may · perhaps be so many Reasons for them to take greater Pains to qualify themselves for this Employment, and may make them fucceed better in it; especially when they have been able to shake off the Fetters which are rivetted upon them under the narrow Influences of a too tyrannical Kirk-discipline, which ' you, Sir George, have just now so freely censur'd. 'To these Considerations, when we add the necesfity, which these remote Tutors lie under, of beha-' ving well, because, in the first place, they seldom

wish to return to their own Country; and in the next, because that cannot prefer them, if it would; and, thirdly, because it would not, if it could, if the Gentleman be of an enlarged Genius, and ge-' nerous way of Thinking; I fay, when we add to the Premises these Considerations, they all make a kind of Security for their good Behaviour: While those of our own Country have often Friends or · Acquaintance on whose Favour they are apt to dee pend, and for that Reason give less Attention to

the Duties requisite for this important Office.

Besides, as their kind Friend Eolus, who is ac-' custom'd to spread and strengthen the bold Muscles of the strong-featur'd Scot, has generally blown a-' way that inauspicious Bashfulness, which hangs a ' much longer time, commonly, on the Faces of the ' Southern Students; such a one (if he fall not too ' egregiously into the contrary Extreme, so as to be-' come insufferable) may still be the more eligible ' Person for a Tutor, as he may teach a young Gen-' tleman, betimes, that necessary Presence of Mind, ' which those who are confin'd to a private Educa-' tion fometimes want.

But,

But, after all, if a Gentleman of this Nation be chosen for this Employment, it may be necessary, that he should be one who has had as genteel and free an Education himself, as his Country and Op. portunities will afford; and has had, moreover, the native roughness of his Climate filed off and opolished by Travel and Conversation; who has 6 made, at least, the Tour of France and Italy, and has a Tafte for the Politeness of the former Nation; for, from the natural Boisterousness of a · North Briton, and the fantastick Politeness of a Frenchman, if happily blended, such a Mixture may refult, as may furnish out a more complete Tutor, than either of the Two Nations, fingly, may be able to produce. But it ought to be re-" member'd, that this Person should, by all means, have conquer'd his native Brogue, as I may call it, and be a Master of the English Pronunciation; otherwise his Conversation will be very disagreea-· ble to an English Ear.

And permit me, Gentlemen, to add, that as an · Acquaintance with the Muses contributes not a ! little to foften the Manners, and to give a graceful and delicate Turn to the Imagination, and a kind of Polish to severer Studies, I believe it would not be amiss, that he should have a Taste of Poetry, altho' perhaps it were not to be wish'd he had such firong Inclinations that way, as to make that lively and delectable Amusement his predominant Pasfion: For we see very few Poets, whose warm Imar ginations do not run away with their Judgments. And yet, in order to learn the dead Languages in their Purity, it will be necessary, as I apprehend,

to inculcate both the Love and the Study of the ancient Poets, which cannot fail of giving the

Youth a Taste for Poetry in general.'

Permit me, dear Sir, to ask you, Whether you advanc'd this for Argument-sake, as sometimes you

love

m

VE

de

OU

nov

love to amuse and entertain your Friends in an uncommon way? For I should imagine, that our Two Universities, which you have been so good as to shew me, and for which I have ever fince had even a greater Reverence than I had before, are capable of furnishing as good Tutors as any Nation in the World: For here the young Gentlemen feem to me to live both in the World, and in the University; and we faw feveral Gentlemen who had not only fine Parts, but polite Behaviour, and deep Learning, as you affur'd me; fome of whom you entertain'd, and were entertain'd by, in so elegant a manner, that no travell'd Gentleman, if I may be allow'd to judge, could excel them! And besides, my dear Mr. B. I know who is reckon'd one of the politest and bestbred Gentlemen in England by every body, and learned as well as polite, and yet had his Education in one of those celebrated feats of Learning. I wish your Billy never may fall short of the Gentleman I mean, in all these Acquirements; and he will be a very happy Creature, 1 am fure!

But how I wander again from my Subject?—I have no other way to recover myself, when I thus ramble, but by bringing back myself to that one delightful Point of Reslection, that I have the Hon-

our to be, dearest Sir,

1

a

a e

e

13

2-

S,

t,

1 ;

a-

an

ul

nd

ot

al-

ch

ely af-

na_r
nts.

nd, the

you

you love

Your ever dutiful and obliged

P. B.

LETTER LII.

Dearest Sir,

Now resume my Subject. I had gone through the Article of the Tutor, as well as I could; and now let me trouble you with a few Lines upon what Mr. Mr. Locke says, That Children are wholly, if possible, to be kept from the Conversation of the meaner Servants; whom he supposes to be, as too frequently they are, unbred and debauch'd, to use his own Words.

Now, Sir, let me observe, on this Head, that I think it is very difficult to keep Children from the Conversation of Servants at all times. The Care of personal Attendance, especially in the Child's early Age, must fall upon Servants of one Denomination or other, who, little or much, must be conversant with the inferior Servants, and so be liable to be tainted by their Conversation; and it will be difficult in this Case to prevent the Taint being communicated to the Child. Wherefore it will be a surer, as well as a more laudable Method, to insist upon the regular Behaviour of the whole Family, than to expect the Child, and its immediate Attendant or Tutor, should

be the only good ones in it.

Nor is this fo difficult a thing to bring about, as may be imagin'd. Your Family, dear Sir, affords an eminent Instance of it: The Good have been confirm'd, the Remiss have been reform'd, the Passionate have been tam'd; and there is not a Family in the Kingdom, I will venture to fay, to the Honour of every Individual of it, more uniform, more regular, and freer from Evil, and more regardful of what they fay and do, than yours. And I believe, Sir, you will allow, that though they were always honest, yet they were notalways fo laudably, so exemplarily virtuous, as of late: Which I mention only to shew the Practicableness of a Reformation, even where bad Habits have taken place—For your Pamela, Sir, arrogates not to herself the Honour of this Change: 'Tisowing to the Divine Grace shining upon Hearts naturally good; for else an Example so easy, so plain, so simple, from fo young a Mistress, who moreover had been exalted

t

P

h

fe

fr

W

tu

lei

Re

exalted from their own Station, could not have been

attended with such happy Effects.

You fee, dear Sir, what a Master and Mistress's Example could do, with a poor Soul so far gone as Mrs. Jewkes. And I dare be consident, that if, on the Hiring of a new Servant, Sobriety of Manners and avirtuous Conversation were insisted upon; and they were told, that a general Inosfensiveness in Words as well as Actions, was expected from them, as indispensable Conditions of their Service; and that a Breach of that kind would be no more pass'd over, than a wilful Fraud, or Act of Dishonesty; and if, added to these Requisites, their Principals take care to support these Injunctions by their own Example; I say, in this Case, I dare be consident, that if such a Service did not find them good, it would make them so.

And why, indeed, should we not think this a very practicable Scheme, when it is consider'd, that the Servants we take are at Years of Discretion, and have the strong tie of Interest superadded to the Obligations we require of them; and which, they must needs know, (let'em have what bad Habits they will) are right for themselves to discharge, as well as for us

to exact?

e,

er

t-

m

: [

he

of

·ly

or

ith

by

his

the

s a Ge-

the

uld

as

an

on-

rate

the

r of

llar,

they

will

they

ous,

acti-

abits

rates

wing

rally

nple,

been

We all know of how much Force the Example of Superiors is to Inferiors. It is generally and too justly faid, that the Courts of Princes abound with the most profligate of Men, insomuch that you cannot well give a Mana more significantly bad Title, than by calling him a Courtier: Yet even among these, one shall see the Force of Example, as I have heard you, Sir, frequently observe: For, let but the Land be blest with a pious and religious Prince, who makes it a Rule with him to countenance and promote Men of Virtue and Probity; and, to put the Case still stronger, let such a one even succeed to the most libertine Reign, wherein the Manners of the People have seem'd

Mr. Locke says, That Children are wholly, if possible, to be kept from the Conversation of the meaner Servants; whom he supposes to be, as too frequently they are, unbred and debauch'd, to use his own Words.

Now, Sir, let me observe, on this Head, that I think it is very difficult to keep Children from the Conversation of Servants at all times. The Care of personal Attendance, especially in the Child's early Age, must fall upon Servants of one Denomination or other, who, little or much, must be conversant with the inserior Servants, and so be liable to be tainted by their Conversation; and it will be difficult in this Case to prevent the Taint being communicated to the Child. Wherefore it will be a surer, as well as a more laudable Method, to insist upon the regular Behaviour of the whole Family, than to expect the Child, and its immediate Attendant or Tutor, should

d

th

n

ar

to

Si

pr

hi

fee

fre

wi

Wi

tue

let

Re

be the only good ones in it.

Nor is this fo difficult a thing to bring about, as may be imagin'd. Your Family, dear Sir, affords an eminent Instance of it: The Good have been confirm'd, the Remiss have been reform'd, the Passionate have been tam'd; and there is not a Family in the Kingdom, I will venture to fay, to the Honour of every Individual of it, more uniform, more regular, and freer from Evil, and more regardful of what they fay and do, than yours. And I believe, Sir, you will allow, that though they were always honest, yet they were notalways fo laudably, fo exemplarily virtuous, as of late: Which I mention only to shew the Practicableness of a Reformation, even where bad Habits have taken place-For your Pamela, Sir, arrogates not to herself the Honour of this Change: 'Tisowing to the Divine Grace shining upon Hearts naturally good; for elfe an Example so easy, so plain, so simple, from so young a Mistress, who moreover had been exalted

exalted from their own Station, could not have been

attended with fuch happy Effects.

You see, dear Sir, what a Master and Mistress's Example could do, with a poor Soul so far gone as Mrs. Jewkes. And I dare be consident, that if, on the Hiring of a new Servant, Sobriety of Manners and avirtuous Conversation were insisted upon; and they were told, that a general Inossensiveness in Words as well as Actions, was expected from them, as indispensible Conditions of their Service; and that a Breach of that kind would be no more pass'd over, than a wilful Fraud, or Act of Dishonesty; and if, added to these Requisites, their Principals take care to support these Injunctions by their own Example; I say, in this Case, I dare be consident, that if such a Service did not find them good, it would make them so.

And why, indeed, should we not think this a very practicable Scheme, when it is consider'd, that the Servants we take are at Years of Discretion, and have the strong tie of Interest superadded to the Obligations we require of them; and which, they must needs know, (let'em have what bad Habits they will) are right for themselves to discharge, as well as for us

to exact?

,

r

n

I

r

h

y

18

10

a

10

ld

as

in

1-

te

he

of

ır,

ey

ill

ey

15,

ti-

its

es

ng

lly

le,

en

We all know of how much Force the Example of Superiors is to Inferiors. It is generally and too justly faid, that the Courts of Princes abound with the most profligate of Men, insomuch that you cannot well give a Mana more significantly bad Title, than by calling him a Courtier: Yet even among these, one shall see the Force of Example, as I have heard you, Sir, frequently observe: For, let but the Land be blest with a pious and religious Prince, who makes it a Rule with him to countenance and promote Men of Virtue and Probity; and, to put the Case still stronger, let such a one even succeed to the most libertine Reign, wherein the Manners of the People have seem'd

feem'd to be wholly deprav'd; yet a wonderful Change will be immediately effected. The flagitious Livers will be chas'd away, or reform'd; or at least will think it their Duty, or their Interest, which is a stronger Tie with fuch, to appear reform'd; and not a Man will feek for the Favour or Countenance of his Prince, but by laudable Pretences, or by worthy Actions.

There was a Time, the Reign of K. Richard III. when, as I have read, Deformity of Body was the Fashion, and the Nobility and Gentry of the Court thought it an indispensable Requisite of a graceful Form to pad for themselves a round Shoulder, because the King was crooked. And can we think human Nature so absurdly wicked, that it would not much rather have try'd to imitate a personal Perfection, than a Deformity fo shocking in its Appearance, in People who were naturally straight?

b

to

b

it

an

tic

fo

ref

of

wi

be

tio

pre For

the

and Ra

Spe

'Tis a melancholy thing to reflect, that of all Professions of Men, the Mariners, who most behold the Wonders of Almighty Power display'd in the great Deep, (a Sight that has ftruck me with Awe and Reverence only from a Coast Prospect) and who every Moment of their Lives, while at Sea, have but one frail Plank betwixt themselves and inevitable De-Aruction; are yet, generally speaking, as I have often heard it observ'd, the most abandon'd Invokers and Blasphemers of the Name of that God, whose Mercies they every Moment unthankfully, altho' fo visibly, experience. Yet, as I heard it once remark'd at your Table, Sir, on a particular Occasion, we have now living one Commander in the British Navy, who, to his Honour, has shewn the Force of an excellent Example supporting the best Precepts: For on board of his Ship, not an oath or Curse was to be heard; while Vollies of both (iffued from impious Mouths in the same Squadron out of his Knowledge) feem'd to fill the Sails of other Ships with guilty Breath,

Breath, calling aloud for that Perdition to overtake them, which perhaps his worthy Injunctions and Example, in his own, might be of Weight to

suspend.

Î

n

le

rt

k

ot

C-

r-

0-

he

at

nd

10

ut e-

en

nd

ies

y,

at

10,

el-

or

be

ous

ge)

th,

If such then, dear Sir, be the Force of a good Example, what have Parents to do, who are dispos'd to bring up a Child at home under their own Eye, according to Mr. Locke's Advice, but, first, to have a strict Regard to their own Conduct? This will not want its due Influence on the Servants; especially if a proper Inquiry be made into their Characters before they are entertain'd, and a watchful Eye be had over them, to keep them up to those Characters afterwards. And when they know they must forfeit the Favour of a worthy Master, and their Places too, (which may be thought to be the best of Places, because an uniform Character must make all around it easy and happy) they will readily observe such Rules and Directions, as shall be prescribed to them. -Rules and Directions, which their own Consciences will tell them are right to be prescrib'd; and even right for them to follow, were they not infifted upon by their Superiors: And this Conviction must go a great way towards their thorough Reformation: For a Person wholly convinc'd, is half And thus the Hazard a Child will run reform'd. of being corrupted by converfing with the Servants, will be remov'd, and all Mr. Locke's other Rules be better enforc'd.

I have the Boldness, Sir, to make another Objection; and that is, to the Distance which Mr. Locke prescribes to be kept between Children and Servants: For may not this be a Means to fill the Minds of the former with a Contempt of those below them, and an Arrogance that is not warranted by any Rank or Condition, to their Inseriors of the same Species?

Species?

I have transcrib'd * what Mr. Locke has enjoined in relation to this Distance, where he says, that the Children are by all means to be kept wholly from the Conversation of the meaner Servants.—But how much better Advice does the fame Author give for the Behaviour of Children to Servants in the following Words? Which I humbly presume to think, are not so intirely consistent with the former, as might be expected from fo admirable an Author.

Another way, says he, (§ 111.) to instil Sen. timents of Humanity, and to keep them lively

in young Folks, will be, to accustom them to · Civility in their Language and Deportment to-

wards their Inferiors, and the meaner fort of · People, particularly Servants. It is not unufual

4 to observe the Children in Gentlemens Families

· treat the Servants of the House with domineering

Words, Names of Contempt, and an imperious

· Carriage, as if they were of another Race, or

• Species beneath them. Whether ill Example, the • Advantage of Fortune, or their natural Vanity,

· inspire this Haughtiness, it should be prevented or

weeded out; and a gentle, courteous, affable

d

in

ea

G

his

wi

up.

equ low Self

· Carriage towards the lower Ranks of Men, placed

in the Room of it. No Part of their Superiority

continues this excellent Author, will be hereby loft,

but the Distinction increas'd, and their Authority ftrengthen'd, when Love in Inferiors is joined to

outward Respect, and an Esteem of the Person

has a Share in their Submission: And Domesticks

will pay a more ready and cheerful Service, when

they find themselves not spurn'd because fortune

has laid them below the Level of others at their

· Masters Feet.'

These, dear Sir, are certainly the Sentiments of a generous and enlarged Spirit: But I hope I shall

n

N

r

,

15

1-

ly

to

0-

of

al

es

ng

us

or

he

y,

10

ole

ed

ity

it,

ity

to

fon

cks

nen

ine

neir

of

nall

be

be forgiven, if I observe, that the great Distance Mr. Locke before injoins to be kept between Children and Servants, is not very confiftent with the above-cited Paragraph: For if we would prevent this undue Contempt of Inferiors in the Temper of Children, the best way, as I humbly presume to think, is not to make it so unpardonable a Fault for them, especially in their early Years, to be in their Company. For can one make the Children shun the Servants, without rendering them odious or contemptible to them, and representing them to the Child in such disadvantageous Lights, as must needs make the Servants vile in their Eyes, and themselves lofty and exalted in their own? and thereby cause them to treat them with domineering Words, and an 'imperious Carriage, as if they were of another Race or Species beneath them and so, as Mr. Locke fays, nurse up their natural Pride into an ' habitual Contempt of those beneath them: And then, as he adds, where will that probably end, but ' in Oppression and Cruelty?' -- But this Matter, dear Sir, I prefume to think, will all be happily accommodated and reconciled, when the Servants good Behaviour is secured by the Example and Injunctions of the Principals.

Upon the whole, then, of what Mr. Locke has injoined, and what I have taken the Liberty to fuggest on this Head, it shall be my Endeavour, in that early Part of your dear Billy's Education, which your Goodness will intrust to me, to inculcate betimes in his Mind the Principles of universal Benevolence and

Kindness to others, especially to Inferiors.

Nor, dear Sir, shall I fear, that the little Dear will be wanting to himself in assuming, as he grows up, an Air of Superiority and Distance of Behaviour equal to his Condition, or that he will descend too low for his Station. For, Sir, there is a Pride and Self-love natural to human Minds, that will seldom P 2

be kept fo low, as to make them humbler than they

ought to be.

I have observ'd, before now, Instances of this, in fome of the Families we vifit, between the young Masters or Misses, and those Children of lower Degree, who have been brought to play with them, or divert them. On the Masters and Misses Side, I have always feen, they lead the Play and prescribe the Laws of it, be the Diversion what it will; while, on the other hand, their lower-rank Play-fellows have generally given into their little Humours, tho' ever so contrary to their own; and the Difference of Drefs and Appearance, and the Notion they have of the more eminent Condition of their Play-fellows Parents, have begot in them a kind of Awe and Respect, that perhaps more than sufficiently secures the Superiority of the one, and the Subordination of the other.

The Advantage of this universal Benevolence to a young Gentleman, as he grows up, will be, as I humbly conceive, that it will so diffuse itself over his Mind, as to influence all his Actions, and give a Grace to every thing he does or says, and make him admired and respected from the best and most durable Motives; and will be of greater Advantage to him for his attaining a handsome Address and Behaviour, (for it will make him conscious, that he merits the Distinction he will meet with, and encourage him still more to merit it) than the best Rules that can be given him for that Purpose.

I will therefore teach the little Dear Courteoufness and Affability, from the properest Motives I am able to think of; and will instruct him in only one Piece of Pride, that of being above doing a mean or low Action. I will caution him not to behave in a lordly or insolent manner, even to the lowest Servants. I will tell him, as I do my dear Miss Goodwin, that that Superiority is the most com-

mendable,

th

tle

hi

fr

W

hi

W

Y

in

ıg

e-

or

I

be

le,

WS

10'

ce

ve

WS

nd

res

of

to

s I

ver

ea

im

ur-

to

3e-

he

ou-

iles

uf-

sI

nly

r a

to

the

ear

omble,

mendable, and will be best maintained, that is owing to Humanity, and Kindness, and which is grounded on the Perfections of the Mind, rather than on the accidental Advantages of Fortune and Condition: That if his Conduct be such as it ought to be, there will be no occasion to tell a Servant, that he will be observed and respected: That Humility, as I once told my Miss Goodwin*, is a charming Grace, and most conspicuously charming in Persons of Distinction; for that the Poor, who are humbled by their Condition, cannot glory in it, as the Rich may; and that it makes the lower Ranks of People love and admire the High-born, who can fo condescend: Whereas Pride, in such, is Meanness and Infult, as it owes its Boast and its Being to accidental Advantages; which, at the same time, are seldom of his procuring, who can be so mean as to be proud: That even I would fooner forgive Pride in a low Degree than in a high; for it may be a Security in the first against doing a base thing: But in the Rich, it is a base thing itself, and an impolitick one too; for the more Distinction a proud Mind grasps at, the less it will have; and every poor despised Person can whisper such an one in the Ear, when furrounded with, and adorned by, all his glittering Splendors, that he was born, and must die, in the fame manner with those whom he despises.

Thus will the Doctrine of Benevolence and Affability, implanted early in the Mind of a young Gentleman, and duly cultivated as he grows up, inspire him with the requisite Conduct to command Respect from proper Motives; and at the same time that it will make the Servants observe a decorum towards him, it will oblige them to have a Guard upon their Words and Actions in the Presence of one, whose manner of Education and Training-up would be so

P 3

great

great a Reproach to them, if they were grossly faulty: So that hereby, as I conceive, a mutual Benefit will flow to the Manners of each, and his good Behaviour will render him, in some measure, an in-

structive Monitor to the whole Family.

But permit, me, Sir, to enlarge on the Hint I have already given, in relation to the Example of Parents, in case a Preference be given to the Home Education. For if this Point cannot be fecur'd, I should always imagine it were best to put the Child to fuch a School, as I have taken the Liberty to mention *. But yet the Subject might be spared by me in the present Case, as I write with a View only to your Family; though you will remember, that while I follow Mr. Locke, whose Work is publick, I must be consider'd as if I was directing myself to the generality of the World: For, Sir, I have the Pleasure to say, that your Conduct in your Family is unexceptionable; and the Pride to think that mine is no Difgrace to it. No one hears a Word from your Mouth unbecoming the Character of a polite Gentleman; and I shall always endeavour to be very regardful of what falls from mine. Your Temper, Sir, is equal and kind to all your Servants, and they love you, as well as awfully respect you: And well does your Generofity, and bountiful and considerate Mind, deserve it of them all: and they, feeing I am watchful over my own Conduct, fo as not to behave unworthy of your kind Example, regard me as much as I could wish they should; for well do they know, that their beloved Master will have it fo, and greatly honours and esteems me himself.—Your Table-talk is such as Persons of the strictest Principles may hear, and join in: Your Guefts, and your Friends are, generally speaking, Persons of the genteelest Life, and of the best Manners:

ners: — So that Mr. Locke would have advis'd you, of all Gentlemen, had he been living, and known you, to give your Children a Home Education, and

affign these, and still stronger Reasons for it.

d

-

of

e

d

0

y

y

it

٠,

0

e

y

t

d

2

0

r

,

d

,

S

ľ

1

e

e

r

But, dear Sir, were we to speak to the generality of Parents, it is to be fear'd this would be an almost insuperable Objection to a Home Education. (I am forry to fay it) when one turns one's Eyes to the bad Precedents given by the Heads of some Families, it is hardly to be wonder'd at, that there is fo little Virtue and Religion among men. For can those Parents be surpris'd at the Ungraciousness of their Children, who hardly ever shew them, that their own Actions are govern'd by reasonable or moral Motives? Can the gluttonous Father expect a felf-denying Son? With how ill a Grace must a Man, who will often be difguis'd in Liquor, preach Sobriety? A passionate Man, Patience? An irreligious Man, Piety? How will a Parent, whose Hands are feldom without Cards or Dice in them, be obferv'd in Lessons against the pernicious Vice of Gaming? Can the profuse Father, who is squandering away the Fortunes of his Children, expect to be regarded in a Lesson of Frugality? 'Tis impossible he should, except it were that the Youth, seeing how pernicious his Father's Example is, should have the Grace to make a proper Use of it, and look upon it as a Sea-mark, as it were to enable him to shun the dangerous Rocks, on which he fees his Father split-And even in this best Case, let it be consider'd, how much Shame and Difgrace his thoughtless Parent ought to take to himself, who can admonish his Child by nothing but the Odiousness of his own Vice; and how little it is owing to him, that his Guilt is not doubled, by his Son's treading in his Steps! Let fuch an unhappy Parent duly weigh this, and think how likely he may be, by his bad Example, to be

the Cause of his Child's Perdition, as well as his own, and stand unshock'd and unamended, if he can!

Give me Leave to add, that it is then of no Avail to wish for discreet Servants, if the Conduct of the Parents is faulty. If the Fountain-head be polluted, how shall the Under-currents run clear? That Master and Mistress, who would exact from their Servants a Behaviour which they themselves don't practice, will be but ill observ'd. And that Child, who discovers great Excesses and Errors in his Parents, will be found to be less profited by their good Precepts, than prejudic'd by their bad Examples. Excessive Fondness this Hour, violent Pasfions, and perhaps Execrations, the next; unguarded Jests, an Admiration of fashionable Vanities, rash Censures, are perhaps the best, that the Child sees in, or hears from those, who are most concern'd to inculcate good Precepts into his Mind. And where it is fo, a Home Education is not by any means, jurely, to be chosen.

Having thus, as well as my flender Abilities will permit, prefum'd to deliver my Opinion upon three great Points, viz. the Qualifications of a Tutor; the Necessity of having an Eye to the Morals of Servants; and, the Example of Parents (all which, being taken care of, will give a Preference, as I imagine, to a Home Education;) permit me, dear Sir, to speak a little further to a Point, that I have

th

gr

be

St

pr

th

W

fra

already touch'd upon.

It is that of *Emulation*; which I humbly conceive to be of great Efficacy to lead Children on in their Duties and Studies. And how, dear Sir, shall this Advantage be procur'd for a young Master, who has no Schoolfellows, and who has no Example to sollow, but that of his Tutor, whom he cannot, from the Disparity of Years, and other Circumstances, without

without Pain, (because of this Disparity) think of emulating? and this, I conceive, is a very great. Advantage to such a School Education, as I mention'd in my former Letter*, where there are no more Scholars taken in, than the Master can with Ease and Pleasure instruct.

But one way, in my humble Opinion, is left to answer this Objection, and still preserve the Reason for the Preserence which Mr. Locke gives to a Home Education; and that is, what I formerly hinted to you dear Sir +, to take into your Family the Child of some honest Neighbour of but middling Circumstances, and like Age of your own, but who should give apparent Indications of his natural Promptitude, ingenious Temper, obliging Behaviour, and good Manners; and to let him go hand-in-hand with yours in his several Studies and Lessons under the same Tutor.

This Child would be fensible of the Benesit, as well as of the Distinction he received, and consequently of what was expected from him, and would double his Diligence, and exert all his good Qualities, which would inspire the young Gentleman with the wish'd-for Emulation, and, as I imagine, would be so promotive of his Learning, that it would greatly compensate the Tutor for his Pains with the additional Scholar; for the young Gentleman would be asham'd to be out-done by one of like Years and Stature with himself. And little Rewards might be propos'd to the greatest Proficient, in order to heighten the Emulation.

Then, Sir, permit me to add, that the Generofity of such a Method, to a Gentleman of your Fortune, and beneficent Mind, would be its own Reward, were there no other Benefit to be receiv'd from it.

P

More-

322 P A M E L A; Or,

Moreover, such an ingenious Youth might, by his good Morals and Industry, hereafter be of service in some Place of Trust in the Family; or it would be easy for a Gentleman of your Interest in the World, if such a thing offer'd not, to provide for the Youth in the Navy, in some of the publick Offices, or among your private Friends——If he prov'd faulty in his Morals, his Dismission would be in your own Power, and would be Punishment

enough.

But, if on the other hand, he prov'd a fober and hopeful Youth, fuch a one would make an excellent Companion for your Billy in riper Years; as he would be, in a manner, a Corroborator of his Morals; for, as his Circumstances would not support him in any Extravagance, fo those Circumstances would be a Check upon his Inclinations; and this being seconded by the Hopes of future Preferment from your Favour and Interest, which he could not expect but upon the Terms of his Perseverance in Virtue, he would find himself under a Necessity of fetting fuch an Example, as might be of great Benefit to his Companion: Who should be watch'd as he grew up, that he did not (if his ample Fortune became dangerous to his Virtue) contribute out of his Affluence to draw the other after him into Extravagance. And to this End, as I humbly conceive, the noble Doctrine of Independence should be early instill'd into both their Minds, and, upon all Occafions, inculcated and enforc'd; which would be an Inducement for the one to endeavour to improve his Fortune by his honest Industry, lest he should never be enabled to rife out of a State of Dependence; and to the other, to keep, if not to improve, his own, left he should ever fall into such a servile State, and thereby lose the glorious Power of conferring Happiness on the Deserving; which surely is one of the highest Pleasures that a generous Mind can know; a Plea-

1

15

0

C

y

it

n

le

k

ne

ld

nt

nd'el-

oort

es

nt

ot

in

of

e-

he

e-

nis

a-

/e,

rly

a-

an

nis

er

nd

eft

nd

p-

he

V;

2-

a Pleasure, Sir, which you have oftener experienc'd than thousands of Gentlemen: And which may you still continue to experience for a long, long, and happy Succession of Years to come, is the Prayer of one, the most oblig'd of all others in her own-Person, as well as in the Persons of her dearest Relations; and who owes to this glorious Beneficence the Honour she boasts, of being

Your ever affectionate and grateful

P. B.

LETTER LIII.

BUT now, my dear Mr. B. if you will indulge me in a Letter or two more, preparative to my little Book, that I mention'd, I will take the Liberty to touch upon one or two other Places, wherein I differ from this learned Gentleman. But, first, permit me to observe, that if Parents are, above all things to avoid giving bad Examples to their Children, they will be no less careful to shun the Practice of such fond Fathers and Mothers, as are wont to indulge their Children in bad Habits, and give them their Head, at a time when, like Wax, their tender Minds may be moulded into what Shape they This is a Point, that, if it please God, I will carefully attend to, because it is the Foundation on which the Superstructure of the whole future Man is to be erected. For according as he is indulg'd or check'd in his childish Follies, a Ground is laid for his future Happiness or Misery; and if once they are fuffer'd to become habitual to him, it cannot but be expected, that they will grow up with him, and that they will hardly ever be eradicated. 'Try it, says Mr. Locke, speaking to this very Point, ' in a Dog, or a Horse, or any other Creature, and · lee

· fee whether the ill and resty Tricks they have

· learn'd when young, are easily to be mended,

when they are knit: And yet none of these Creatures are half so wilful and proud, or half so desir-

ous to be Masters of themselves as Men.

And this brings me, dear Sir, to the Head of Punishments, in which, as well as in the Article of Rewards, which I have touch'd upon, I have a little

Objection to what Mr. Locke Advances.

But permit me, however, to premife, that I am exceedingly pleafed with the Method laid down by this excellent Writer, rather to shame the Child out of his Fault, than beat him; which latter serves ge-

nerally for nothing but to harden his Mind.

Obstinacy, and telling a Lye, and committing a wilful Fault, and then persisting in it, are, I agree with this Gentleman, the only Causes for which the Child should be punish'd with Stripes: And I admire the Reasons he gives against a too rigorous and severe Treatment of Children.

But I will give Mr. Locke's Words, to which I

have some Objection.

It may be doubted, fays he, concerning Whipping, when, as the last Remedy, it comes to be

e necessary, at what time, and by whom, it should

be done; whether presently, upon the committing
 the Fault, whilst it is yet fresh and hot—I think it

Inould not be done presently, adds he, lest Passion

mingle with it; and so, though it exceed the just

Proportion, yet it lose of its due Weight. For even Children discern whenever we do things in

a Paffion.

I must beg Leave, dear Sir, to differ from Mr. Locke in this Point; for I think it ought rather to be a Rule with Parents, who shall chastise their Children, to conquer what would be extreme in their own Passion on this Occasion, (for those Parents, who cannot do it, are very unsit to be Punishers

nishers of the wayward Passions of their Children) than to defer the Punishment, especially if the Child knows its Fault has reach'd its Parents Ear. It is otherwise, methinks giving the Child, if of an obstinate Disposition, so much more Time to harden its Mind, and bid Desiance to its Punishment.

Just now, dear Sir, your Billy is brought into my Presence, all smiling, crowing to come to me, and sull of heart-cheering Promises; and the Subject I am upon goes to my Heart. Surely, surely, I can never beat your Billy!—Dear little Life of my Life! how can I think that thou canst ever deserve it, or that I can ever inslict it?—No, my Baby, that shall be thy Papa's Task, if ever thou art so heinously naughty; and whatever he does, must be right.—Pardon my soolish Fondness, dear Sir!—I will

proceed.

1

a

e

d

I

-

d

n

f

r

n

r.

to

it

in.

a∸

14

rs

If then, the Fault be so atrocious, as to deserve Whipping, and the Parent be refolv'd on this exemplary Punishment, the Child ought not, as I imagine, to come into one's Presence without meeting with it: For else, a Fondness too natural to be resisted, will probably get the Upper hand of one's Resentment, and how shall one beable to whip the dear Creature one had ceased to be angry with? Then after he has once feen one without meeting his Punishment, will he not be inclin'd to hope for Connivance at his Fault, unless it should be repeated? And may he not be apt (for Childrens Resentments are strong) to impute to Cruelty, a Correction, (when he thought the Fault had been forgotten) that should always appear to be inflicted with Reluctance, and through Motives of Love?

If, from Anger at his Fault, one should go above the due Proportion, (I am sure I might be trusted for this!) let it take its Course!—How barbarously, methinks, I speak!—He ought to feel the Lash, first, because he deserves it, poor little Soul! Next, Because

cause it is propos'd to be exemplary. And lastly, Because it is not intended to be often us'd: And the very Paffion or Displeasure one expresses, (if it be not enormous) will shew one is in Earnest, and create in him a necessary Awe, and make him be afraid to offend again. The End of the Correction is to shew him the Difference betwixt Right and Wrong. And as it is proper to take him at his first Offer of a full Submission and Repentance, (and not before) and instantly dispassionate one's self, and shew him the Difference by acts of Pardon and Kindness, (which will let him fee, that one punishes him out of Neceffity rather than Choice) fo one would not be afraid to make him fmart fo fufficiently, that he should not soon forget the Severity of the Discipline, nor the Difgrace of it. There's a cruel Mamma for you, Mr. B. ! What my Practice may be, I can't tell; but this Theory, I presume to think, is right.

As to the Ast itself, I much approve Mr. Locke's Advice, to do it by Pauses, mingling Stripes and Expostulations together, to shame and terrify the more; and the rather, as the Parent, by this slow Manner of inslicting the Punishment, will less need to be afraid of giving too violent a Correction; for those Pauses will afford him, as well as the Child, Opportunities for Consideration and Resection.

But as to the *Person*, by whom the Discipline should be perform'd, I humbly conceive, that this excellent Author is here also to be objected to.

If you have a discreet Servant, says he, capable of it, and has the Place of governing your Child,

(for if you have a Tutor, there is no doubt) I think it

is the best, the Smart should come immediately from

another's Hand, tho' by the Parent's Order, who

fhould fee it done, whereby the Parent's Authority will be preferv'd, and the Child's Aversion for

the Pain it suffers, rather be turned on the Person

that immediately inflicts it. For I would have a

Father feldom strike a Child, but upon very urgent

· Necessity, and as the last Remedy.

'Tis in such an urgent Case, dear Sir, that we are supposing it should be done at all. If there be not a Reason strong enough for the Father's whipping the Child himself, there cannot be any sufficient for his ordering any other to do it, and standing by to see it done: But, I humbly presume to think, that if there be a Necessity for it, no one can be so fit as the Father himself to do it. The Child cannot dispute his Authority to punish, from whom he receives and expects all the good Things of this Life: He cannot question his Love to him, and after the Smart is over, and his Obedience fecur'd, must believe that so tender, so indulgent a Father, could have no other End in whipping him, but his Good. Against him, he knows, he has no Remedy, but must pasfively fubmit; and when he is convinc'd he must, he will in time conclude, that he ought.

But to have this severe Office perform'd by a Servant, tho' at the Father's Command; and that professedly, that the Aversion of the Child for the Pain it suffers, should be turn'd on the Person who immediately inslicts it, is, I am humbly of Opinion, the Reverse of what ought to be done. And more so, if this Servant has any Direction of the Child's Education; and still much more so, if it be his Tutor, notwithstanding Mr. Locke says, there is no doubt if there be a Tutor, that it should be done by him.

For, dear Sir, is there no doubt, that the Tutor should lay himself open to the Aversion of the Child, whose Manners he is to form? Is it not the best Method a Tutor can take, in order to enforce the Lessons he would inculcate, to endeavour to attract the Love and Attention of his Pupil by the most winning, mild, and inviting Ways that he can possibly think of? And yet is he, this very Tutor, out of all doubt, to be the Instrument of doing an harsh and

and difgraceful thing, and that in the last Resort, when all other Methods are found ineffectual; and that too, because he ought to incur the Child's Resentment and Aversion, rather than the Father? No, surely, Sir, it is not reasonable it should be so: Quite contrary, in my humble Notion, there can be no

doubt, but that it should be otherwise.

It should, methinks, be enough for a Tutor, in case of a Fault in the Child, to threaten to complain to his Father; but yet not to make such Complaint, without the Child obstinately persists in his Error, which, too, should be of a Nature to merit such an Appeal: And this, methinks, would highly contribute to preserve the Parent's Authority; who, on this Occasion, should never fail of extorting a Promise of Amendment, or of instantly punishing him with his own Hands. And, to soften the Distaste he might conceive in Resentment of too rigid Complainings, it might not, possibly, be amiss, that his Interposition in the Child's Favour, if the Fault were not too flagrant, should be permitted to save him once or twice from the impending Discipline.

'Tis certain that the Passions, if I may so call them, of Affection and Aversion, are very early difcoverable in Children; infomuch that they will, even before they can speak, afford us Marks for the Detection of an hypocritical Appearance of Love to it before the Parents Faces. For the Fondness or Averseness of the Child to some Servants, as I have observed in other Families, will at any time let one know, whether their Love to the Baby is uniform and the same, when one is absent, as present. In one Case the Child will reject with Sullenness all the little Sycophancies, that are made to it in one's Sight; while on the other, its Fondness of the Person, who generally obliges it, is an infallible Rule to judge of fuch a one's Sincerity behind one's Back. This little Observation shews the Strength of a Child's Refent-

tl

ec

Resentments, and its Sagacity, at the earliest Age, in discovering who obliges, and who disobliges it: And hence one may infer, how improper a Person he is, whom we would have a Child to love and respect, or by whose Precepts we would have it directed, to be the Punisher of its Faults, or to do any harsh or

disagreeable Office to it.

For my own part, dear Sir, I must take the Liberty to declare, that if the Parent were not to inflict the Punishment himself, I think it much better it should be given him, in the Parent's Presence, by the Servant of the lowest Consideration in the Family, and whose Manners and Example one would be the least willing of any other he should follow. Just as the common Executioner, who is the lowest and most flagitious Officer of the Commonwealth, and who frequently deferves, as much as the Criminal, the Punishment he is chosen to inflict, is pitch'd upon to perform, as a Mark of greater Ignominy, those Sentences which are intended as Examples to deter others from the Commission of heinous Crimes. And this was the Method the Almighty took, when he was dispos'd to correct severely his chosen People: For in that Case, He generally did it by the Hands of the most profligate Nations around them, as we read in many Places of the Old Testament.

But the following Rule, among a thousand others, equally excellent, I admire in Mr. Locke: 'When, 'Says he, (for any Misdemeanour) the Father or 'Mother looks sour on the Child, every one else 'should put on the same Coldness to him, and nobody give him Countenance till Forgiveness ask'd, and a Reformation of his Fault has set him right again, and restor'd him to his former Credit. If this were constantly observ'd, adds he, I guess there 'would be little Need of Blows or Chiding: Their own Ease or Satisfaction would quickly teach Children to save Commendation and avoid doing

dren to court Commendation, and avoid doing that

that which they found every body condemn'd and they were fure to fuffer for, without being chid or

beaten. This would teach them Modesty and

Shame, and they would quickly come to have a
 natural Abhorrence for that which they found made

them flighted and neglected by every body.'

This affords me, dear Sir, a pretty Hint: For if ever your charming Billy shall be naughty, what will I do, but proclaim throughout your worthy Family, that the little Dear is in Difgrace! And one shall shun him, another shall decline answering him, a third shall say, No, Master, I cannot obey you, till your Mamma is pleas'd with you; A fourth, Who should mind what little Masters bid them do, when little Masters won't mind what their Mamma's fay to them? And when the dear little Soul finds this, he will come in my Way, (and I fee, pardon me, my dear Mr. B. he has some of his Papa's Spirit already, indeed he has!) and I will direct myfelf with double Kindness to your beloved Davers, and to my Miss Goodwin, and take no Notice at all of the dear Creature, if I can helpit, till I can see his Papa (forgive my Boldness) banished from his little sullen Brow, and all his Mamma rife to his Eyes. And when his mufical Tongue shall be unlock'd to own his Fault, and promise Amendment—O then! how shall I class him to my Bosom! and Tears of Joy, I know, will meet his Tears of Penitence!

How these Flights, dear Sir, please a body!—What Delights have those Mamma's (which some fashionable Ladies are quite unacquainted with) who can make their dear Babies, and their first Educations, their Entertainment and Diversion! To watch the Dawnings of Reason in them, to direct their little Passions, as they shew themselves, to this or that particular Point of Benefit and Use; and to prepare the sweet Virgin Soil of their Minds to receive the Seeds of Virtue and Goodness so early, that as they

they grow up, one need only now a little pruning, and now a little Watering, to make them the Ornaments and Delights of the Garden of this Life! And then their pretty Ways, their fond and grateful Endearments, some new Beauty every Day rising to Observation—O my dearest Mr. B. whose Enjoyments and Pleasures are so great, as those of such Mothers as can bend their Minds two or three Hours every Day to the Duties of the Nursery?

I have a few other Things to observe upon Mr. Locke's Treatife, which when I have done, I shall read, admire, and improve by the rest, as my Years and Experiences advance; of which, in my propos'd little Book, I shall give you better Proofs than I am able to do at present; raw, crude, and indigested as the Notions of so young a Mamma must needs be.

But these shall be the Subjects of another Letter; for now I am come to the Pride and the Pleasure I always have, when I subscribe myself, dearest Sir,

Your ever dutiful and grateful

P. B.

LETTER LIV.

Dear Sir,

bi

or

nd

de

if

at

a-

ne

n,

u,

c,

ds

on

rit

th

19

ar

ren nd vn

w y,

ne

a-

ch

ir

or to

ve

as

R. Locke gives a great many very pretty Inftructions relating to the Play-glames of Children; but I humbly prefume to object to what he

fays in one or two Places.

He would not indulge them in any Play-things, but what they make themselves, or endeavour to make. A smooth Pebble, a Piece of Paper, the Mother's Bunch of Keys, or any thing they cannot hurt themselves with, he rightly says, serves as much to divert little Children, as those more chargeable

chargeableand curious Toys from the Shops, which

are presently put out of order, and broken.'

These Play-things may certainly do well enough, as he observes, for little ones: But methinks, to a Person of easy Circumstances, since the making these Toys employs the industrious Poor, the buying them for the Child might be dispensed with, though they were easily broken; and especially as they are of all Prices, and some less costly, and more durable, than others.

'Tops, Gigs, Battledors, Mr. Locke observes, which are to be used with Labour, should indeed be procur'd them—not for Variety, but Exercise:

but if they had a Top, the Scourge-Rick and Lea-

ther strap should be left to their own making and

fitting.

But may I presume to say, That whatever be the Good Mr. Locke proposes by this, it cannot be equal to the Mischief Children may do themselves in making these Play-things? For must they not have lmplements to work with? And is not a Knife, or other edg'd Tool, without which it is impossible they can make or shape a Scourge-stick, or any of their Playthings, a fine Instrument in a Child's Hands? This Advice is the Reverse of the Caution warranted from all Antiquity, That it is dangerous to meddle with edg'd Tools: And I am afraid, the Tutor must often act the Surgeon, and follow the Indulgence with a Styptick and a Plaster; and the young Gentleman's Hands might be so often bound up, that it might indeed perhaps be one way to cure him of his earnest Defire to play; but I can hardly imagine any other Good that it can do him: For I doubt the excellent Confequences propos'd by our Author from this Doctrine, fuch as to teach the Child Moderation in his Defires, Application, Industry, Thought, Contrivance, and good Husbandry, Qualities that, as he observes, will be useful to him when he is a Man, are too remote

to be ingrafted upon fuch Beginnings: Altho' it must be confessed, that, as Mr. Locke wisely observes, good Habits and Industry cannot be too early inculcated.

But then, Sir, may I ask, Are not the very Plays and Sports, to which Children accustom themselves, whether they make their own Play-things or not, equivalent to the Work or Labour of grown Perfons? Yes, Sir, I will venture to say, they are, and more than equivalent to the Exercises and Labour of

e

of

s,

a-

nd

he

al

a-

n-

er

an

y-

115

m

g'd

ict

p-

ids

ed

ire

od

n-

ne,

es,

ind

villote

ta

many. Mr. Locke advises, that the Child's Play-things should be as few as possible, in which I intirely agree with him: That they should be in his Tutor's Power, who is to give him but one at once. But fince it is the Nature of the human Mind to court most what is prohibited, and to fet light by what is in its own Power; I am half doubtful, (only that Mr. Locke fays it, and the Matter may not be so very important as other Points, in which I have taken the Liberty to differ from that Gentleman) whether the Child's absolute Possession of his own Play-things in some little Repository, of which he may be permitted to keep the Key, especially if he make no bad Use of the Privilege, would not make him more indifferent to them: while the contrary Conduct might poffibly enhance his Value of them. And, if, when he had done with any Play-thing, he were oblig'd to put it into its allotted Place, and were accustom'd to keep Account of the Number and Places of them feverally; this would teach him Order, and at the same time instruct him to keep a proper Account of them, and to avoid being a Squanderer or Waster: And if he should omit to put his Play-things in their Places, or be careless of them, the taking them away for a time, or threatening to give them to others, would make him be more heedful.

Mr. Locke fays, 'That he has known a Child fo distracted with the Number and Variety of his

· Play-things, that he tired his Maid every Day to · look them over: And was accustom'd to Abun-

dance, that he never thought he had Enough, but

was always asking, What more? What new thing · shall I have? A good Introduction, adds he, ironi-

cally, to moderate Defires, and the ready way to

· make a contented happy Man!'

All that I shall offer to this, is, that there are few Men so philosophical as one would wish them to be; much lefs Children. But no doubt, that this Variety engag'd the Child's Activity; which, of the two, might be turn'd to better Purposes than Sloth or Indolence; and if the Maid was tired, it might be, because she was not so much alive, as the Child; and perhaps this Part of the Grievance might not be fo great, because, if she was his Attendant, 'tis pro-

bable she had nothing else to do.

However, in the main, as Mr. Locke fays, it is no matter how few Play-things the Child is indulg'd with: But yet I can hardly persuade myself, that Plenty of them can have such bad Consequences as the Gentleman apprehends; and the rather, because they will excite his Attention, and promote his Industry and Activity. His inquiry after new things, let him have few or many, is to be expected as a Consequence of those natural Desires, which are implanted in him, and will every Day increase: But this may be observ'd, that as he grows in Years, he will be above some Play-things, and so the Number of the old ones will be always reducible, perhaps in a greater Proportion, than the new ones will increase.

Mr. Locke observes, on the Head of good Breeding, That 'There are two forts of ill Breeding; the one a sheepish Bashfulness, and the other a misbecoming Negligence and Difrespect in our Car-· riage;

to

tl

fo

is

to

n-

ut

ng

i-

to

W

to

nis

he

oth

ht

d;

be

0-

is

g'd

nat

as

use

n-

gs,

sa

m-

But

he

ber

in

n-

ed-

the

if-

ar-

e;

riage; both which, fays he, are avoided by duly observing this one Rule, not to think meanly of ourselves, and not to think meanly of others.' think, as Mr. Locke explains this Rule, it is an excellent one. But on this Head I would beg Leave to observe, that however discommendable a bashful Temper is, in some Instances, where it must be deemed a Weakness of the Mind, yet, in my humble Opinion, it is generally the Mark of an ingenuous one, and is always to be preferred to an undistinguishing and hardy Confidence, which, as it seems to me, is the genuine Production of invincible Ignorance.

What is faulty in it, which Mr. Locke calls Sheepishness, should indeed be shaken off as soon as possible, because it is an Enemy to Merit in its Advancement in the World: But, Sir, were I to choose a Companion for your Billy, as he grows up, I should not think the worse of the Youth, who, not having had the Opportunities of knowing Men, or feeing the World, had this Defect. On the contrary, I should be apt to look upon it as an outward Fence or Inclosure, as I may say, to his Virtue, which might keep off the lighter Attacks of Immorality, the Hussars of Vice, as I may fay, who are not able to carry on a formal Siege against his Morals; and I should expect such an one to be docile, humane, good-humour'd, diffident of himself, and therefore most likely to improve as well in Mind as Behaviour: While a harden'd Mind, that never doubts itself, must be a Stranger to its own Infirmities, and, fuspecting none, is impetuous, over-bearing, incorrigible; and if rich, a Tyrant; if not, possibly an Invader of other Mens Properties; or at least, such a one, as allows itself to walk so near the Borders of Injustice, that, where Self is concern'd, it hardly ever does right things.

Mr. Locke proposes (§ 148) a very pretty Method to cheat Children, as it were, into Learning: But then he adds, 'There may be Dice and Play-things' with the Letters on them to teach Children the Alphabet by playing.' And in another Place, (§ 151.) 'I know a Person of great Quality—who by pasting on the fix Vowels (for in our Language y is one) on the fix Sides of a Die, and the remain-

ing eighteen Consonants on the Sides of three other Dice, has made this a Play for his Children,

that he shall win, who at one Cast throws most Words on these four Dice; whereby his eldest

Son, yet in Coats, has play'd himself into Spelling with great Eagerness, and without once having

been chid for it, or forc'd to it.'

I must needs say, my dear Mr. B. that I had rather your Billy should be a twelvemonth backwarder for want of this Method, than forwarded by it. For what may not be apprehended from fo early allowing, or rather inculcating the Use of Dice and Gaming, upon the Minds of Children? Let Mr. Locke himself speak to this in his § 208. and I should be glad to be able to reconcile the two Passages in this excellent Author. — 'As to Cards and Dice, fays he, · I think the fafest and best way is, never to learn any Play upon them, and so to be incapacitated for these dangerous Temptations, and incroaching Wasters of useful Time.' -- And, he might have added, of the noblest Estates and Fortunes; while Sharpers and Scoundrels have been lifted into Diftinction upon their Ruins. Yet, in § 153. Mr. Locke proceeds to give particular Directions in relation to the Dice he recommends.

n

il

h

PI

H

je

But after all, if some innocent Plays were fix'd upon to cheat Children into Reading, that, as he says, should look as little like a Task as possible, it must needs be of use for that Purpose. But let every Gentleman, who has a Fortune to lose, and who, if

he games, is on a Foot with the vilest Company, who generally have nothing at all to risque, tremble at the Thoughts of teaching his Son, though for the most laudable Purposes, the early Use of Dice and

Gaming.

t

e

0

1-

ee

n,

oft

eft

ng

ng

her

for

or

W-

m-

ocke

be

this

be,

earn

ated

ning

nave

hile

Dif-

Mr.

rela-

fix'd

fays,

muit

every

ho, if

But, dear Sir, permit me to say, how much I am charm'd with a Hint in Mr. Locke, which makes your Pamela hope, she may be of greater Use to your Children, even as they grow up, than she could ever have flatter'd herself to be.—'Tis a charming Paragraph; I must not skip one Word of it. Thus it begins, and I will observe upon it as I go along. \(\) 177. But under whose Care soever a Child is \(\) put to be taught, says Mr. Locke, during the tender \(\) and flexible Years of his Life, this is certain, it \(\) should be one, who thinks Latin and Language the \(\) least Part of Education.'

How agreeable is this to my Notions; which I durst not have avow'd, but after so excellent a Scholar! For I have long had the Thought, that a great deal of precious Time is wasted to little Purpose in the attaining of Latin. Mr. H. I think, says, he was ten Years in endeavouring to learn it, and, as far as I can find, knows nothing at all of the Matter neither! — Indeed he lays that to the wicked Picture in his Grammar, which he took for granted, (as he has said several times, as well as once written) was put there to teach Boys to rob Orchards, instead of improving their Minds in Learning, or common Honesty.

But (for this is too light an Instance for the Subject) Mr. Locke proceeds — 'One who knowing
'how much Virtue and a well-temper'd Soul is to be
'preferr'd to any fort of Learning or Language,
'[What a noble Writer is this!] makes it his chief
'Business to form the Mind of his Scholars, and

'give that a right Disposition: [Ay there, dear Sir, Vol. IV.

338 PAMELA; Or,

s is the thing !] Which if once got, tho' all the Rest · should be neglected, [charmingly observ'd!] would in due Time, [without wicked Dice, I hope!] produce all the rest; and which if it be not got and fettled, so as to keep out ill and vicious Habits, · Languages and Sciences, and all the other Accome plishments of Education, will be to no Purpose, but to make the worse or more dangerous Man. Now comes the Place I am fo much delighted with!] And indeed, whatever Stir there is made about e getting of Latin, as the great and Difficult Bufiness, his Mother [O thank you, thank you, dear Sir, for putting this excellent Author into my Hands! may teach it him herself, if she will but spend two or three Hours in a Day with him - [if she will? Never fear, dear Sir, but I will, with the bighest Pleasure in the World!] and make him read the Evangelists in Latin to her [How I long to be · five or fix Years older, as well as my dearest Babies, that I may enter upon this charming Scheme! For he need but buy a Latin Testament, and having got fomebody to mark the last Syllable but one, where it is long, in Words above two Syllables, 4 (which is enough to regulate her Pronunciation and accenting the Words) read daily in the Gof-· pels, and then let her avoid understanding them in Latin, if she can.

Why dearest, dear Sir, you have taught me almost all this already; and you, my best and most beloved Tutor, have told me often, I read and pronounce Latin more than tolerably, tho' I don't understand it: But this Method will teach me, as well as your dear Children. But thus the good Gentleman proceeds: 'And when she understands the Evangelists in Latin, let her in the same manner read Afop's Fables, and so proceed on to Eutropius, Justin, and such other Books. I do not mention this

this, adds Mr. Locke, as an imagination of what I fancy may do, but as of a thing I have known done, and the Latin Tongue got with Ease this way.'

.

ıt

s,

1,

br

he

be

ad

be

es,

or

ing

ne,

les,

ion

n in

me

pro-

un

well

ntle-

the

nner

prus,

ntion

Mr. Locke proceeds to mention other Advantages, which the Child may receive from his Mother's Inftruction, which I will endeavour more and more to qualify myself for: Particularly, after he has intimated, that 'at the fame time that the Child is · learning French and Latin, he may be enter'd also in ' Arithmetick, Geography, Chronology, History, and Geometry too; for if, fays he, these be taught ' him in French or Latin, when he begins once to understand either of these Tongues, he will get a Knowlege in these Sciences, and the Language to boot: After he has intimated this, I fay, he proceeds: 'Geography, I think, should be begun with: ' For the learning of the Figure of the Globe, the Situation and Boundaries of the four Parts of the World, and that of particular Kingdoms and Countries, being only an Exercise of the Eyes and Me-' mory, a Child with Pleafure will learn and retain them. And this is fo certain, that I now live in a · House with a Child, whom his MOTHER has so ' well instructed this way in Geography, [But had she ' not, do you think, dear Sir, some of this good Gentle-" man's kind Affistance?] that he knew the Limits of the four Parts of the World; would readily point, being ask'd, to any Country upon the Globe, or ' any County in the Map of England; knew all the ' great Rivers, Promontories, Streights, and Bays in the World, and could find the Longitude and La-' titude of any Place, before he was fix Years old.' There's for you, dear Sir! - See what a Mother can do if the pleases!

I remember, Sir, formerly, in that fweet * Chariot Conference, at the Dawning of my Hopes,

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 61-65.

when all my Dangers were happily over, (a Conference I shall always think of with Pleasure) that you ask'd me, How I would bestow my Time, supposing the neighbouring Ladies would be above being seen in my Company; when I should have no Visits to receive or return; no Parties of Pleasure to join in; no Card-tables to employ my Winter Evenings?

I then, Sir, transported with my opening Prospects, prattled to you, how well I would endeavour to pass my Time in the Family Management and Accounts, in Visits now-and-then to the indigent and worthy Poor; in Musick sometimes; in Reading, in Writing, in my superior Duties—And I hope I have not behaved quite unworthily of my Promises.

But I also remember, dear Sir, what once you said on a certain Occasion, which now, since the sair Prospect is no longer distant, and that I have been so long your happy, thrice happy Wise, I may repeat without those Blushes which then cover'd my Face: Thus then, with a modest Grace, and with that virtuous Endearment, that is so beautiful in your Sex, as well as in ours, whether in the Character of Lover or Husband, Maiden or Wise, you were pleased to say, And I hope, my Pamela, to have superadded to all these, such an Employment'—as—in short, Sir, I am now bless'd with, and writing of; no less than the useful Part I may be able to take in the first Education of your beloved Babies!

And now I must add, that this pleasing Hope sets e above all other Diversions: I wish for no Pars of Pleasure but with you, my dearest Mr. B. these are Parties that will improve me, and make nore capable of the other, and more worthy of Conversation, and of the Time you pass (bewhat I could ever have promised to my utmost in such poor Company as mine, for no other

other Reason but because I love to be instructed, and take my Lessons well, as you are pleas'd to say: And indeed I must be a sad Dunce, if I did not, from so skilful and so beloved a Master.

I want no Card-table Amusements: For I hope, in a few Years, (and a proud Hope it is) to be able to teach your dear little ones the first Rudiments, as Mr. Locke points the Way, of Latin, of French,

and of Geography, and Arithmetick.

0

e

r

-

r

id it

1-

De

S.

uir

en e-

th

ur of

ere

ve

nd be

red

ets

ar-

B. ake

of benost

no

her

O my dear Mr. B. by your Help and Countenance, what may I not be able to teach them! and how may I prepare the Way for a Tutor's Instructions, and give him up Minds half cultivated to his Hands!—And all this time improve myself too, not only in Science, but in Nature, by tracing in the little Babes what all Mankind are, and have been, from Infancy to riper Years, and watching the sweet Dawnings of Reason, and delighting in every bright Emanation of that Ray of Divinity lent to the human Mind, for great and happy Purposes, when rightly pointed and directed!

There is no going further in this Letter, after these charming Recollections and Hopes: For they bring me to that grateful Remembrance, to whom, under God, I owe them all, and also what I have been for so happy a Period, and what I am, which is, what will ever be my Pride and my Glory; and well it may, when I look back to my Beginning, which I ever shall, with humble Acknowledgment,

and can call myself, dearest Mr. B.

Your honoured and honouring,

and, I hope I may say,

in time, useful Wife,

P. B.

tog griding wing O a mightly li

THE PERSON LINES AND A PERSON WINDOWS THE REAL PROPERTY.

LETTER LV.

My dearest Mr. B.

Having in my former Letters said as much as is necessary to let you into my Notion of the excellent Book you put into my Hands, and having touch'd those Points in which the Children of both Sexes may be concern'd, (with some Art in my Intention, I own) in hopes that they would not be so much out of the way, as to make me repent of the Honour and Pleasure you have done me in committing the dear Miss Goodwin to my Care; I shall now very quickly set myself about the little Book which I have done myself the Honour to mention to you.

You have been so good as to tell me, (at the same time that you have not disapprov'd these my specimen Letters, as I may call them) that you will kindly accept of my intended Prefent, and you encourage me to proceed in it; and as I shall leave one fide of the Leaf blank for your Corrections and Alterations, those Corrections will be a fine Help and Instruction to me in the pleasing Task, which I propose to myself, of affisting in the early Education of the dear Children, which it has pleased God to give you. And as, possibly, I may be Years in writing it, as the dear Babies improve, and as I myself improve, by the Opportunities which their Advances in Years will give me, and the Experience I shall gain, I shall then, perhaps, venture to give my Notions and Observations on the more material and noblet Parts of Education, as well as the inferior: For (but that I think the Subjects above my present Abilities) Mr. Locke's Book would lead me into several Remarks, that might not be unuseful, and which appear to me intirely new; tho' that may be owing to my slender Reading and Opportunities, perhaps.

But what, my dearest Mr. B. I would now touch upon, is a Word or two still more particularly upon the Education of my own Sex; a Topick which naturally rises to me from the Subject of my last Letter. For there, dear Sir, we saw, that the Mothers might teach the Child this Part of Science and that Part of Instruction; and who, I pray, as our Sex is generally educated, shall teach the Mothers? How, in a Word, shall they come by their Know-

lege!

15

X-

ng

th

n-

fo

0-

ng

ry

I

ne

ci-

n-

ve

nd

elp h I

on

to it-

elf

ces

all

loind

or:

ve-

ich

ing

ps.

I know you'll be apt to fay, that Miss Goodwin gives all the Promises of becoming a fine young Lady, and takes her Learning, and loves Reading, and makes very pretty Reflections upon all she reads. and asks very pertinent Questions, and is as knowing, at her Years, as most young Ladies. This is very true, Sir, but it is not every one that can boast Miss Goodwin's Capacity, and Goodness of Temper, which have enabled her to get up a good deal of lost Time, as I must call it; for the first four Years in the dear Child were a perfect Blank, as far as I can find, just as if the pretty Dear was born the Day she was four Years old: For what the had to unlearn as to Temper, and Will, and fuch things, fet against what little Improvements she had made, might very fairly be compounded for, as a Blank.

I would indeed have a Girl brought up to her Needle; but I would not have all her Time employ'd in Samplers, and learning to mark, and to do those unnecessary things, which she will never, pro-

bably, be called upon to practife.

And why, pray, my dear Mr. B. are not Girls intitled to the same first Education, though not to the same Plays and Diversions, as Boys; so far at least, as is supposed by Mr. Locke a Mother can instruct them?

Would not this lay a Foundation for their future Improvement, and direct their Inclinations to useful Q 4 Subjects,

Subjects, fuch as would make them above the Imputations of some unkind Gentlemen, who allot to their Parts common Tea-table Prattle, while they do all they can to make them fit for nothing elfe, and then upbraid them for it? And would not the Men find us better and more fuitable Companions and Affistants to them in every useful Purpose of Life?—O that your lordly Sex were all like my dear Mr. B. - I don't mean, that they should all take raw, uncouth, unbred, lowly Girls, as I was, from the Cottage, and, destroying all Distinction, make fuch their Wives. I cannot mean this: Because there is a far greater Likelihood, that such a one, when she comes to be lifted up into so dazzling a Sphere, would have her Head made giddy with her Exaltation, than that she would balance herself well in it: And then to what a Blot, over all the fair Page of a long Life, would this little Drop of dirty Ink spread itself! What a standing Disreputation to the Choice of a Gentleman!

But this I mean, that after a Gentleman had enter'd into the Marriage State with a young Creature (faying nothing at all of Birth or Descent) far inferior to him in Learning, in Parts, in Knowledge of the World, and in all the Graces which make Conversation agreeable and improving, he would, as you do, endeavour to make her fit Company for himfelf, as he shall find she is willing to improve, and capable of Improvement: That he would direct her Taste, point out to her proper Subjects for her Amusement and Instruction; travel with her nowand-then, a month in a Year perhaps; and shew her the World, after he has encourag'd her to put herfelf forward at his own Table, and at the Houses of his Friends, and has feen, that she will not do him great discredit any-where. What Obligations, and Opportunities too, will this give her to love and honour fuch a Husband, every Hour, more and more!

0

,

e

IS

f

s,

1,

-:

·a

g

er

11

ir

ty

to

n-

re

e-

of

n-

ou

n-

nd

ner

ner

W-

ner

er-

of

im

ind

ind

and

re!

more! as she will see his Wisdom in a thousand Instances, and experience his Indulgence to her in ten thousand, (for which otherwise no Opportunity could have so fitly offer'd) to the Praise of his Politeness, and the Honour of them both !--- And then, when select Parties of Pleasure or Business engag'd him not abroad, in his home Conversation, to have him, as my dear Mr. B. does, delight to instruct and open her Views, and inspire her with an Ambition to enlarge her Mind, and more and more to excel! What an intellectual kind of marry'd Life, as I may call it, would fuch Persons find theirs! And how fuitable to the Rules of Policy and Self-love in the Gentleman! for is not the Wife, and are not her Improvements, all his own? - Absolutely, as I may fay, his own? And does not every Excellence the can be adorn'd by, redound to her Husband's Honour, because she is his, even more than to her own? - In like manner as no Dishonour affects a Man fo much, as that which he receives from a bad Wife.

But where, would fome fay, were they to fee what I write, is such a Gentleman as Mr. B. to be met with? Look around and see where, with all the Advantages of Sex, of Education, of Travel, of Conversation in the open World, a Gentleman of his Abilities to instruct and inform, is to be found? And there are others, who, perhaps, will question the Capacities or Inclinations of our Sex in general, to improve in useful Knowledge, were they to meet with such kind Instructors, either in the Characters of Parents or Husbands.

As to the first, I grant, that it is not easy to find such a Gentleman: But for the second, (if it would be excus'd in me, who am one of the Sex, and so may be thought partial to it) I could, by Comparisons drawn from the Gentlemen and Ladies within the Circle of my own Acquaintance, produce in-

Q5

france

stances, which are so flagrantly in their Favour, as might make it suspected, that it is Policy more than Justice, in those who would keep our Sex unacquainted with that more eligible Turn of Education, which gives the Gentlemen fo many Advan. tages over us in that; and which will shew, they

have none at all in Nature or Genius.

I know you will pardon me, dear Sir; for you are fo exalted above your Pamela, by Nature and Education too, that you cannot apprehend any Inconvenience from bold Comparisons. I will take the Liberty therefore to mention a few Instances among our Friends, where the Ladies, notwithstanding their more cramp'd and confin'd Education, make more than an equal Figure with the Gentlemen in all the graceful Parts of Conversation, in spite of the Contempts pour'd out upon our Sex by some witty Gentlemen, whose Writings I have in my Eye.

To begin then with Mr. Murray, and Miss Darnford that was: Mr. Murray has the Reputation of Scholarship, and has travell'd too; but how infinitely is he furpass'd in every noble and useful Quality, and in Greatness of Mind, and Judgment, as well as Wit, by the young Lady I have nam'd? This we faw, when last at the Hall, in fifty Instances, where the Gentleman was, you know, Sir, on a Visit to

Sir Simon and his Lady.

Next, dear Sir, permit me to observe, that my good Lord Davers, with all his Advantages, born a Counsellor of the Realm, and educated accordingly,

does not furpass his Lady.

My Countess, as I delight to call her, and Lady Betty, her eldest Daughter, greatly surpass'd the Earl, and her eldest Brother, in every Point of Knowlege, and even Learning, as I may fay, altho' both Ladies owe that Advantage principally to their own Cultivation and Acquirement.

Let me presume, Sir, to name Mr. H.; and when I have nam'd him, shall we not be puzzled to find any-where in our Sex, one Remove from vulgar Life, a Woman that will not out-do Mr. H.?

23

an

ac-

ca-

ın-

ney

are

ca-

ni-

the

ng

eir

ore

the

on-

en-

rn-

of

ely

ty,

as

we

ere

to

my

n a

ly,

dy

arl,

ge,

ti-

Lady Darnford, upon all useful Subjects, makes a much brighter figure than Sir Simon, whose Knowledge of the World has not yet made him acquainted with himself.—Mr. Arthur excels not his Lady.

Mrs. Towers, a Maiden Lady, is an Over-match for half a dozen of the neighbouring Gentlemen I could name, in what is call'd Wit and Politeness, and not inferior to any of them in Judgment.

I could multiply Instances of this Nature, were it needful, to the Consutation of that low, and I had almost said, unmanly Contempt, with which a certain celebrated Genius treats our Sex in general, in most of his Pieces that I have seen; particularly his Letter of Advice to a new-marry'd Lady; A Letter writ in such a manner, as must disgust, instead of instructing; and looks more like the Advice of an Enemy to the Sex, and a bitter one too, than a Friend to the particular Lady. But I ought to beg Pardon for this my Presumption, for two Reasons; first, Because of the truly admirable Talents of this Writer; and next, Because we know not what Ladies the ingenious Gentleman may have fallen among in his younger Days.

Upon the whole, therefore, I conclude, that Mr. B. is almost the only Gentleman, who excels every Lady that I have seen; so greatly excels, that even the Emanations of his Excellence irradiate a low Cottage-born Girl, and make her pass among Ladies of Birth and Education for somebody.

Forgive my Pride, dear Sir; but it would be almost a Crime in your Pamela not to exult in the mild Benignity of those Rays, by which her beloved Mr. B. endeavours to make her look up to his own funny Sphere; while she, by the Advantage only of Q 6

his reflected Glory, in his Absence, which makes a dark Night to her, glides along with her paler and fainter Beaminess, and makes a distinguishing Figure among such lesser Planets, as can only poorly twinkle and glimmer, for want of the Aid she boasts of.

I dare not, Sir, conjecture whence arises this more than Parity in the Genius of the Sexes, among the Persons I have mention'd, notwithstanding the Disparity of Education, and the Disserence in the Opportunities of each. This might lead one into too proud a Thought in favour of a Sex too contemptuously treated by some other Wits I could name, who, indeed, are the less to be regarded, as they love to jest upon all God Almighty's Works: Yet might I better do it, too, than any body, since, as I have intimated above, I am so infinitely transcended by my Husband, that no Competition, Pride, or Vanity, could be apprehended from me.

But, however, I would only beg of the Gentlemen, who are so free in their Contempts of us, that they would, for their own sakes, (and that, with such, generally goes a great way) rather try to improve than depreciate us: We should then make better Daughters, better Wives, better Mothers, and better Mistresses: And who (permit me, Sir, to ask these People) would be so much the better for these Opportunities and Amendments, as our Upbraiders

themselves?

On re-perusing what I have written, I must repeatedly beg your Excuse, dear Sir, for these proud Notions in behalf of my Sex. I can truly say, that they are not, if I know myself, owing to Partiality, because I have the Honour to be one of it; but to a better Motive by far: For what does this contemptuous Treatment of one Half, if not the better Half, of the human Species, naturally produce, but Libertinism and abandon'd Wickedness? for does it not tend to make the Daughters, the Sisters, the Wives d

re le

is

ng ne

ne

to

ld

as:

e,

1-

1,

2-

at

1t-

ıd

k

fe

rs

-

d

at

7,

2

)-

-

es

of Gentlemen, the Subjects of profligate Attempts?—Does it not render the Sex vile in the Eyes of the most Vile? And when a Lady is no longer beheld by such Persons with that Dignity and Reverence, with which perhaps, the Graces of her Person, and the Innocence of her Mind, should facredly, as it were, encompass her, do not her very Excellencies become so many Incentives for base Wretches to attempt her Virtue, and bring about her Ruin?

What then may not wicked Wit have to answer for, when its Possessor prostitute it to such unmanly Purposes? And as if they had never had a Mother, a Sister, a Daughter of their own, throw down, as much as in them lies, those facred Fences which may lay the fair Inclosure open to the Invasions of every clumsier and viler Beast of Prey, who, though destitute of their Wit, yet corrupted by it, shall fill their Mouths, as well as their Hearts, with the borrow'd Mischief, and propagate it, from one to another, to the End of Time; and who, otherwise, would have pass'd by the uninvaded Fence, and only shew'd their Teeth, and snarl'd at the well-secured Fold within it!

You cannot, my dearest Mr. B. I know you cannot, be angry at this romantick Painting; since you are not affected by it: For when you were at worst, you acted (more dangerously, 'tis true, for the poor Innocents) a principal Part, and were as a Lion among Beasts—Do, dear Sir, let me say among, this one time—You scorn'd to borrow any Man's Wit*, and if nobody had follow'd your Example, till they had had your Qualities, the Number of Rakes would have been but small. Yet, dearest Sir, don't mistake me neither; I am not so mean as to bespeak your Favour by extenuating your Failings: If I were, you would deservedly despise me. For, undoubtedly, (I must say it, Sir) your Faults were the

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 70.

greater for your Perfections: and fuch Talents misapply'd, as they made you more capable of Mischief, so did they increase the Evil of your Practices. All then that I mean by saying you are not affected by this Painting, is, that you are not affected by the Description I have given of clumsy and sordid Rakes, whose Wit is borrow'd, and their Wickedness only

what they may call their own.

Then, dear Sir, fince that noble Conversation, which you held with me at Tunbridge, in relation to the Consequences that might, had it not been for GoD's Grace intervening, have follow'd the Masquerade Affair, I have the Pleasure, the inexpressible Pleasure, to find a thorough Reformation, from the best Motives, taking place; and your joining with me in my Closet, (as Opportunity permits) in my Evening Duties, is the charming Confirmation of your kind and voluntary, and I am proud to fay, your pious Assurances! so that this makes me fearless of your Displeasure, while I rather triumph in my Joy, for your precious Soul's fake, than prefume to think of recriminating; and when (only this one time for all, and for ever) I take the Liberty of looking back from the delightful Now, to the painful Formerly !

But, What a Rambler am Lagain! You command me, Sir, to write to you all I think, without Fear. I obey, and, as the Phrase is, do it without either Fear

or Wit.

If you are not displeas'd, it is a Mark of the true Nobleness of your Nature, and the Sincerity of your

late pious Declarations.

If you are, I shall be fure I have done wrong in having apply'd a Corrosive to eat away the Proude Flesh of a Wound, that is not yet so thoroughly digested, as to bear a painful Application, and requires Balfam, and a gentler Treatment. But when we were at Bath, I remember what you said once of the Benefit

Benefit of Retrospection; and you charg'd me, whenever a proper Opportunity offer'd, to remind you, by that one Word, Retrospection, of the charming Conversation we had there, on our Return from the Rooms.

If this be not one of those proper Opportunities, forgive, dearest Sir, the Unreasonableness of your very impertinent, but, in Intention, and Resolution,

Ever dutiful,

P. B.

LETTER LVI.

From Mrs. B. to her Father and Mother.

Ever dear, and ever honoured,

I Must write this one Letter to you, altho' I have had the Happiness to see you so lately; because Mr. B. is now about to honour me with the Tour he so kindly promised to me, when with you; and it may therefore be several Months, perhaps, before I have again the Pleasure of paying you the like dutiful Respects.

You know his kind Promise, that he would, for every dear Baby I present him with, take an Excursion with me afterwards, in order to establish and

confirm my Health.

iif-

ef, All

by

)e.

es.

nly

on,

on

the

in-

ts);

ud

ph-

his.

of

ful

nd

I

ear.

ue

ur.

in

ud:

d,

ıl-

re

he

fit

The Task I have undertaken of dedicating all my Writing Amusements to the dearest of Men; the full Employment I have, when at home; the frequent Rambles he has been so often pleas'd to indulge me in, with my dear Miss Goodwin, to Kent, to Lendon, to Bedfordshire, to Lincolnshire, and to my Lady Davers's, take from me the Necessity of writing to your honoured Selves, to my Miss Darnford that was, and to Lady Davers, so often as I formerly thought

thought myself obliged to do, when I saw all my worthy Friends so seldom; the same things, moreover, with little Variation, occurring this Year, as to our Conversations, Visits, Friends, Employments, and Amusements, that sell out the last; as must be the Case, in a Family so uniform and methodical as ours.

I have for these Reasons, more Leisure to pursue my domestick Duties, which are increas'd upon me; and when I have said, That I am every Day more and more happy in my beloved Mr. B. in Miss Goodwin, my Billy, and my Davers, and now, newly, in my sweet little Pamela, (for so, you know, Lady Davers would have her called, rather than by her own

Name) what can I fay more?

As to the Tour I spoke of, you know, the first Part of Mr. B.'s obliging Scheme is to carry me to France; for he has already travell'd with me over the greatest Part of England; and I am sure, by my Passage last Year, to the Isle of Wight, I shall not be assaid of crossing the Water from Dover thither; and he will, when we are Paris, he says, take my surther Directions (that was his kind Expression) whither to go next.

My Lord and Lady Davers are so good as to promise to accompany us to Paris, provided Mr. B. will give them his and my Company to Aix la Chapelle, for a Month or six Weeks, whither my Lord is advised to go. And Mr. H. if he can get over his Fear of crossing the salt Water, is to be of the Party.

Lady G. Miss Darnford that was, (who likewise has lately lain-in of a fine Daughter) and I, are to correspond, as Opportunity offers; and she is so good as to promise to send to you what I write, as formerly: But I have refused to say one Word in my Letters of the Manners, Customs, Curiosities, &c. of the Places we see, because, first, I shall not have Leisure; and, next, because those things are so much better

better describ'd in Books already printed, written by Persons who made stricter and better Observations than I can pretend to make: So that what I shall write will relate only to our private Selves, and shall

be as brief as possible.

my

ore-

as to

and

the

urs.

fue

me;

ore 00d-, in

Da-

nwo

first

e to

ver

my

be

and

ur-

hi-

ro-

vill

lle, id-

ear

ise

to

fo

as

in

ic. ve

ch

er

If we are to do as Mr. B. has it in his Thoughts, he intends to be out of England Two Years :- But how can I bear that, if for your fakes only, and for those of my dear Babies!—But this must be my Time, my only Time, Mr. B. tells me, to ramble and fee distant Places and Countries; for he is pleas'd to fay, That as foon as his little-ones are capable of my Instructions, and begin to understand my Looks and Signs, he will not spare me from them a Week together; and he is fo kind as to propose, that my dear bold Boy (for every one fees how greatly he resembles his Papa in his dear forward Spirit) shall go with us; and this pleases Miss Goodwin highly, who is very fond of him, and my little Davers; but vows she will never love so well my pretty black-ey'd Pamela.

You see what a sweet Girl Miss is, and you admir'd her much: Did I tell you, what she said to me, when first she saw you both, with your silver Hairs, and reverend Countenances?—Madam, faid the, I dare fay, your Papa and Mamma honoured their Father and Mother: They did, my Dear; but what is your Reason for saying so? -- Because, reply'd she, they have lived so long in the Land which the Lord their GOD has given them. I took the Charmer in my Arms, and kifs'd her three or four times, as she deserv'd; for was not this very pretty in the Child?

I must, with inexpressible Pleasure write you word, how happily God's Providence has now, at last, turn'd that Affair, which once made me fo uneafy, in relation to the fine Countess, (who has been some time abroad) of whom you had heard, as you told me, fome Reports, which had you known at the Time, would have made you very apprehensive for Mr. B.'s

Morals, as well as for my Repose.

I will now (because I can do it with the highest Pleasure, by reason of the Event which it has produced) give you the Particulars of that dark Affair, so far as shall make you Judges of my present Joy: altho' I had hitherto avoided entering into that Subject to you. For now I think myself, by God's Grace, secure of the Affection and Fidelity of the best of Husbands, and that from the worthiest Motives; as you shall hear.

There was but one thing wanting, my dear Parents, to complete all the Happiness I wish'd for in this Life: and that was, The remote Hope I had entertain'd, that one Day, my dear Mr. B. who from a licentious Gentleman became a Moralist, would be so touch'd by the Divine Grace, as to become, in time, more than a Moral, a Religious Man, and that he would, at last, join in the Duties which he had

the Goodness to countenance.

For this Reason I began with mere Indispensables. I crowded not his Gate with Objects of Charity: I visited them at their Homes, and relieved them; distinguishing the worthy Indigent (made so by unavoidable Accidents and Casualties) from the wilfully, or perversely, or sottishly such, by greater Marks

of my Favour.

I confin'd my Morning and Evening Devotions to my own Closet, as privately as possible, less I should give Offence and Discouragement to so gay a Temper, so unaccustom'd (poor Gentleman!) to Acts of Devotion and Piety; while I met his Household together, only on Mornings and Evenings of the Sabbath-day, to prepare them for their publick Duties in the one, and in hopes to confirm them in what they had heard at Church in the other; leaving them to their own Resections for the rest of the Week; after I had suggested to them a Method I wish'd to be follow'd by themselves, and in which they constant-

ly oblig'd me,

ae

1

This good Order had its defired Effect, and our Sabbath-day Affemblies were held with so little Parade, that we were hardly any of us miss'd. All, in short, was done with cheerful Ease and Composure; and every one of us was better dispos'd to our domestick Duties by this Method: I, to attend the good Pleasure of my best Friend; and they, to attend that of us both.

In this manner, we went on, very happily, my neighbourly Vifits of Charity taking up no more Time than common Airings, and passing, many of them, for such; my private Duties being only between my First, my Heavenly Benefactor, and myself, and my Family-ones (personally) confined to the Day, separated for these best of Services; and Mr. B. pleased with my Manner, beheld the good Effects, and countenanced me by his Praises and his Endearments, as acting discreetly, as not falling into Enthusiasm, and (as he used to say) as not aiming at being righteous over-much.

But still I wanted, and I waited for, with humble Impatience, and I made it Part of my constant Prayers, that the Divine Grace would at last touch his Heart, and make him more than a Countenancer, more than an Applauder of my Duties: That he might, for his own dear sake, become a Partaker, a Partner in them; and then, thought I, when we can Hand in Hand, Heart in Heart, one Spirit, as well as one Flesh, join in the same Closet, in the same Prayers and Thanksgivings, what a happy Creature

shall I be!

I say, Closet; for I durst not aspire so high, as to hope he would favour me with his Company among his Servants, in our Sunday Devotions.——I

knew

knew it would be going too far, in his Opinion, to expect it from him. In me their Mistress, had I been ever so high-born, it was not amiss, because I, and they, every one of us, were his; I in one Degree, Mr. Longman in another, Mrs. Jervis in another—But from a Man of his high Temper, and manner of Education, I knew I could never hope for it; so would not lose every thing, by grasping at too much.

But in the midst of all these comfortable Proceedings, and my further charming Hopes, a nasty Masquerade threw into the dear Gentleman's Way a Temptation, which for a Time blasted all my Prospects, and indeed made me doubt my own Head almost. For, judge what my Disappointment must be, when I found all my Wishes frustrated, all my Prayers render'd ineffectual: His very Morality, which I had flatter'd myself, in time, I should be an humble Instrument to exalt into Religion, shock'd, and in danger; and all the good Work to begin again, if offended Grace should ever again offer itself to the dear wilful Trespasser!

But who shall pretend to scrutinize the Councils of the Almighty?—For out of all this evil Appearance was to proceed the real Good, I had been so long,

and so often, supplicating for !

The dear Man was to be on the Brink of relapfing: It was proper, that I should be so very uneasy, as to assume a Conduct not natural to my Temper, and to raise his generous Concern for me: And, in the very Crisis, Divine Grace interposed, made him sensible of his Danger, made him resolve against his Error, before it was yet too late; and his sliding Feet, quitting the slippery Path he was in, collected new Strength, and he stood the sirmer, and more secure for his Peril.

For, my dear Parents, having happily put an end to that Affair, and by his uniform Conduct, for a

con-

CC

W

01

II

u

n

n

n

h

to

iı

y

I

to

h

a

b

F

1

tò

I

fe

ie

n

d

e

it

a

-

d

ft

y

,

n

,

n

-

S

,

1

1

5

i

considerable Length of Time, shew'd me that I had nothing to apprehend from it, he was pleas'd, when we were last at Tunbridge together, and in very serious Discourse upon Divine Subjects, to say to this Effect: Is there not, my Pamela, a Text, That the unbelieving Husband shall be saved by the believing Wife, while he beholds her chaste Conversation coupled with Fear?

I need not tell you, my dear Mr. B. that there is, nor where it is.

Then, my Dear, I begin to hope, that will be my Case: For, from a former Affair, of which this Spot of Ground puts me more in mind, I see so much Reason to doubt my own Strength, which I had built, and, as I thought, securely, on moral Foundations, that I must look out for a better Guide to conduct me, than the proud Word Honour can be, in the general Acceptation of it among us lively young Gentlemen.

How often, my dearest Love, continu'd he, have I promised, (and I never promised, but I intended to perform) that I would be faithfully and only yours! How often have I declar'd, that I did not think I could possibly deserve my Pamela, till I could shew her, in my own Mind, a Purity as nearly equal to hers, as my past Conduct would admit of!

But I depended too much upon my own Strength: And I am now convinc'd, that nothing but

RELIGIOUS CONSIDERATIONS,

and a Resolution to watch over the very first Appearances of Evil, and to check them, as they arise, can be of sufficient Weight to keep steady to his good Purposes, a vain young Man, too little accustom'd to Restraint, and too much us'd to play upon the Brink of Dangers, from a Temerity, and Love of Intrigue, natural to enterprising Minds.

I would not, my best Love, make this Declaration of my Convictions to you, till I had thoroughly examin'd myself, and had Reason to hope, that I should be enabled to make it good. And now, my Pamela, from this Instant, you shall be my Guide; and, only taking care, that you do not, all at once, by Injunctions too rigorous, damp and discourage the rising Flame, I will leave it to You to direct as you please, till, by degrees, it may be deem'd worthy to mingle with your own.

Judge, my dear Parents, how rapturous my Joy was upon this Occasion, and how ready I was to bless God for a Danger (so narrowly escap'd) which was attended with the very Consequences that I had so long pray'd for; and which I little thought the Divine Providence was bringing about by the very Means, that, I apprehended, would put an End to all my

pleasing Hopes and Prospects of that nature.

It is in vain for me to think of finding Words to express what I felt, and how I acted, on this Occasion. I heard him out with twenty different and impatient Emotions; and then threw myself at his Feet, embracing his Knees, with Arms the most ardently clasping! My Face listed up to Heaven, and to his Face, by Turns; my Eyes overslowing with Tears of Joy, which half choak'd up the Passage of my Words.—At last, his kind Arms clasping my Neck, and kissing my tearful Cheek, I could only say—My Prayers, my ardent Prayers, are at last—at last—heard—May God Almighty, dear Sir, confirm your pious Purposes!—And, Oh! what a happy Pamela have you at your Feet!

I wept for Joy, till I fobb'd again—and he raising me to his kind Arms, when I could speak, I said, To have this heavenly Prospect, O best Beloved of my Heart! added to all my earthly Blessings!——How shall I contain my Joy!—For, Oh! to think that my dear Mr. B. is, and will be, mine, and I

his,

h

I

S

I

1

ti

b

t

n

V

t

C

V

ŀ

his, thro' the Mercies of God, when this transitory Life is past and gone, to all Eternity; what a rich Thought is this!—Methinks, I am already, dear Sir, ceasing to be mortal, and beginning to taste the Perfection of those Joys, which this thrice welcome Declaration gives me Hope of, hereaster!—But, what shall I say, oblig'd as I was beyond Expression before, and now doubly oblig'd in the rapturous View you have open'd to me, into a happy Futurity!

He was pleas'd to fay, He was delighted with me beyond Expression; that I was his ecstatick Charmer!

—That the Love I shew'd for his future Good was the moving Proof of the Purity of my Heart, and my Affection for him. And that very Evening he was pleas'd to join with me in my retired Duties; and, at all proper Opportunities, favours me with his Company in the same manner; listening attentively to all my Lessons, as he calls my cheerful Dis-

courses on serious Subjects.

n

I

y

;

,

IS

y

IS

0

e

y,

0

1.

t

y

0

y ,

y

r

a

,

f

k

And now, my dear Parents, do you not rejoice with me, in this charming, charming Appearance? For, before, I had the most generous, the most beneficent, the most noble, the most affectionate, but, now, I am likely to have the most pious, of Husbands! What a happy Wife, what a happy Daughter, is his and your Pamela!—God, of his infinite Mercy, continue and improve the ravishing Prospect!

I was forced to leave off here, to enjoy the charming Reflections, which this lovely Subject, and my bleffed Prospects filled me with: And now proceed to write a few Lines more.

I am under some Concern on account of our going to travel into Roman-Catholick Countries, for sear we should want the public Opportunities of Divine Service: For I presume, the Ambassador's Chapel

Chapel will be the only Protestant Place of Worship allow'd of; and Paris the only City in France where there is one. Be we must endeavour to make it up in our private and domestick Duties: For, as the Phrase is, when we are at Rome, we must do as they do at Rome; that is to say, so far, as not to give Offence, on the one Hand, to the People we are among; nor Scandal, on the other, by Compliances hurtful to one's Conscience. Butmy Protector knows all these things so well, (no Place in what is call'd the Grand Tour, being new to him) that I have no Reason to be very uneasy on these Accounts.

And now, my dearest dear honour'd Parents, let me, by Letter, as I did on my Knees at Parting, beg the Continuance of your Prayers and Blessings, and that God will preserve us to one another, and give us, and all our worthy Friends, a happy Meet-

ing again.

Kent, you may be fure, will be our first Visit, on our Return, for Your sakes, for my dear Davers's sake, and for my little Pamela's sake, who will be both sent down, and put into your Protection; while my Billy, and Miss Goodwin, (for, since I began this Letter, it is so determin'd) are to be my delightful Companions; for Mr. B. declared, his Boy shall not be one Day out of my Presence, if he can help it, because he is pleas'd to say, his Temper wants looking after, and his Notices of every thing are strong and significant.

Poor little Dear! he has indeed a little fort of Perverseness and Headstrongness, as one may say, in his Will: But he is but a Baby; and I shall, I hope, manage him pretty well; for he takes great Notice of all I say, and of every Look of mine already—He is, besides, very good-humour'd, and willing to part with any thing for a kind Word; and this gives me Hope of a docile and benevolent Disposition, as

he grows up.

I thought,

I thought, when I began the last Paragraph but one, that I was within a Line of concluding; but it is to You, and of my Babies, I am writing; so shall go on to the Bottom of this new Sheet, if I do not directly put an end to my Scribbling: Which I do, with assuring you both, my dear good Parents, that wherever I am, I shall always be thoughtful of you, and remember you in my Prayers, as becomes

Your ever dutiful Daughter,

P. B.

My Respects to all your good Neighbours in general. Mr. Longman will visit you now-and-then. Mrs. Jervis will take one Journey to Kent, she says, and it shall be to accompany my Babies, when they are carried down to you. Poor Jonathan, and she, good Folks! seem declining in their Health, which much grieves me.

—Once more, God send us all a happy Meeting, if it be his blessed Will! Adieu, Adieu, my dear Parents!

Your ever-dutiful, &c.

LETTER LVII.

My dear Lady G.

i

n

S

e

e

al ot

g

of in

e,

ce

to

es

as

ıt,

I Received your last Letter at Paris, as we were disposing everything for our Return to England, after an Absence of near Two Years; in which, as I have informed you, from Time to Time, I have been a great Traveller, into Holland, the Netherlands, through the most considerable Provinces of France, into Italy; and, in our Return to Paris again, (the principal Place of our Residence) through several Parts of Germany.

Vol. IV. R 1 told

Her Ladyship made that worthy Lord happy in about a Month after she parted from us; and the noble Pair gave us an Opportunity at Paris, in their Way to England, to return some of the Civilities which we received from them in Italy: And they are now arriv'd at her Ladyship's Seat on the Forest.

Her Lord is exceedingly fond of her, as he well may; for the is one of the most charming Ladies in England; and behaves to him with so much Prudence and Respect, that they are as happy in each other as can be wish'd. And let me just add, That both in Italy and at Paris, Mr. B.'s Demeanour and her Ladyship's to one another, was so nobly open, and unaffectedly polite, as well as highly discreet, that neither Lord C. who had once been jealous of Mr. B. nor the other Party, who had had a Tincture of the same Yellow Evil, as you know, because of the Counters, had so much as a Shadow of Uneasiness remaining on that Occasion.

Lord Davers has had his Health (which had begun to decline in England) so well, that there was no persuading Lady Davers to return before now; altho' I begg'd and pray'd I might not have another little Frenchman, for sear they should, as they grew up, forget, as I pleasantly used to say, the Obligations which their Parentage lays them under to dearer England.

And now, my dearest Friend, I have shut up my Rambles for my whole Life; for Three little English Folks, and One little Frenchman, (but a charming Baby, as well as the rest, Charley by Name) and a near Prospect of a surther Increase, you will say, are Family enough to employ all my Cares at home.

I have

fe

B

ad

in

in

he

ir

es

re

ell

in

ce

as

in

a-

n-

ei-

B.

the

ın-

re-

un

no

ho'

ttle

or-

ich

d.

my

glish

ing

id a

are

ave

I have told you, from time to time, altho' I could not write to you so often as I would, because of our being constantly in Motion, what was most worthy of your Knowledge relating to our Particular, and how happy we have all been in one another. And I have the Pleasure to confirm to you what I have several times written, that Mr. B. and my Lord and Lady Davers are all that I could wish and hope for, with regard to their first Duties. Indeed, indeed, we are a happy Family, united by the best and most solid Ties!

Miss Goodwin is a charming young Lady!—I cannot express how much I love her. She is a perfect Mistress of the French Language, and speaks Italian very prettily! And, as to myself, I have improved so well under my dear Tutor's Lessons, together with the Opportunity of conversing with the politest and most learned Gentry of different Nations, that I will hold a Conversation with you in two or three Languages, if you please, when I have the Happiness to see you. There's a learned Boaster for you, my dear Friend! (if the Knowledge of different Languages makes one learned). But I shall bring you an Heart as intirely English as ever, for all that!

We landed on Thursday last at Dover, and directed our Course to the dear Farm-house; and you can better imagine, than I express, whata Meeting we had with my dear Father and Mother, and my beloved Davers and Pamela, who are charming Babies—But is not this the Language of every fond Mamma?

Miss Goodwin is highly delighted now with my sweet little Pamela, and says, She shall be her Sister indeed! For, Madam, said she, Miss is a Beauty!—And we see no French Beauties like Master Davers and Miss.

Beauty! my dear Miss Goodwin, said I; what is Beauty, if she be not a good Girl?—Beauty is but a specious, and, as it may happen, a dangerous Re-

commendation, a mere skin-deep Perfection; and if, as she grows up, she is not as good as my Miss

Goodwin, she shall be none of my Girl.

What adds to my Pleasure, my dear Friend, is to see them both so well got over the Small-pox. It has been as happy for them, as it was for their Mamma and her Billy, that they had it under so skilful and kind a Manager in that Distemper, as my dear Mother, I wish, if it please God, it was as happily over with my little pretty Frenchman.

Years have done for Miss Goodwin and my Billy.—
O my dear Friend, they are both of them almost—
nay, quite, I think, for their Years, all that I wish

them to be.

In order to make them keep their French, which Miss so well speaks, and Billy so prettily prattles, I oblige them, when they talk to one another, and are in the Nursery, to speak nothing else: But at Table, except on particular Occasions, when French may be spoken, they are to speak in English; that is to say, when they do speak: For I tell them that little Masters must do nothing but ask Questions for Information, and fay Yes, or No, till their Papas or Mammas give them leave to speak; nor little Ladies neither, till they are Sixteen; for, my dear Loves, cry I, You would not speak before you know how: And Knowledge is obtained by Hearing, and not by Speak. ing. And fetting my Billy on my Lap, in Miss's Prefence, Here, faid I, taking an Ear in the Fingers of each Hand, are two Ears, my Billy; and, then pointing to his Mouth, but one Tongue, my Love: So you must be sure to mind, that you hear twice as much as you speak, even when you grow a bigger Master than you are now.

You have so many pretty Ways to learn one, Madam, says Miss, now-and-then, that it is imposfible we should not regard what you say to us!

1 3

Several

0

S

a

d

r

0

h

I

re

e, be

у,

f-

a-

n-

i-

ry

nd

k.

e-

of

it-So

as

ger

ie,

of-

ral

Several French Tutors, when we were abroad, were recommended to Mr. B. But there is one English Gentleman, now on his Travels with young Mr. R. with whom Mr. B. has agreed; and in the mean time, my best Friend is pleas'd to compliment me, that the Children will not suffer for want of a Tutor, while I can take the Pains I do: Which he will have to be too much for me; especially that now, on our Return, my Davers and my Pamela are added to my Cares. But what Mother can take too much Pains to cultivate the Minds of her Children ?- If, my dear Lady G. it were not for these frequent Lyings-in !-But this is the Time of Life—Though little did I think, foearly, I should have so many careful Blessings!

I have as great Credit as Pleasure from my little All our Neighbours here in Bedfordshire Family. admire us more and more. You'll excuse my seeming (for it is but feeming) Vanity; I hope I know better than to have it real-Never, fays Mrs. Towers, who is still a fingle Lady, did I see, before, a Lady so much advantag'd by her Residence in that fantastic Nation, (for the loves not the French) who brought home with her nothing of their Affectations!—She will have it, that the French Politeness, and the English Frankness and Plainness of Heart, appear happily blended in all we fay and do. And she makes me a thousand Compliments upon Lord and Lady Davers's Account, who, the would fain perfuade me, owe a great deal of Improvement (my Lord in his Converfation, and my Lady in her Temper) to living in the same House with us.

Indeed, my Lady Davers is exceeding kind and good to me, is always magnifying me to every body, and fays, she knows not how to live from me; and that I have been a Means of faving half an hundred Souls, as well as her dear Brother's. On an Indifpolition of my Lord's at Montpelier, which made

 R_3

at her own Expence.

Mr. H. is Mr. H. still; and that's the best I can fay of him: For, I verily think, he is more an Ape than ever. His whole Head is now French. 'Twas half so before. We had great Difficulties with him abroad: His Aunt and I endeavouring to give him a ferious and religious Turn, we had like to have turn'd him into a Roman Catholick. For he was pleafed much with the shewy Part of that Religion, and the fine Pictures and Decorations in the Churches of Italy; and having got into Company with a Dominican at Padua, a Franciscan at Milan, and a Jesuit at Paris, they lay so hard at him, in their Turns, that we had like to have loft him to each Affailant; fo were forced to let him take his own Course; for, his Aunt would have it, that he had no other Defence from the Attacks of Persons to make him embrace a faulty Religion, than to permit him to continue as he was; that is to fay, to have none at all. So she suspended attempting to proselyte the thoughtless Creature, till he came to England. I wish her Ladyship Success here: but, I doubt, he will not be a Credit to any Religion, for a great while. And as he is very desirous to go to London, as he has always been, it will be found, when there, that any fluttering Coxcomb will do more to make him one of that Class, in an Hour, than his Aunt's Lessons, to-make him a good Man, in a Twelvemonth. Where much is given, much is required. The contrary of this, I doubt, is all poor Mr. H. has to trust to.

Just now we have a Messenger to tell us, that his Father, who has been long ill, is dead. So, now, he is a Lord indeed! He stutters and struts about most

ftrangely,

d

n

e

n

2

1

d

è

strangely, I warrant, and is wholly employ'd in giving Directions relating to his Mourning Equipage, -And now there will be no holding of him in, I doubt; except his new Title has fo much Virtue in it, as to make him a wifer and a better Man.

He will now have a Seat in the House of Peers of Great Britain; but I hope, for the Nation's fake, he will not meet with many more like himself there! -For, to me, that is one of the most venerable Asfemblies in the World; and it appears the more to, fince I have been abroad; for an English Gentleman is respected, if he be any thing of a Man, above a foreign Nobleman; and an English Nobleman, above fome petty Sovereigns.

If our travelling Gentry duly confidered this Diftinction in their Favour, they would, for the Honour of their Country, as well as for their own Credit, behave in a better manner, in their foreign Tours, than, am forry to say it, some of them do. But what can one expect from the unlick'd Cubs, pardon the Term, fent abroad with only Stature, to make them look like Men, and Equipage to attract Respect, without one other Qualification to enforce it?

Here let me close this, with a few Tears, to the Memory of my dear Mrs. Fervis, my other Mother, my Friend, my Adviser, my Protectress, in my single State, and my faithful Second and Partaker in the Comforts of my higher Life, and better Fortunes!

What would I have given to have been present, as, it feems, the fo earnestly wished, to close her dving Eyes! I should have done it with the Piety and the Concern of a truly affectionate Daughter, But that melancholy Happiness was deny'd to us both; for, as I told you in the Letter on the Occafion, the dear good Woman (who now is in the Posfession of her blessed Reward, and rejoicing in God's Mercies) was no more, when the News reached me, 10

fo far off as at Heidelburgh, of her last Illness and Wishes.

I cannot forbear, every time I enter her Parlour, (where I used to see, with so much Delight, the good Woman sitting, always employ'd in some useful or pious Work) shedding a Tear to her Memory: And in my Sabbath Duties, missing her, I miss half a dozen Friends, methinks; and I sigh in Remembrance of her; and can only recover that cheerful Frame, which the Performance of those Duties always gave me, by reslecting, that she now is reaping the Reward of that sincere Piety, which used to edify and encourage us all.

The Servants we brought home with us, and those we left behind us, melt in Tears at the Name of Mrs. Fervis. Mr. Longman too, lamented the Loss of her, in the most moving Strain. And all I can do now, in honour of her Memory and her Merit, is to be a Friend to those she loved most, as I have already begun to be; and none of them shall suffer in those Concerns that can be answer'd, now she is gone. For the Loss of so excellent a Friend and Relation, is Loss enough to all who knew her, and

claimed Kindred with her.

Poor worthy Jonathan too, ('tis almost a Misery to have so soft, so susceptible an Heart as I have, or to have such good Servants and Friends as one cannot lose without such Emotions as I feel for the Loss of them!) his Silver Hairs, which I have beheld with so much Delight, and thought I had a Father in Presence, when I saw them adorning so honest and comely a Face, how are they now laid low!—
Forgive me, my dear Lady G. Jonathan was not a common Servant; neither are any of ours so: But Jonathan excell'd all that excell'd in his Class!—I am told, that these two worthy Folks dy'd within two Days of one another; a Circumstance you mention'd not in your Letter to me; on which Occasion

valion I could not help faying to myself, in the Words of David over Saul and his Son Jonathan, the Namesake of our worthy Butler, They were lovely and pleasant in their Lives, and in their Deaths they were not divided.

I might have continued on in the Words of the Royal Lamenter; for, surely, never did one Fellow-fervant love another in my maiden State, nor Servant love a Mistress in my exalted Condition, better than Jonathan lov'd me! I could see in his Eyes a glistening Pleasure, whenever I pass'd by him: If at such times I spoke to him, as I seldom sailed to do, with a God bless you, too! in Answer to his repeated Blessings, he had a kind of Re-juvenescence (may I say?) visibly running through his whole Frame: And, now-and-then, if I laid my Hand upon his folded ones, as I pass'd by him on a Sunday Morning or Evening, praying for me, with a How do you, my worthy old Acquaintance? his Heart would spring to his Lips in a kind of Rapture, and his Eyes would run over.

O my beloved Friend! how the Loss of these two

Worthies of my Family oppresses me at times!

Mr. B. likewise shew'd a generous Concern on the Occasion: And when all the Servants welcom'd us in a Body, on our Return, Methinks, my Dear, said the good Gentleman, I miss your Mrs. Jervis, and honest Jonathan. A starting Tear, and, They are happy, dear honest Souls! and a Sigh, were the Tribute I paid to their Memories, on their beloved Master's so kindly repeating their Names.

Who knows had I been here—But, away, too painful Reflection! They lived to a good old Age, and fell like Fruit fully ripe: They died the Death of the Righteous; I must follow them in time, God knows how soon: And, Oh! that my latter End may

be like theirs!

Once more, forgive me, my dear Friend, this small Tribute to their Memories: And believe, that I am not fo ungrateful for God's Mercies, as to let the Loss of these dear good Folks lessen with me the Joy, and the Delight I have still (more than any other happy Creature) left me, in the Health, and the Love of the best of good Husbands, and good Men; in the Children, charming as ever Mother could boaft of! charming, I mean principally, in the dawning Beauties of their Minds, and in the Pleasure their Towardliness of Nature gives me; including, as I always do, my dear Miss Goodwin, and have Reason to do, from her dutiful Love, as I may call it, for me, and Observation of all I say to her; in the Preservation to me of the best and worthiest of Parents. hearty, though aged, as they are; in the Love and Friendship of good Lord and Lady Davers; and my excellent Friend Lady G.; not forgetting even worthy Mr. Longman. God preserve all these to me, as I am truly thankful for his Mercies !- And then, notwithstanding my affecting Losses, as above, who will be so happy as I?

That you, my dear Lady G. may long continue so, likewise in the Love of a worthy Husband; and the Delights of an increasing hopeful Family, which will make you some Amends for the heavy Losses you also have sustain'd, in the two last Years, of an affectionate Father, and a most worthy Mother; and in

Mrs. Jones, of a good Neighbour; prays

a ble brook a lavil year

Panali follow today on time, Con

Your ever affettionate Friend and Servant,

P. B.

LETTER LVIII.

My beloved Lady G.

OU will excuse my long Silence, when I shall

I tell you the Occasions of it.

In the first Place, I was oblig'd to pay a dutiful and concerning Visit to Kent, where my good Father was taken ill of a Fever, and my Mother of an Ague: And think, Madam, how this must affect me, at their Time of Life!

Mr. B. kindly accompany'd me, apprehending, that his beloved Presence would be necessary, if the Recovery of them both, in which I thankfully rejoice, had not happen'd; especially, as a Circumstance I am, I think, always in, added more Weight to his

Apprehensions.

I had hardly return'd from Kent to Bedfordshire, and look'd around, when I was oblig'd to set out to attend Lady Davers, who sent me Word, that she should die, that was her strong Term, if she saw me not, to comfort and recover, by my Counsel and Presence, so she was pleas'd to express herself, her sick Lord, who was just got out of an Intermittent Fever, which lest him without any Spirits, and was occasion'd by fretting at the Conduct of her stupid Nephew, those also were her Words.

For you must have heard, (every body hears when a Man of Quality does a foolish thing!) and it has been in all the News-papers, that— On Wednesday

Last the Right Honourable John (Jackey, they

fhould have faid) Lord H. Nephew to the Right Honourable William Lord Davers, was married to

the Honourable Mrs, P. Relict of J. P. of Twicken-

ham, Esq; a Lady of celebrated Beauty, and ample

Fortune:

Now, my dear Friend, you must know, that this celebrated Lady is, 'tis true, of the-Family, whence her Title of Honourable; but is indeed so celebrated, that every fluttering Coxcomb in Town can give fome Account of her, even before she was in Keeping of the Duke of ____, who had cast her off to the Town he had robb'd of her.

In short, my Dear, she is quite a common Woman; has no Fortune at all, as one may fay, only a small Jointure incumber'd, and is much in Debt. --- She is a Shrew into the Bargain, and the poor Wretch is a Father already; for he has had a Girl of three Years old (her Husband has been dead seven) brought him home, which he knew nothing of, nor ever inquir'd, whether his Widow had a Child! -And he is now employ'd in paying the Mother's Debts, and trying to make the best of his Bargain.

This is the Fruit of a London Journey, fo long defir'd by him, and his fluttering about there with

his new Title.

He was drawn in by a Brother of his Lady, and a Friend of that Brother's, two' Town Sharpers, Gamesters, and Bullies .- Poor Sir Joseph Wittel! That was his Case, and his Character, it seems, in London.

Shall I present you with a Curiofity? 'Tis a Copy of his Letter to his Uncle, who had, as you may well think, lost all Patience with him, on occasion of this abominable Folly.

My Lord DAVERS,

FOR iff you will nott call mee Neffew, I have no Reason to call you Unkell; shurely you forgett who it was you held up youre Kane to: I

have as little Reason to valew your Displeassure, as

' you have mee; for I am, God be thanked, a Lord, and a Peere of the Realme, as well as you: And as

- to youre nott owneing me, nor youre Brother B.
- onott looking upon me, I care nott a Fardinge;
- and, bad as you thinke I have done, I have mar-
- ry'd a woman of Family.—Take thatt among · you!
- ' As to youre personall Abuses of her, take care
- whatt you fay. You know the Stattute will de-
- fende us as well as you -And, befides, she has a · Brother, thatt won't lett her good Name be call'd
- in Question—Mind thatt!
 - ' Some thinges I wish had been otherwise-Per-
- happs I do-What then? Must you, my Lord,
- make more Mischieff, and adde to my Plagues, iff
- I have any?—Is this your Unkeiship?
 - Butt I shan't want your Advise. I have as good
- an Estate as you have, and am as much a Lord as
- yourselse. Why the Devill then, am I to be treated
- ' as I am? Why the Plague—But I won't sware neither. I desire not to see you, any more
- then you doe me, I can tell you thatt. And iff
- we ever meet under one Roofe with my Likeing, it must be att the House of Peeres, where I shall
- be upon a Parr with you in every thing, that's my
- · Cumfurte.
- As to my Lady Davers, I defire not to fee her
- 4 Ladyshipp; for she was always plaguy nimbel with
- her Fingers; but, lett my false Stepp be what itt
- will, I have, in other respectes, marry'd a Lady,
- who is as well descended as herselfe, and no Dispa-
- ' ragement neither; so have nott thatt to answer for
- to her Pride; and who has as good a Spiritt too,
- if they were to come Face to Face, or I am mis.
- 4 taken: Nor will shee take Affruntes from any one.
- So, my Lord, leave mee to make the best of my
- " Matters, as I will you of youres. So no more,
- but thatt I am
- · Youre Servante, H.

* P. S. I meane no Affrunte to Mrs. B. She is the best of yee all—by G—.

I will not take up your Time with further Observations upon this poor Creature's bad Conduct: His Reflection must proceed from Feeling; and will, that's the worst of it, come too late, come when or how it will. I will only say, I am forry for it on his own Account, but more for that of Lord and Lady Davers, who take the Matter very heavily, and wish he had marry'd the lowest-born Creature in England, (so she had been honest and virtuous) rather than done as he has done.

But, I suppose, the poor Gentleman was resolv'd to shun, at all Adventures, Mr. B.'s Fault, and keep up to the Pride of Descent and Family; —— and so marry'd the only Creature, as I hope, (since it cannot be help'd) that is so great a Disgrace to both: For I presume to flatter myself, for the sake of my Sex, that, among the poor Wretches, who are sunk so low as the Town-Women are, there are very sew of Birth or Education; but such, principally, as have had their Necessities or their Ignorance taken Advantage of by base Men; since Birth and Education must needs set the most unhappy of the Sex above so fordid and so abandon'd a Guilt, as the hourly Wickedness of such a Course of Life subjects them

Silence. I had hardly return'd from Lord and Lady Davers's, and recover'd my Family Management, and refum'd my Nursery Duties, when my fourth dear Boy, my Jemmy—(for, I think, I am going on to make out the Number Lady Davers allotted * me) press'd upon me in such a manner, as not to be refus'd, for one Month or six Weeks Close Attention.

And

And then a Journey to Lord Davers's, and that noble Pair accompanying us to Kent; and daily and hourly Pleasures crowding upon us, narrow and confin'd as our Room there was, (though we went with as sew Attendants as possible) engrossed more of my Time. So that I hope you will forgive me on all these Accounts, because, as soon as I returned, I set about writing this, as an Excuse for myself, in the first place; to promise you the Subject you insist upon, in the next; and to tell you, that I am incapable of Forgetfulness or Negligence to such a Friend as Lady G. For I must always be, dear Madam,

Your faithful and affectionate bumble Servant,

P. B.

LETTER LIX.

My dear Lady G.

THE Remarks which, your Cousin Fielding tells you, I have made on the Subject of young Gentlemens Travelling, and which you request me to communicate to you, are Part of a little Book upon Education, which I wrote for Mr. B.'s Correction and Amendment, on occasion of his putting Mr. Locke's Treatise on that Subject into my Hands, and requiring my Observations upon it.

Expectation; for I am sensible they must be unworthy even of the Opportunities I have had in the Excurtions, in which I have been indulged by the best

of Men.

r

S

n

d

of

e

n

0

y

n

But your Requests are so many Laws to me; and I will give you a short Abstract of what I read to Miss Fielding, who has so greatly over-rated it to you.

That

That Gentleman's Book contains many excellent Rules on the Subject of Education: But this of Travel I will only refer you to at prefent. You will there see his Objectious against the Age at which young Gentlemen are fent abroad, from fixteen to twenty-one, the time in all their Lives, he fays, in which young Men are the least suited to these Improvements, and in which they have the least Fence

and Guard against their Passions.

The Age he proposes is from seven to fourteen, because of the Advantage they will then have to master foreign Languages, and to form their Tongue to the true Pronunciation; as well as that then they will be more easily directed by their Tutors or Governors. Or else he proposes that more sedate Time of Life, when the Gentleman is able to travel without a Tutor, and to make his own Observations; and when he is thoroughly acquainted with the Laws and Fashions, the natural and moral Advantages and Defects of his own Country; by which means, as Mr. Locke wifely observes, the Traveller will have fomething to exchange with those abroad, from whose Conversation he hopes to reap any Knowledge. This Gentleman supports his Opinion by excellent Reasons, to which I refer you.

What I have written in my little Book, which I have not yet quite finish'd, on this Head, relates principally to Home Travelling, which Mr. B. was always resolv'd his Sons should undertake, before they enter'd upon a foreign Tour. I have there observ'd, that England abounds with Curiosities, both of Art and Nature, worth the Notice of a diligent Inquirer, and equal with some of those we admire in Foreign Parts; and that if the Youth be not sent abroad at Mr. Locke's earliest time, from Seven to fourteen (which I can hardly think will be worth while, merely for the fake of attaining a Perfection in the Languages) he may with good Advantage begin, at fourteen or fifteen, the Tour of Great Britain, now-and-then, by Excursions in the Summer Months, between his other Studies, and as a Diversion to him.

This I should wish might be enter'd upon in his Papa's Company, as well as his Tutor's, if it could conveniently be done; who thus initiating both the Governed and the Governor in the Methods he would have observed by both, will obtain no small

Satisfaction and Amusement to himself.

For the Father would by this means be an Eye-witness of the Behaviour of the one and the other, and have a Specimen how fit the young Man was to be trusted, or the Tutor to be depended upon, when they went abroad, and were out of his Sight; as they would of what was expected from them by the Father. And hence a thousand Benefits, as I humbly conceive, would arise to the young Gentleman from the Observations and Resections he would receive from his Father, as Occasion offer'd, with regard to Expence, Company, Conversation, Hours, and such like.

If the Father could not himself accompany his Son, he might appoint the Stages the young Gentleman should take, and injoin both Tutor and Son to give, at every Stage, an Account of whatever they observed curious and remarkable, not omitting the minutest Occurrences. By this means, and the Probability, that he might hear of them, and their Proceedings, from his Friends, Acquaintance, and Relations, who might fall in with them, or at whose Scats they might sometimes be entertain'd, they would have a greater Regard to their Conduct; and so much the more, if the young Gentleman were to keep an Account of his Expences, which, upon his Return, he might lay before his Father.

By feeing thus the different Customs, Manners, and Occonomy of different Persons and Families,

(for in fo mix'd a Nation as ours is, there is as great a Variety of that fort to be met with, as in most) and from their different Treatment at their feveral Stages. a great deal of the World may be learned by the young Gentleman. He would be prepared to go abroad with more Delight to himself, as well as more Experience, and greater Reputation to his Family and Country. In fuch Excursions as these, the Tutor would fee the Temper and Inclination of the young Gentleman, and might give proper Notices to the Father, if any thing was amis, that it might be set right, while the Youth was yet in his Reach, and more under his Inspection, than he would be in a foreign Country: And the Observations the young Gentleman would make at his Return, as well as in his Letters, would shew how fit he was to be trusted, and how likely to improve, when at a greater Distance.

After England and Wales, as well the inland Parts, as the Sea coasts, let them, if they behave according to Expectation, take a Journey into Scotland and Ireland, and visit the principal Islands, as Guernfey, Fersey, &c. the young Gentleman continuing to write down his Observations all the way, and keeping a Journal of Occurrences: And let him employ the little Time he will be on board of Ship, in these small Trips from Island to Island, or Coastwise, in observing upon the noble Art of Navigation; of the Theory of which, it will not be amis that he has some Notion, as well as of the curious Structure of a Ship, its Tackle, and Furniture: A Knowledge very far from being infignificant to a Gentleman who is an Islander, and has a Stake in the greatest maritime Kingdom in the World; and hence he will be taught to love and value that most useful and brave Set of Men, the British Sailors, who are the natural Defence and Glory of the Realm.

Hereby he will confirm his Theory of the Geography of the British Dominions in Europe: He will be appris'd of the Situation, Conveniencies, Interests, and Constitution of his own Country; and will be able to lay a Ground-work for the suture Government of his Thoughts and Actions, if the Interest he bears in his native Country should call him to the publick Service in either House of Parliament.

With this Foundation, how excellently would he be qualify'd to go abroad? And how properly then would he add to the Knowledge he had attain'd of his own Country, that of the different Customs, Manners, and Forms of Government of others? How would he be able to form Comparisons, and to make all his Inquiries appear pertinent and manly? All the Occasions of that ignorant Wonder, which renders a Novice the Jest of all about him, would be taken away. He would be able to ask Questions, and to judge without Leading-strings. Nor would he think he has feen a Country, and answer'd the Ends of his Father's Expence, and his own Improvement, by running through a Kingdom, and knowing nothing of it, but the Inns and Stages, at which he stopp'd to eat and drink. For, on the contrary, he would make the best Acquaintance, and contract worthy Friendships with such as would court and reverence him as one of the rifing Genius's of his Country.

1

e

e

n

1

d

e

Whereas most of the young Gentlemen, who are sent abroad raw and unprepared, as if to wonder at every thing they see, and to be laugh'd at by all that see them, do but expose themselves, and their Country. And if at their Return, by Interest of Friends, by Alliances, or Marriages, they should happen to be promoted to Places of Honour or Prosit, their unmerited Preferment will only serve to make those Foreigners, who were Eye-witnesses of their Weakness and Follies, when among them, conclude greatly in disfavour of the whole Nation, or, at least, of

the

the Prince, and his Administration, who could find

no fitter Subjects to diftinguish.

This, my dear Friend, is a brief Extract from my Observations on the Head of qualifying young Gentlemen to travel with Honour and Improvement. I doubt you'll be apt to think me not a little out of my Element; but fince you would have it, I claim the Allowances of a Friend; to which my ready Compliance with your Commands the rather intitles me.

I am very forry Mr. and Mrs. Murray are so unhappy in each other. Were he a generous Man, the heavy Loss the poor Lady has sustained, as well as her Sister, my beloved Friend, in so excellent a Mother, and so kind a Father, would make him bear

with her Infirmities a little.

But, really, I have seen on twenty Occasions, that, notwithstanding all the fine things Gentlemen say to Ladies before Marriage, if the latter do not improve upon their Husbands Hands, their imputed Graces, when single, will not protect them from Indifference, and, probably, from worse; while the Gentleman, perhaps, thinks he only, of the two, is intitled to go backward in Acts of Kindness and Complaisance. A strange and shocking Difference, which too many Ladies experience, who, from fond Lovers, prostrate at their Feet, find surly Husbands, trampling upon their Necks!

You, my dear Friend, were happy in your Days of Courtship, and are no less so in your State of Wedlock. And may you continue to be so to a

good old Age, prays

Your affectionate and faithful Friend,

P. B.

LETTER LX.

My dear Lady G.

I

1

a

,

n

t

n

es

d

d

5,

S

of

a

I WILL cheerfully cause to be transcribed for you the Conversation you desire, between myself, Mrs. Towers, and Lady Arthur, and the three young Ladies their Relations, in Presence of the Dean and his Daughter, and Mrs. Brooks; and glad I shall be, if it may be of Use to the two thoughtless Misses your Neighbours; who, you are pleased to tell me, are great Admirers of my Story, and my Example; and will therefore, as you say, pay greater Attention to what I write, than to the more passionate and interested Lessons of their Mamma.

I am only forry, that you should have been under any Concern about the supposed Trouble you give me, by having missaid my former Relation of it. For, besides obliging my dear Lady G. the Hope that I may be able to do Service by it to a Family so worthy, in a Case so nearly affecting its Honour, as to make two headstrong young Ladies recollect what belongs to their Sex and their Characters, and what their filial Duties require of them, affords me high Pleasure; and if it shall be attended with the wish'd Effects, it will be an Addition to my Happiness.

I faid, cause to be transcribed; because I hope to answer a double End by it; for, after I had re-consider'd it, I set Miss Goodwin to transcribe it, who writes a very pretty Hand, and is not a little fond of the Task, nor, indeed, of any Task I set her; and will be more affected as she performs it, than she could be by reading it only; although she is a very good Girl at present, and gives me Hopes, that she will continue to be so.

As foon as it is done, I will inclose it, that it may be read to the Parties without this Introduction, if

you

you think fit. And you will forgive me for having added a few Observations to this Transcription, with a View to the Cases of your inconsiderate young Ladies, and for having corrected the former Narrative in several Places.

My dear Lady G.

THE Papers you have missaid, relating to the Conversation between me and the young Ladies, Relations of Mrs. Towers, and Lady Anne Arthur, in Presence of these two last-named Ladies, Mrs. Brooks, and the worthy Dean, and Miss L. (of which, in order to perfect your kind Collection of iny Communications, you request another Copy) contained as follows:

I first began with apprising you, that I had seen these three Ladies twice or thrice before, as Visitors, at their Kinswomens Houses; so that they and I were not altogether Strangers to one another: And my two Neighbours acquainted me with their respective Tastes and Dispositions, and gave me their Histories, preparatory to this Visit, to the following Effect:

That Miss STAPYLTON is over-run with the
 Love of Poetry and Romance, and delights much
 in flowery Language, and metaphorical Flourishes:

Is about eighteen, wants not either Sense or Politeness; and has read herself into a Vein, that is

more amorous (that was Mrs. Towers's Word)

than discreet. Has extraordinary Notions of a First-Sight Love; and gives herself greater Liber-

ties, with a Pair of fine Eyes, (in hopes to make fudden Conquests in pursuance of that Notion)

than is pretty in her Sex and Age; which makes

those who know her not, conclude her bold and

forward; and is more than suspected, with a Mind

thus prepared for instantaneous Impressions, to have experienced the Argument to her own Disadvan-

f tage, and to be firuck by (before the has firicken) a

Gentleman, whom her Friends think not at all

worthy of her, and to whom she was making some indiscreet Advances, under the Name of Philo-

clea to Philoxenus, in a Letter which she in-

trusted to a Servant of the Family, who, discover-

ing her Defign, prevented her Indifcretion for that

· Time.

f

)

n

,

I

d

:

ne

h

s:

0-

is

d)

1-

ke

n)

es

nd

nd

ve

n-

) a

le-

'That, in other Respects, she has no mean Accomplishments, will have a fine Fortune, is gen-

teel in her Person, tho' with some visible Affecta-

tion, dances well, fings well, and plays prettily on

feveral Instruments; is fond of reading, but affects

the Action, and Air, and Attitude, of a Tragedian;

and is too apt to give an Emphasis in the wrong

Place, in order to make an Author mean more fig-

inificantly than it is necessary he should, even where

the Occasion is common, and in a mere historical

· Fact, that requires as much Simplicity in the

· Reader's Accent, as in the Writer's Style. No

Wonder then, that when she reads a Play, she will

oput herself into a Sweat, as Mrs. Towers says; dis-

torting very agreeable Features, and making a Mul-

titude of wry Mouths, with one very pretty one, in

order to convince her Hearers, what a near Neigh-

bour her Heart is to her Lips.

· Miss Cope is a young Lady of nineteen, lovely

in her Person, with a handsome Fortune in Pos-

' fession, and great Prospects. Has a soft and gentle

· Turn of Mind, which disposes her to be easily

' imposed upon. Is address'd by a Libertine of

· Quality, whose Courtship, while permitted, was

Imperiousness; and whose Tenderness, Insult;

having found the young Lady too susceptible of

· Impression, open and unreserv'd, and even valuing

' him the more, as it feem'd, for treating her with

ungenerous Contempt; for that she was always

e making Excuses for Slights, Ill-manners, and

· even Rudeness, which no other young Lady would

forgive. That

384 P A M E L A; Or,

That this Facility on her Side, and this Insolence on his, and an over-free, and even indecent Degree of Ramping, as it is called, with her, which once

her Mamma surprised them in, made her Papa for-

bid bis Vilits, and ber receiving them.

That this, however, was so much to Miss Cope's Regret, that she was detected in a Design to elope

to him out of the private Garden-door; which, had she effected, in all probability, the indelicate

and dishonourable Peer would have triumph'd over

her Innocence; having given out fince, that he intended to revenge himself on the Daughter, for

the Difgrace he had receiv'd from the Parents.
That tho' she was convinc'd of this, 'twas fear'd

he still lov'd him, and would throw herself in his

way the first convenient Opportunity; urging, that his rash Expressions were the Effect only of his

• Paffion; for that the knows he loves her too well

to be dishonourable to her: And by the same De-

gree of favourable Prepoflession, the will have it,
 that his brutal Roughness, is the Manliness of his

Nature; that his most shocking Expressions, are

Sincerity of Heart; that his Boasts of his former

· Lewdness, are but Instances that he knows the

World; that his Freedoms with her Person, are

but Excess of Love, and innocent Gaiety of Tem-

· per; that his refenting the Prohibition he has met

with, and his Threats, are other Instances of his

· Love and his Courage: And Peers of the Realm

ought not to be bound down by little narrow

· Rules, like the Vulgar; for, truly, their Honour,

which is regarded in the greatest Cases, as equal

with the Oath of a common Gentleman, is a Se-

curity that a Lady may trust to, if he is not a

* Profligate indeed; and that Lord P. cannot be.

That excepting these Weaknesses, Miss has many

good Qualities; is charitable, pious, humane, hum ble; fings sweetly, plays on the Spinnet charmingly;

is meek, fearful, and never was refolute or courae geous enough to step out of the regular Path, till

her too flexible Heart became touched with a Paf-

fion, that is faid to polish the most brutal Temoper, and therefore her rough Peer has none of it;

and to animate the Dove, of which Miss Cope has

too much.

· That Miss SUTTON, a young Lady of the like Age with the two former, has too lively and airy ' a Turn of Mind; affects to be thought well read ' in the Histories of Kingdoms, as well as in polite Literature. Speaks French fluently, talks much ' upon all Subjects; and has a great deal of that · flippant Wit, which makes more enemies than Friends. However, is innocent, and unsuspectedly ' virtuous hitherto; but makes herself cheap and accessible to Fops and Rakes, and has not the worse Opinion of a Man for being fuch. Liftens eagerly to Stories told to the Difadvantage of Individuals of her own Sex; though affecting to be a great Stickler for the Honour of the Sex in general: Will unpityingly propagate fuch Stories: Thinks ' (without confidering to what the Imprudence of her own Conduct may subject her) the Woman, · that flips, inexcufable; and the Man who seduces her, much less faulty: And by this means, encou-' rages the one Sex in their Vileness, and gives up the other for their Weakness, in a kind of filly

· Affectation, to shew her Security in her own · Virtue; at the very time, that she is dancing upon

' the Edge of a Precipice, presumptuously inatten-

' tive to her own Danger.'

1

The worthy Dean, knowing the Ladies Intention in this Visit to me, brought his Daughter with him, as if by Accident: For Miss L. with many good Qualities, is of a remarkably foft Temper, tho' not so inconsiderately soft as Miss Cope: But is too cre-Vol. IV.

dulous; and, as her Papa suspects, entertains more than a liking to a wild young Gentleman, the Heir to a noble Fortune, who makes Visits to her, sull of Tenderness and Respect, but without declaring himself. This gives the Dean a good deal of Uneasiness, and he is very desirous that his Daughter should be in my Company on all Occasions; as she is so kind to profess a great Regard to my Opinion

and Judgment.

'Tis easy to see the poor young Lady is in love; and she makes no doubt that the young Gentleman loves her: But, alas! why then (for he is not a bashful Man, as you shall hear) does he not say so?—He has deceived already two young Creatures. His Father has cautioned the Dean against his Son. Has told him, that he is sly, subtle, full of Stratagem, yet has so much command of himself, (which makes him more dangerous) as not to precipitate his Designs; but can wait with Patience, till he thinks himself secure of his Prey, and then pulls off the Mask at once; and, if he succeeds, glories in his Villainy.

Yet does the Father beg of the Dean to permit his Visits; for he would be glad he would marry Miss I.. tho' greatly unequal in Fortune to his Son; wishing for nothing so much, as that he would marry. And the Dean, owing his principal Preferment to the old Gentleman, cares not to disoblige him, or affront his Son, without some apparent Reason for it, especially as the Father is wrapt up in him, having no other Child, and being himself half afraid of him, lest, if too much thwarted, he should sty out intirely.

So here, Madam, are four young Ladies of like Years, and different Inclinations and Tempers, all of whom may be faid to have Dangers to encounter, refulting from their respective Dispositions: And who, professing to admire my Character, and the Example I had set, were brought to me, to be benefited,

refer

nefited, as Mrs. Towers was pleased to say, by my Conversation: And all was to be as if accidental, none of them knowing how well I was acquainted with their several Characters.

How proud, my dear Lady G. would this Compliment have made me, from fuch a Lady as Mrs. Towers, had I not been as proud as proud could be before, of the good Opinion of four beloved Persons, Mr. B. Lady Davers, the Countess of C. and your dear Self!

We were attended only by Polly Barlow, who was as much concern'd as any body, in some of the And as you know this Points that came before us. was in the Time of the Vifit paid us by Lord and Lady Davers, and that noble Countess, 'tis proper to fay, they were abroad together upon a Visit, from which, knowing how I was to be engaged, they excused me.

The Dean was well known to, and valued by, all the Ladies; and therefore was no manner of Restraint upon the Freedom of our Conversation.

I was above in my Closet when they came; and Mrs. Towers, having presented each young Lady to me when I came down, faid, being all feated, I can guess at your Employment, Mrs. B. - Writing, I dare fay? I have often with'd to have you for a Correspondent; for every one who can boast of that Favour, exalts you to the Skies, and fays, your Letters exceed your Conversation; but I always infifted upon it, that that was impossible.

S

S

e

0

,

y .

e

11

nd

ne

e-

d,

Mrs. Towers, faid I, is always faying the most obliging things in the World of her Neighbours: But may not one suffer, dear Madam, for these kind Prepoffessions, in the Opinion of greater Strangers, who will judge more impartially than your Favour will permit you to do?

That, faid Lady Arthur, will be so soon put out of doubt, when Mrs. B. begins to speak, that we will S 2

refer to that, and so put an end to every thing that looks like Compliment.

But, Mrs. B. said Mrs. Towers, may one ask, What particular Subject was at this Time your

Employment?

I had been writing, (you must know, Lady G.) for the fake of fuiting Miss Stapylton's flighty Vein, a little Sketch of the Style she is so fond of; and hoped for some such Opportunity as this Question gave me, to bring it on the Carpet; for my only Fear, with her and Miss Cope, and Miss Sutton, was, that they would deem me too grave; and fo what should fall in the Course of Conversation, would make the less Impression upon them. For even the best Instructions in the World, you know, will be ineffectual, if the Method of conveying them is not adapted to the Taste and Temper of the Person you would wish to influence. And, moreover, I had a View in it, to make this little Sketch the Introduction to a future Occasion for some Observations on the stiff and affected Style of Romances, which might put Miss Stapylton out of conceit with them, and make her turn the Course of her Studies another way: as I shall mention in its Place.

I answer'd, That I had been meditating upon the Missortune of a fine young Lady, who had been seduced and betrayed by a Gentleman she loved; and who, notwithstanding, had the Grace to stop short, (indeed, later than were to be wished) and to abandon Friends, Country, Lover, in order to avoid any further Intercourse with him; and that God had blessed her Penitence and Resolution, and she was now very happy in a neighbouring Domi-

nion.

A fine Subject! said Miss Stapylton.—Was the Gentleman a Man of Wit, Madam? Was the Lady a Woman of Taste?

The Gentleman, Madam, was all that was defirable in Man, had he been virtuous: The Lady, all that was excellent in Woman, had she been more circumspect. But it was a first Love on both Sides; and little did she think he could have taken Advantage of her Innocence and her Affection for him.

A fad, fad Story! faid Miss Cope: But, pray, Madam, did their Friends approve of their Visits? For Danger sometimes, as I have heard, arises from the Cruelty of Friends, who force Lovers upon private and clandestine Meetings; when, perhaps there can be no material Objection, why the Gentleman and Lady may not come together.

Well observ'd, Miss Cope, thought I! How we are for making every Case applicable to our own,

when our Hearts are fixed upon a Point?

It cannot be called Cruelty in Friends, Madam, faid I, when their Cautions, or even Prohibitions, are fo well justify'd by the Event, as in this Case—and, generally, by the wicked Arts and Practices of Seducers. And how happy is it for a Lady, when she suffers herself to be convinc'd, that those who have lived forty Years in the World, may know twice as much, at least, of that World, as she can possibly know at twenty, ten of which moreover are almost a Blank! If they do not, the one must be supposed very ignorant; the other, very knowing.

But, Madam, the Lady, whose hard Case I was considering, bop'd too much, and fear'd too little; that was her Fault; which made her give Opportunities to the Gentleman, which neither Liberty nor Restraint could justify in her. She had not the Discretion, poor Lady! in this one great Point of all, that the Ladies I have in my Eye, I dare say,

would have had in her Cafe.

I beg Pardon, said Miss Cope, and blush'd. I know not the Case, and ought to have been silent.

Ay, thought I, so you would, had not you thought yourself more affected by it, than it were to be wish'd

you were.

I think, said Miss Sutton, the Lady was the less to be pity'd, as she must know what her Character requir'd of her; and that men will generally deceive when they are trusted. There are very sew of them, who pretend to be virtuous; and it is allow'd to be their Privilege to ask, as it is the Lady's to deny.

So, Madam, reply'd I, you are supposing a continual State of Warfare between the two Sexes; one offensive, the other defensive: And, indeed, I think the Notion not altogether amiss; for a Lady will assuredly be less in Danger, where she rather fears an Enemy in the Acquaintance she has of that Sex, than bopes a Friend; especially as so much depends upon the Issue, either of her Doubt, or of her Considence.

I don't know neither, Madam, return'd Miss Sutton, very briskly, whether the Men should be set out to us as such Bugbears, as our Mothers generally represent them. It is making them too considerable; and is a kind of Reslection upon the Discretion and Virtue of our Sex, and supposes us weak indeed.

The late Czar, I have read, continued she, took a better Method with the Swedes, who had often beat him; when, after a great Victory, he made his Captives march in Procession thro' the Streets of his principal City, to familiarize them to the Russes, and

shew them they were but Men.

Very well observ'd, reply'd I: But then, did you not say, that this was thought necessary to be done, because the Russes had been often defeated by the Swedes, and thought too highly of them; and when the Swedes, taking advantage of that Prepossession, had the greater Contempt of the Russes?

She looked a little disconcerted; and being filent,

I proceeded:

d

O

e

e

I am very far, Madam, from thinking the Generality of Men very formidable, if our Sex do Justice to themselves, and to what their Characters require of them. Nevertheless, give me leave to say, that the Men I thought contemptible, I would not think worthy of my Company, nor give it to them, when I could avoid it. And as for those, who are more to be regarded, I am afraid, that when they can be affured, that a Lady allows it to be their Privilege to fue for Favours, it will certainly embolden them to folicit, and to think themselves acting in Character when they put the Lady upon hers, to refuse them, And yet I am humbly of Opinion with the Poet;

He comes too near, who comes to be deny'd.

For these Reasons, Madam, I was pleased with your Notion, that it would be best to look upon that Sex, especially if we allow them the Privilege you speak of, in an hostile Light.

But permit me to observe, with regard to the most contemptible of the Species, Fops, Coxcombs, and pretty Fellows, that many a good General has been defeated, when, trufting to his great Strength and Skill, he has despis'd a truly weak Enemy.

I believe, Madam, return'd she, your Observation is very just. I have read of such Instances. But, dear Madam, permit me to ask, Whether we speak not too generally, when we condemn every Man who dresses well, and is not a Sloven, as a Fop or a Coxcomb?

No doubt, we do, when this is the Case. But permit me to observe, that you hardly ever in your Life, saw a Man who was very nice about his. Person and Dress, that had any thing he thought of greater Consequence to himself to regard. natural it should be so; for should not the Man of Body take the greatest Care to set out and adorn, the

the Part for which he thinks himself most valuable? And will not the Man of Mind bestow his principal Care in improving that Mind? perhaps, to the Neglect of Drefs, and outward Appearance, which is a Fault. But furely, Madam, there is a Middle-way to be observed, in these, as in most other Cases; for a Man need not be a Sloven, any more than a Fop. He need not shew an utter Disregard to Dress, nor yet think it his first and chief Concern; be ready to quarrel with the Wind for discomposing his Peruque, or fear to put on his Hat, lest he should depress his Foretop; more dislike a Spot upon his Clothes, than in his Reputation: Be a Self-admirer, and always at the Glass, which he would perhaps never look into, could it shew him the Deformity of his Mind, as well as the Finery of his Person: - Who has a Taylor for his Tutor, and a Milliner for his School-mistress: Who laughs at Men of Sense (excusably enough, perhaps in revenge because they laugh at him:) Who calls Learning Pedantry; and looks upon the Knowledge of the Fashions, as the only useful Science to a fine Gentleman.

Pardon me, Ladies: I could proceed with the Character of this Species of Men; but I need not; because every Lady present, I am sure, would despise such a one, as much as I do, were he to fall in her way: And the rather, because it is certain, that he who admires himself, will never admire his Lady as he ought; and if he maintains his Niceness after Marriage, it will be with a Presence to his own Person: If not, will sink, very probably into the worst of Slovens. For whoever is capable of one Extreme, (take almost all the Cases in human Life through) when he recedes from that, if he be not a Man of Prudence, will go over into the other.

But to return to the former Subject, (for the general Attention encouraged me to proceed) permit me, Miss Sutton, to add, that a Lady must run

great Risques to her Reputation, if not to her Virtue, who will admit into her Company any Gentleman, who shall be of Opinion, and know it to be hers, that it is his Province to ask a Favour, which it will be her Duty to deny.

I believe, Madam, I spoke these Words a little too carelessly: But I meant honourable Questions, to be

fure.

There can be but one honourable Question, reply'd I; and that is feldom ask'd, but when the Affair is brought near a Conclusion, and there is a Probability of its being granted; and which a fingle Lady, while she has Parents or Guardians, should never think of permitting to be put to herself, much less of approving, nor, perhaps, as the Case may be, of denying. But I make no doubt, Madam, that you meant honourable Questions. A young Lady of Miss Sutton's good Sense, and worthy Character, could not mean otherwise. And I have said, perhaps, more than I needed to fay, upon this Subject, because we all know how ready the presuming of the other Sex are, right or wrong, to construe the most innocent Meanings in favour of their own Views.

Very true, said she; but appeared to be under an agreeable Confusion, every Lady, by her Eye, seeming to think she had met with a deserved Rebuke; and which not seeming to expect, it abated her Liveliness all the Time after.

Mrs. Towers seasonably reliev'd us both from a Subject too applicable, if I may so express it, saying, But, dear Mrs. B. will you savour us with the Result of your Meditation, if you have committed it to Writing, on the unhappy Case you mention'd?

I was rather, Madam, exercising my Fancy than my Judgment, such as it is, upon the Occasion. I was aiming at a kind of allegorical or metaphorical S 5

394 PAMELA; Or,

Style, I know not which to call it; and it is not at to be read before such Judges, I doubt.

O pray, dear Madam, said Miss Stapylton, favour us with it to choose; for I am a great Admirer of that Style.

I have a great Curiofity, said Lady Arthur, both from the Subject and the Style, to hear what you have

written: And I beg you will oblige us all.

It is short and unfinish'd. It was written for the sake of a Friend, who is fond of such a Style; and what I shall add to it, will be principally some slight Observations upon this Way of Writing. But, let it be ever so censurable, I should be more so, if I made any Difficulties after such an unanimous Request. So, taking it out of my Letter-case, I read as sollows:

While the Banks of Discretion keep the proud Waves of Passion within their natural Channel, all calm and serene, glides along the silver Current, enlivening the adjacent Meadows, as it passes, with a brighter and more flow'ry Verdure. But if the 44 Torrents of sensual Love are permitted to descend 46 from the Hills of credulous Hope, they may fo swell the gentle Stream, as to make it difficult, if not impossible, to be retain'd betwixt its usual Bounds. What then will be the Confequence? - Why, the Trees of Resolution, and the Shrubs of Cautious Fear, which grew upon the frail Mound, and whose intertwining Roots had contributed to support it, being loofen'd from their Hold, they, and all that would fwim of the Bank itself, will be feen floating on the Surface of the triumphant Waters. "But here, a dear Lady, having unhappily failed, si is enabled to fet her Foot in the new made Breach,

while yet it is possible to stop it, and to say, with it little Variation, in the Language of that Power, which

which only could enable her to fay it, Hither, ye

proud Waves of dissolute Love, although you HAVE come, yet no further SHALL ye come; is such an

46 Instance of magnanimous Resolution and Self-

conquest, as is very rarely to be met with."

Miss Stapylton seem'd pleas'd (as I expected) with what I read, and told me, that she should take it for a high Favour, if I would permit her, if it were not improper, to see the whole Letter, when I had finish'd it.

I faid, I would oblige her with all my Heart, But you must not expect, Madam, that altho' I have written what I have read to you, I shall approve of it in my Observations upon it; for I am convinc'd, that no Style can be proper, which is not plain, simple, easy, natural, and unaffected.

She was fure, she was pleas'd to say, that whatever my Observations were, they would be equally

just and instructive.

I too, said the Dean, will answer for that; for I dare say, by what I have already heard, that Mrs. B. will distinguish properly between the Style, (and the Matter too,) which captivates the Imagination,

and that which informs the Judgment.

Our Conversation, after this, took a more general Turn, as to the Air of it, if I may say so; which I thought right, lest the young Ladies should imagine it was a designed thing against them: But yet it was such, that every one of them sound her Character and Taste, little or much, concern'd in it; and all seem'd, as Mrs. Towers afterwards observ'd to me, by their Silence and Attention, to be busy'd in private Applications.

The Dean began it, with a high Compliment to me; having a View, no doubt, by his kind Praises, to make my Observations have the greater Weight upon the young Ladies. He was pleas'd to say, S 6

that it was Matter of great Surprise to him, that, my tender Years consider'd, I should be capable of making those Resections, by which Persons of twice my Age and Experience might be instructed. You see, Madam, said he, how attentive we all are, when your Lips begin to open; and I beg we may

have nothing to do, but to be attentive.

I have had fuch Advantages, Sir, reply'd I, from the Observations and Cautions of my late excellent Lady, that did you but know half of them, you would rather wonder I had made no greater Improvement, than that I have made so much. She used to think me pretty, and not ill-temper'd, and, of courfe, not incredulous, where I conceiv'd a good Opinion; and was always arming me on that Side, as believing I might be the Object of wicked Attempts, and the rather, as my low Fortune subjected me to Danger. For, had I been born to Rank and Condition, as these young Ladies here, I should have had Reason to think of myfelf, as justly, as, no doubt, they do, and, of consequence, beyond the Reach of any vile Intriguer; as I should have been above the greatest Part of that Species of Mankind, who, for want of Understanding, or Honour, or through pernicious Habits, give themselves up to Libertinism.

These were great Advantages, no doubt, said Miss Sutton; but in you, they met with a surprising Genius, 'tis very plain, Madam; and there is not, in my Opinion, a Lady in England of your Years, who would have improved by them, as you have

done.

I answer'd, That I was much oblig'd to her for ther good Opinion: And that I had always observ'd, that the Person who admir'd any good Qualities in another, gave a kind of natural Demonstration, that the had the same in an eminent Degree herself, altho', perhaps, her modest Dissidence would not permit her to trace the generous Principle to its Source.

The

The Dean, in order to bring us back again to the Subject of Credulity, repeated my Remark, that it was faser, in Cases where so much depended upon the Issue, as a Lady's Honour and Reputation, to fear an Enemy, than to hope a Friend; and praised my Observation, that even a weak Enemy is not to be too

much despised.

I faid, I had very high Notions of the Honour the Value of my own Sex, and very mean ones of the gay and frothy Part of the other; infomuch that I thought they could have no Strength, but what was founded in our Weakness: That, indeed, the Difference of Education must give Men Advantages. even where the Genius is naturally equal; That, befides, they have generally more Hardness of Heart, which makes Women, where they meet not with Men of Honour, to engage with that Sex upon very unequal Terms; for that it is so customary with them to make Vows and Promises, and to set light by them, when made, that an innocent Lady cannot guard too watchfully against them; and, in my Opinion, should believe nothing they said, or even vow'd, but what carry'd Demonstration with it.

I remember, continu'd I, my Lady used often to observe, That there is a Time of Life in all young Persons, which may properly be called, The Romantick, which is a very dangerous Period, and requires therefore a great Guard of Prudence: That the Risque is not a little augmented by reading Novels and Romances; and that the Poetical Tribe have much to answer for on this Head, by reason of their heighten'd and inflaming Descriptions, which do much Hurt to thoughtless Minds, and lively Imaginations. For to those, she would have it, are principally owing, the Rashness and Indiscretion of soft and tender Dispositions; which, in Breach of their Duty, and even to the Disgrace of their Sex, too frequently set them upon Enterprises, like those

they have read in those pernicious Writings, which not seldom make them fall a Sacrifice to the base Defigns of some vile Intriguer; and even in Cases where their Precipitation ends the best, that is to fav. in Marriage, they too frequently (in direct Opposition to the Cautions and Commands of their tried, their experienc'd, and unquestionable Friends) throw themselves upon an almost Stranger, who, had he been worthy of them, would not, nor needed to have taken indirect Methods to obtain their Favour.

And the Misfortune is, continu'd I, the most innocent are generally the most credulous. Lady would do no Harm to others herself, and cannot think others would do her any. And with regard to the particular Person who has obtain'd, perhaps, a Share in her Confidence, he cannot, furely, she thinks, be fo ingrateful, as to return irreparable Mifchief for her Good-will to him. Were all the Men in the World, besides, to prove false, the beloved Perfon cannot. 'Twould be unjust to her own Merit, as well as to his Views, to suppose it: And so Design on his Side, and Credulity and Self-opinion on the Lady's, at last inroll the unhappy Believer in the List of the too-late Repenters.

And what, Madam, faid the Dean, has not that Wretch to answer for, who makes sport of destroying a virtuous Character, and in being the wicked Means of throwing, perhaps, upon the Town, and into the Dregs of Prostitution, a poor Creature, whose Love for him, and Confidence in him, was all her Crime? and who otherwise might have made a worthy Figure at the Head of some reputable Family, and so have been an useful Member of the Commonwealth, propagating good Examples, instead of Ruin and Infamy, to Mankind? To fay nothing of, what is still worse, the dreadful Crime of occasioning the Loss of a Soul; fince final Impenitence too generally follows follows the first Sacrifice which the poor Wretch is seduced to make of her Honour?

There are several Gentlemen in our Neighbour-hood, said Mrs. Brooks, who might be benefited by this touching Resection, if it was represented in the same strong Lights from the Pulpit. And permit me to say, Mr. Dean, that I think you should give us a Sermon upon this Subject, for the sake of both Sexes, one for Caution, the other for Conviction.

I will think of it, reply'd he. But I am forry to fay, that we have too many among our younger Gentry who would think themselves pointed at, were

I to touch this Subject ever so cautiously.

I am sure, said Mrs. Towers, there cannot well be a more useful one; and the very Reason the Dean

gives, is a convincing Proof of it to me.

When I have had the Pleasure of hearing the further Sentiments of such an Assembly as this, upon the delicate Subject, reply'd this polite Divine, I shall be better enabled to treat it. And, pray, Ladies, proceed; for it is from your Conversation that I must take my Hints.

You have nothing to do then, faid Mrs. Towers, but to engage Mrs. B. to speak; and you may be sure, we will all be as attentive to her, as we shall be to you, when we shall have the Pleasure to hear so fine a Genius improving upon her Hints, from

the Pulpit.

I bow'd (as the Dean did) to Mrs. Towers; and knowing that she praised me, with the Dean's View, in order to induce the young Ladies to give the greater Attention to what she wished I should speak, I said, It would be a great Presumption in me, after so high a Compliment, to open my Lips: Nevertheless, as I was sure, by speaking, I should have the Benefit of Instruction, whenever it made them speak, I would not be backward to enter upon any Subject; for that I should consider myself as a young Counsel, in some great

great Cause, who served but to open it, and prepare the Way for those of greater Skill and Abilities.

open the Cause, be the Subject what it will. And I could almost wish, that we had as many Gentlemen hereas Ladies, who would have reason to be asham'd of the Liberties they take in censuring the Conversations of the Tea-table; since the Pulpit, as the worthy Dean gives us Reason to hope, may be beholden to that of Mrs. B.

Nor is it much Wonder, reply'd I, when the Dean himself is with us, and it is graced by so dis-

tinguish'd a Circle.

If many of our young Gentlemen were here, faid Mrs. Towers, they might improve themselves in all the Graces of polite and sincere Complaisance. But, compared to this, I have generally heard such trite and coarse Stuff from our Race of Would-be-wits, that what they say, may be compared to the Fawnings and Salutations of the Ass in the Fable, who emulating the Lap-dog, merited a Cudgel rather than Encouragement.

But, Mrs. B. continued she, begin, I pray you, to open and praceed in the Cause; for there will be no

Counsel employed but you, I can tell you.

Then give me a Subject that will suit me, Ladies, and you shall see how my Obedience to your Com-

mands will make me run on.

Will you, Madam, faid Miss Stapylton, give us a few Cautions and Instructions on a Theme of your own, That a young Lady should rather fear too much, than bope too much? A necessary Doctrine perhaps; but a difficult one to be practised by one who has begun to love, and who supposes all Truth and Honour in the Object of her Favour.

Hope, Madam, said I, in my Opinion, should newer be unaccompany'd by Fear; and the more Reason

will

will a Lady ever have to fear, and to suspect herself, and doubt her Lover, when she once begins to find in her own Breast an Inclination to him. For then her Danger is doubted, since she has herself (perhaps, the more dangerous Enemy of the two) to guard

against, as well as him.

She may secretly wish the best indeed; but what has been the Fate of others, may be her own; and tho' she thinks it not probable, from such a faithful Protester, as he appears to her to be, yet while it is possible, she should never be off her Guard: Nor will a prudent Woman trust to his Mercy or Honour, but to her own Discretion; and the rather, because, if he mean well, he himself will value her the more for her Caution, since every Man desires to have a virtuous and prudent Wise; if not well, she will detect him the sooner; and so, by her Prudence, frustrate all his base Designs.

The Ladies feeming, by their Silence, to approve

what I faid, I proceeded.

But let me, my dear Ladies, ask, What that Passion is, which generally we dignify by the Name of Love; and which, when so dignify'd, puts us upon a thousand Extravagancies? I believe, if it were to be examin'd into, it would be found too generally to owe its Original to ungovern'd Fancy; and were we to judge of it by the Consequences that usually attend it, it ought rather to be called Rashness, Inconsideration, Weakness; any thing but Love; for, very seldom, I doubt, is the solid fudgment so much concern'd in it, as the airy Fancy. But when once we dignify the wild Misleader with the Name of Love, all the Absurdities, which we read in Novels and Romances, take place, and we are induc'd to follow Examples that seldom end happily but in them.

But, permit me further to observe, that Love, as we call it, operates differently in the Two Sexes; as to its Effects. For in Woman it is a creeping Thing,

in Man an Incroacher; and this ought, in my humble Opinion, to be very seriously attended to. Miss Sutton intimated thus much, when she observed that it was the Man's Province to ask, the Lady's to deny:—Excuse me, Aladam, the Observation was just, as to the Men's Notions: altho', methinks, I would not have a Lady allow of it, except in Cases of Caution to themselves.

The Doubt, therefore, proceeded I, which a Lady has of her Lover's Honour, is needful to preserve her own, and his too. And if she does him Wrong, and he should be too just to deceive her, she can make him Amends, by Instances of greater Confidence, when she pleases. But if she has been accustom'd to grant him little Favours, can she easily recall them? and will not the Increacher grow upon her Indulgence, pleading for a Favour To-day, which was not refused him Yesterday, and reproaching her want of Confidence, as a want of Esteem; till the poor Lady, who, perhaps, has given way to this creeping, infinuating Passion, and has avow'd her Esteem for him, puts herself too much in his Power, in order to manifest, as she thinks, the Generosity of her Affection; and so, by degrees, is carry'd farther than the intended, or nice Honour ought to have permitted; and all because, to keep up to my Theme, she hopes too much, and doubts too little? And, permit me, Ladies, to add, That there have been Cases, where a Man himself, pursuing the Dictates of his increaching Paffion, and finding a Lady too conceding, has taken Advantages, of which probably, at first, he did not presume to think.

Miss Stapplian said, That Virtue itself spoke when I spoke; and she was resolved, when she came home, to recollect as much of this Conversation as she could, and write it down in her Common-place Book, where it would make a better Figure than any thing

the had there.

I suppose, Miss, said Mrs Towers, your chief Collections are Flowers of Rhetorick, pick'd up from the French and English Poets, and Novel-writers. I would give something for the Pleasure of having it two Hours in my Possession.

Fie, Madam, replied the, a little abath'd, How can you expose your Kinswoman thus, before the

Dean and Mrs. B.?

Mrs. Towers, Madam, faid I, only fays this to provoke you to shew your Collections. I wish I had the Pleasure of seeing them. I doubt not but your Com-

mon-place Book is a Store-house of Wisdom.

There is nothing bad in it, I hope, reply'd she'; but I would not, that Mrs. B. should see it, for the World. But, let me tell you, Madam, (to Mrs. Towers) there are many beautiful Things, and good Instructions, to be collected from Novels, and Plays, and Romances; and from the poetical Writers particularly, light as you are pleased to make of them. Pray, Madam, (to me) have you ever been at all conversant in such Writers?

Not a great deal in the former; there were very few Novels and Romances, that my Lady would permit me to read; and those I did, gave me no great Pleasure; for either they dealt so much in the Marvellous and Improbable, or were so unnaturally inflaming to the Paffions, and so full of Love and Intrigue, that hardly any of them but feem'd calculated to fire the Imagination, rather than to inform the Judgment. Tilts and Tournaments, breaking of Spears in Honour of a Mistress, swimming over Rivers, engaging with Monsters, rambling in search of Adventures, making unnatural Difficulties, in order to shew the Knight-Errant's Prowess in overcoming them, is all that is required to constitute the Hero in fuch Pieces. And what principally diffinguishes the Character of the Heroine, is, when she is taught to consider her Father's House as an inchanted Cattle,

and her Lover as the Hero who is to dissolve the Charm, and to set her at liberty from one Confinement, in order to put her into another, and, too probably, a worse: To instruct her how to climb Walls, drop from Windows, leap Precipices, and do twenty other extravagant Things, in order to shew the mad Strength of a Passion she ought to be asham'd of: To make Parents and Guardians pass for Tyrants, and the Voice of Reason to be drowned in that of indiscreet Love, which exalts the other Sex, and debases her own. And what is the Instruction, that can be gather'd from such Pieces, for the Conduct of common Life?

Then have I been ready to quarrel with these Writers for another Reason; and that is, The dangerous Notion which they hardly ever fail to propagate, of a First-sight Love. For there is such a Susceptibility supposed on both Sides, (which, however it may pass in a Man, very little becomes the Female Delicacy) that they are smitten with a Glance; the sictitious blind God is made a real Divinity: and too often Prudence and Discretion are the first Of-

ferings at his Shrine.

I believe, Madam, faid Miss Stapylton, blushing, and playing with her Fan, there have been many Instances of Peoples loving at first Sight, which have

ended very happily.

No doubt of it, reply'd I. But there are three Chances to one, that so precipitate a Liking does not. For where can be the Room for Caution, for Inquiry, for the Display of Merit and Sincerity, and even the Assurance of a grateful Return, to a Lady, who thus suffers herself to be preposses'd? Is it not a Random Shot? Is it not a Proof of Weakness? Is it not giving up the Negative Voice, which belongs to the Sex, even while she is not sure of meeting with the Assurance one from him whose Affection she wishes to engae?

Indeed,

Indeed, Ladies, continued I, I cannot help concluding, (and I am the less afraid of speaking my Mind, because of the Opinion I have of the Prudence of every Lady that hears me) that were this Weakness is found, it is no way favourable to a Lady's Character, nor to that Discretion which ought to distinguish it. It looks to me, as if a Lady's Heart were too much in the Power of her Eye, and that she had permitted her Fancy to be much more busy than her Judgment.

Miss Stapylton bluih'd, and look'd around her.

But I have generally observ'd, Mrs. B. said Mrs. Towers, that whenever you censure any Indiscretion, you seldom sail to give Cautions how to avoid it: And pray let us know what is to be done in this Case? That is to say, How a young Lady ought to guard against and overcome the first savourable Im-

preffions?

What I imagine, reply'd I, a young Lady ought to do, on any the least favourable Impressions of this kind, is immediately to withdraw into herself, as one may say; to reslect upon what she owes to her Parents, to her Family, to her Character, and to her Sex; and to resolve to check such a random Preposession, which may much more probably, as I hinted, make her a Prey to the Undeserving than otherwise, as there are so many of that Character to one Man of real Merit.

The most that I apprehend a First-sight Approbation can do, is to inspire a Liking; and a Liking is conquerable, if the Person will not brood over it, till she hatches it into Love. Then every Man and Woman has a black and a white Side; and it is easy to set the Impersections of the Person against the supposed Persections, while it is only a Liking. But if the busy Fancy be permitted to work as it pleases, uncheck'd, uncontroul'd, then, 'tis very likely, were the Lady but to keep herself in Countenance for re-

ceiving

ceiving first Impressions, she will see Persections in the Object, which no living Soul can see but herself. And it will hardly be expected, but that as a Consequence of her first Indiscretion, she will confirm, as an Act of her Judgment, what her wild and ungovern'd Fancy had missed her to think of with so much partial Favour. And too late, as it may probably happen, she will see and lament her satal, and, perhaps, undutiful Error.

We are talking of the Ladies only, added I (for I faw Miss Stapylton was become very grave:) But I believe first-fight Love often operates too powerfully in both Sexes: And where it does so, it will be very lucky, if either Gentleman or Lady find Reason, on cool Resection, to approve a Choice which they were

so ready to make without Thought.

'Tis allow'd, my dear Mrs. B. faid Mrs. Towers, that rash and precipitate Love may operate pretty much alike in the Rash and precipitate of both Sexes: and which-soever loves, generally exalts the Person beloved above his or her Merits: But I am desirous, for the sake of us Maiden Ladies, since it is a Science in which you are so great an Adept, to have your Advice, how we should watch and guard against its first Incroachments; and that you will tell us what you apprehend gives the Men most Advantage over us.

Nay, now, Mrs. Towers, you rally my Prefump-

tion indeed!

I admire you, Madam, reply'd she, and every thing you say and do; and I won't forgive you to call what I so seriously say and think, Raillery. For my own part, continued she, I never was in love yet, nor, I believe, were any of these young Ladies—(Miss Cope looked a little silly upon this—) And who can better instruct us to guard our Hearts, than a Lady who has so well defended her own?

Why

Why then, Madam, if I must speak, I think, what gives the other Sex the greatest Advantage, over even many of the most deserving of ours, is that dangerous Foible, the Love of Praise, and the Defire to be flattered and admir'd: A Passion that I have observed to predominate, more or less, from Sixteen to Sixty, in most of our Sex. We are too generally delighted with the Company of those who extol our Graces of Person or Mind; for, will not a grateful Lady study hard to return a few Compliments to a Gentleman, who makes her fo many? She is concerned to prove him a Man of diftinguishing Sense, or a polite Man, at least, in regard to what she thinks of herself; and fo the Flatterer shall be preferred to such of the Sincere and Worthy, as cannot fay what they do not And by this means many an excellent Lady

has fallen a Prey to some fordid Designer.

I

S

y

Then, I think, nothing gives Gentlemen fo much Advantage over our Sex, as to fee how readily a virtuous Lady can forgive the capital Faults of the most abandon'd of the other; and that fad, fad Notion, That a reform'd Rake makes the best Husband; a Notion that has done more Hurt, and Discredit too, to our Sex, (as it has given more Encouragement to the profligate, and more Discouragement to the sober Gentlemen) than can be easily imagin'd. A fine thing indeed! as if the Wretch, who had run thro' a Course of Iniquity, to the endangering of Soul and Body, was to be deem'd the best Companion for Life, to an innocent and virtuous young Lady, who is to owe the Kindness of his Treatment of her, to his having never before accompany'd with a modest Woman; nor, till his Interest on one Hand, (to which his Extravagance, perhaps, compels him to attend) and his impair'd Constitution on the other, oblige him to it, so much as wish'd to accompany with one; and who always made a Jest of the marry'd 408

ry'd State, and, perhaps of every thing either ferious or facred!

You observe very well, my dear Mrs. B. said Mrs. Towers; but People will be apt to think, that you have less Reason than any of our Sex, to be severe against the Notion you speak of: For who was a greater Rake than a certain Gentleman, and

who is a better Husband?

Madam, reply'd I, the Gentleman you mean, never was a common Town-Rake: He is a Man of Sense, and fine Understanding; and his Reformation, secondarily, as I may fay, has been the natural Effect of those extraordinary Qualities. But besides, Madam, I will presume to say, that that Gentleman, as he has not many Equals in the Nobleness of his Nature, fo is not likely, I doubt, to have many Followers, in a Reformation begun in the Bloom of Youth, upon Self-conviction, and altogether, humanly speaking, spontaneous. Those young Ladies, who would plead his Example, in support of this pernicious Notion, should find out the same generous Qualities in the Man, before they trust to it; and it will then do less Harm: tho' even then, I could not wish it to be generally entertained.

It is really unaccountable, faid Mrs. Towers, after all, as Mrs. B. I remember, faid on another Occafion, that our Sex should not as much insist upon Virtue and Sobriety, in the Character of a Man, as the Man, be he ever such a Rake, does in that of a Lady. And 'tis certainly a great Encouragement to Libertinism, that a Worn-out Debauchee shall think himself at any time good enough for a Husband, and have the Confidence to imagine, that a modest Woman will accept of his Address with a Preference of

him to any other,

I can account for it but one way, faid the Dean: And that is, that a modest Woman is apt to be diffident of her own Merit and Understanding, and she thinks this Diffidence an Imperfection. A Rake never is troubled with it: So he has in Perfection a Quality the thinks the wants; and, knowing too little of the World, imagines the mends the Matter by accept-

ing of one who knows too much.

That's well observ'd, Mr. Dean, said Mrs. Towers: But there is another Fault in our Sex, which Mrs. B. has not touch'd upon; and that is, the foolish Vanity some Women have, in the Hopes of reforming a wild Fellow; and that they shall be able to do more than any of their Sex before them could do: A Vanity that often costs them dear; as I know in more than one Instance.

Another Weakness, said I, might be produced against some of our Sex; who join too readily to droll upon, and fneer at, the Misfortune of any poor young Creature; who has shewn too little Regard for her Honour: And who (instead of speaking of it with Concern, and inveighing against the Seducer) too lightly fport with the unhappy Person's Fall; industriously spread the Knowledge of it - [I would not look upon Miss Sutton, while I fpoke this] — and avoid her, as one infected; and yet scruple not to admit into their Company the vile Aggressor; and even to smile with him, at his barbarous Jests, upon the poor Sufferer of their own Sex.

I have known three or four Instances of this in my Time, said Mrs. Towers, that Miss Sutton might not take it to herself; for she look'd down, and was a little ferious.

This, reply'd I, puts me in mind of a little humorous Copy of Verses, written, as I believe, by Mr, B. And which, to the very Purpose we are fpeaking of, he calls

VOL. IV.

ľ

1

S

a

0

k

d

)-

of

1: nt

of.

Benefit of making others Misfortunes our own.

Thou'st beard it, or read it, a Million of Times,
That Men are made up of Falseboods and Crimes:
Search all the old Authors, and ransack the new,
Thou'lt find in Love-Stories, searce one Mortal true.
Then why this complaining? And why this very Face?
Is it 'cause thou'rt affected most with thy own Case?
Hadst thou sooner made others Missortunes thy own,
Thou never, thyself, this Disaster hadst known;
Thy compassionate Caution had kept thee from Evil,
And thou mightst have desy'd Mankind and the Devil.

The Ladies were pleas'd with the Lines; but Mrs. Towers wanted to know, she said, at what Time of Mr. B.'s Life they could be written. Because, added she, I never suspected before, that the good Gentleman ever took pains to write Cautions or Exhortations to our Sex, to avoid the Delusions of his own.

These Verses, and this facetious, but severe, Remark of Mrs. Towers, made every young Lady look up with a cheerful Countenance; because it pushed the Ball from Self: And the Dean said to his Daughter, So, my Dear, you, that have been so attentive, must let us know what useful Inferences you can draw from what Mrs. B. and the other

Ladies have for excellently faid?

I observe or, said she, from the Faults the Ladies have so judy imputed to some of our Sex, that the Advantage the Gentlemen chiefly have over us, is from our own Weakness; and that it behoves a prudent Woman to guard against first Impressions of Favour, since she will think herself oblig'd, in compliment to her own Judgment, to find Reasons, if possible, to confirm them.

But I would be glad to know, Ladies, added she, if there be any way, that a Woman can judge, whether

ther a Man means honourably or not, in his Address to her?

Mrs. B. can best inform you of that, Miss L. said Mrs. Towers: What fay you, Mrs. B.?

There are a few Signs, answered I, easy to be known, and, I think, almost infallible.

Pray let's have 'em, faid Lady Arthur; and they

all were very attentive.

r

n

t

.

ıt

e,

e,

e-

er

I lay it down as an undoubted Truth, faid I, that true Love is one of the most respectful things in the World. It strikes with Awe and Reverence the Mind of the Man, who boafts its Impression. It is chaste and pure in Word and Deed, and cannot bear to have

the least Indecency mingled with it.

If therefore a Man, be his Birth or Quality what it will, the higher the worse, presume to wound a Lady's Ears with indecent Words: If he endeavour, in his Expressions or Sentiments, to convey gross or impure Ideas to her Mind: If he is continually preffing for ber Confidence in his Honour: If he requests Favours, which a Lady ought to refuse: If he can be regardless of his Conduct or Behaviour to her: If he can use boisterous or rude Freedoms, either to her Person or Dress ---- Here poor Miss Cope, by her Blushes, bore Witness to her Case- 1 If he avoids speaking of Marriage, when he has a fair Opportunity of doing it-[Here Mifs L. look'd down and blush'd-] or leaves it once to a Lady to wonder that he does not.

In any, or in all these Cases, he is to be suspected, and a Lady can have little Hope of fuch a Person; nor, as I humbly apprehend, consistent with Honour

and Discretion, encourage his Address.

The Ladies were so kind, as to applaud all I said, and so did the Dean. Miss Stapylton, and Miss Cope, and Miss L. were to try to recollect it when they came home, and to write down what they could remember of the Conversation: And our noble Guests coming in foon after, with Mr. B. the Ladies would

have departed; but he prevailed upon them, with some Difficulty, to pass the Evening; and Miss L. who has an admirable Finger on the Harpsichord, as I have heretofore told you, obliged us with two or three Lessons. Each of the Ladies did the like, and prevailed upon me to play a Tune or two: But Miss Cope, as well as Miss L. surpass'd me much. We all fung too in Turns, and Mr. B. took the Violin, in which he excels. Lord Davers oblig'd us on the Violoncello: Mr. H. play'd on the German Flute, and fung us a Fop's Song, and perform'd it in Character; fo that we had an exceeding gay Evening, and parted with great Satisfaction on all Sides, particularly on the young Ladies; for this put them all into good Humour, and good Spirits, enlivehing the former Scene, which otherwise might have closed, perhaps, more gravely than efficaciously.

The Distance of Time since this Conversation passed, enables me to add what I could not do, when I wrote the Account of it, which you have mislaid:

And which take briefly, as follows:

Miss Stapelton, upon her Return home, was as good as her Word, and wrote down all she could recollect of the Conversation; and I having already sent her the Letter she had desired, containing my Observations upon the slighty Style she so much admired, she suffered it to have such an Effect upon her, as to turn the Course of her Reading and Studies, to weightier and more folid Subjects; and, avoiding the Gentleman she had begun to savour, gave way to her Parents Recommendations; and is happily marry'd to Sir Jonathan Barnes.

Miss Cope came to me a Week after, with the Leave of both her Parents, and tarry'd with me three Days; in which time she open'd all her Heart to me; and return'd in such a Disposition, and with such Resolutions, that she never would see her Peer again; nor receive Letters from him, which she own'd

own'd to me she had done clandestinely before: And she is now the happy Lady of Sir Michael Beaumont, who makes her the best of Husbands, and permits her to follow her charitable Inclinations, according to a Scheme, which she consulted me upon.

Miss L. by the Dean's indulgent Prudence and Discretion, has escap'd her Rake; and, upon the Discovery of an Intrigue he was carrying on with another, conceived a just Abhorrence of him; and is since marry'd to Dr. Jenkins, as you know, with

whom the lives very happily.

Miss Sutton is not quite so well off as the three former; tho' not altogether unhappy neither, in her Way. She could not indeed conquer her Love of Dress and Tinsel; and so became the Lady of Col. Wilson: And they are thus far easy in the Marriage State, that, being seldom together, in all Probability they save a Multitude of Misunderstandings; for the Colonel loves Gaming, in which he is generally a Winner; and so passes his Time mostly in Town. His Lady has her Pleasures, neither laudable nor criminal ones, which she pursues in the Country. And now-and-then a Letter passes on both Sides, by the Inscription and Subscription of which, they remind one another, that they have been once in their Lives at one Church together.

And what now, my dear Lady G. have I to add to this tedious Account (for Letter I can hardly call.

it) but that I am, with great Affection,

y

e

e o h

d

Your true Friend and Servant,

P. B.

DECEMBER VEGES

LETTER LXI.

My dear Lady G.

Muss Fenwick told you, on her Return to Lincolnshire, I entertain my Miss Goodwin and my little
Boys. But you make me too high a Compliment,
when you tell me, it is for your own Instruction and
Example. Yet you know, my dear Lady G. be your
Motives what they will, I must obey you, although,
were others to see it, I might expose myself to the
Smiles and Contempt of Judges less prejudic'd in my
Favour. So I will begin without any further Apology; and, as near as I can, give you those very
Stories with which Miss Fenwick was so pleased, and
of which she has made so favourable a Report.

Let me acquaint you then, that my Method is, to give Characters of Perfons I have known in one Part or other of my Life, in feigned Names, whose Conduct may serve for Imitation or Warning to my dear attentive Miss; and sometimes I give Instances of good Boys and naughty Boys, for the sake of my Billy, and my Davers; and they are continually coming about me, Dear Madam, a pretty Story now, cries Miss: And, Dear Mamma, tell me of good

Boys, and of naughty Boys, cries Billy.

Miss is a surprising Child, for her Age, and is very samiliar with many of the best Characters in the Spectators; and having a Smattering of Latin, and more than a Smattering of Italian, and being a perfect Mistress of French, is seldom at a Loss for the Derivation of such Words as are not of English Original. And so I shall give you a Story in seigned Names, with which she is so delighted, that she has written

written it down. But I will first trespass on your

Patience with one of my childish Tales.

Every Day, once or twice, if I am not hinder'd, I cause Miss Goodwin, who plays and sings very prettily, to give a Tune or two to me and my Billy and my Davers, who, as well as my Pamela, love and learn to touch the Keys, young as the latter is; and she will have a sweet Finger, I can observe that; and a charming Ear; and her Voice is Musick itself!— O the fond, fond Mother! I know you will say, on reading this.

Then, Madam, we all proceed hand in hand together to the Nursery, to my Charley and Jemmy: And in this happy Retirement, so much my Delight in the Absence of my best Beloved, imagine you see me seated, surrounded with the Joy and the Hope of my future Prospects, as well as my present Com-

forts.

Miss Goodwin imagine you see, on my Right Hand, sitting on a Velvet Stool, because she is eldest, and a Miss: Billy on my Left, in a little Cane Elbow Chair, because he is eldest, and a good Boy: My Davers, and my sparkling-ey'd Pamela, with my Charley between them, on little filken Cushions at my Feet, hand in hand, their pleased Eyes looking up to my more delighted ones, and my fweetnatur'd promifing Jemmy in my Lap; the Nurses and the Cradle just behind us, and the Nursery Maids delightedly pursuing some useful Needle-work for the dear Charmers of my Heart-All as hush and as still as Silence itself, as the pretty Creatures generally are, when their little watchful Eyes fee my Lips beginning to open: For they take great notice already, of my Rule of two Ears to * one Tongue, infomuch, that if Billy or Davers are either of them

for breaking the Mum, as they call it, they are immediately hush, at any time, if I put my Finger to my Lip, or if Miss points hers to her Ear, even to the breaking of a Word in two, as it were: And yet all my Boys are as lively as so many Birds; while my Pamela is cheerful, easy, soft, gentle, always smiling, but modest and harmless as a Dove.

I began with a Story of two little Boys, and two little Girls, the Children of a fine Gentleman and a fine Lady, who lov'd them dearly: That they were all fo good, and loved one another fo well, that every body who saw them admired them, and talked of them far and near: That they would part with any thing to one another: Loved the Poor: Spoke kindly to the Servants: Did every thing they were bid to do; were not proud; and knew no Strife, but who should learn their Books best, and be the prettieft Scholar: That the Servants loved them, and would do any thing they defired; that they were not proud of fine Clothes; let not their Heads run upon their Play-things, when they should mind their Books; said Grace before they eat; their Prayers before they went to-bed, and as foon as they rose; were always clean and neat; would not tell a Fib for the World, and were above doing any thing that required one: That God bleffed them more and more, and bleffed their Papa and Mamma, and their Uncles and Aunts, and Coufins, for their Sakes. And there was a happy Family, my dear Loves!—No one idle; all prettily employed; the Mafters at their Books; the Misses at their Books too, or their Needles; except at their Play-hours, when they were never rude, nor noify, nor mischievous, nor quarrelfome: And no fuch Word was ever heard from their Mouths, as, Why may'nt I have this or that, as well as Billy or Bobby? Or, Why should Sally have this or that, any more than I? - But it was, As my Mamma pleases; My Mamma knows best:

best; and a Bow and a Smile, and no Surliness, or fcouling Brow to be feen, if they were deny'd any thing; for well did they know, that their Papa and Mamma lov'd them so dearly, that they would refuse them nothing that was for their Good; and they were fure when they were refused, they asked for fomething that would have done them hurt, had it been granted. Never were such good Boys and Girls as these! And they grew up, and the Masters became fine Scholars, and fine Gentlemen, and every body honour'd them; and the Misses became fine Ladies, and fine Housewives; and this Gentleman, when they grew to be Women, fought to marry one of the Milles, and that Gentleman the other; and happy was he that could be admitted into their Companies! So that they had nothing to do but to pick and choose out of the best Gentleman in the County: While the greatest Ladies for Birth, and the most remarkable for Virtue, (which, my Dears, is better than either Birth or Fortune) thought themselves honoured by the Addresses of the two Brothers. And they marry'd, and made good Papas and Mainmas, and were so many Bleffings to the Age in which they There, my dear Loves, were happy Sons and Daughters! For good Masters seldom fail to make good Gentlemen; and good Misses, good Ladies; and Gon bleffes them with as good Children as they were to their Parents; and so the Bleffing goes round ! -Who would not but be good?

Well, but, Mamma, we will all be good: Won't we, Master Davers? cries my Billy.—Yes, Brother Billy. Then they kis one another, and if they have Play-things, or any thing they like, exchange with each other, to shew the Effect my Lessons have upon them. But what will become of the naughty Boys? Tell us, Mamma, about the naughty Boys!

Why, there was a poor, poor Widow Woman, who had three naughty Sons, and one naughty T 5 Daughter;

Daughter; and they would do nothing that their Mamma bid them do; were always quarrelling, fcratching, and fighting; would not fay their Prayers; would not learn their Book; fo that the little Boys used to laugh at them, and point at them, as they went along, for Blockheads; and nobody loved them, or took notice of them, except to beat and thump them about, for their naughty Ways, and their Undutifulness to their poor Mother, who worked hard to maintain them. As they grew up, they grew worse and worse, and more and more flupid and ignorant, so that they impoverished their poor Mother, and at last broke her Heart, poor, poor Widow Woman !- And her Neighbours join'd together to bury the poor Widow Woman; for these fad ungracious Children made away with what little she had left, while she was ill, before her Heart was quite broken: And this helped to break it the fooner; for had she lived, she saw she must have wanted Bread, and had no Comfort from such wicked Children.

Poor, poor Widow Woman; faid my Billy, with Tears; and my little Dove shed Tears too, and Davers was moved, and Miss wiped her fine Eyes.

But what became of the naughty Boys, and the naughty Girl, Mamma?—Became of them! Why one Son was forced to go to Sea, and there he was drowned: Another turned Thief, (for he would not work) and he came to an untimely End: The third was idle, and ignorant, and nobody, who knew how he had used his poor Mother, would employ him; and so he was forced to go into a far Country, and beg his Bread. And the naughty Girl, having never loved Work, pined away in Sloth and Filthiness, and at last broke her Arm, and died of a Fever, lamenting too late, that she had been so wicked a Daughter to so good a Mother!—And so there was a sad End of all the sour ungracious Children, who never would mind

mind what their poor Mother faid to them; and God punished their Naughtiness as you see!——While the good Children I mentioned before, were the Glory of their Family, and the Delight of every body that knew them.

Who would not be good! was the Inference: And the Repetition from Billy, with his Hands clapt together, Poor, poor Widow Woman!—gave me much Pleasure.

So my childish Story ended, with a Kiss of each pretty Dear, and their Thanks for my Story: And then came on Miss's Request for a Woman's Story; as she call'd it. I dismiss'd my Babies to their Play in the Apartment allotted for that Purpose; and taking Miss's Hand, she standing before me, all Attention, began in a more womanly Strain to her; for she is very fond of being thought a Woman; and indeed is a prudent, sensible Dear, comprehends any thing instantly, and makes very pretty Resections upon what she hears or reads, as you will observe in what follows:

There is nothing, my dear Miss Goodwin, that young Ladies should be so watchful over, as their Reputation: 'Tis a tender Flower, that the least Frost will nip, the least cold Wind will blast; and when once blasted, it will never flourish again; but wither to the very Root. But this I have told you so often, that I am sure I need not repeat what I have said. So to my Story.

There were four pretty Ladies lived in one genteel Neighbourhood, the Daughters of four several Families; but all Companions, and Visitors; and yet all of very different Inclinations. Coquetilla we will call one, Prudiana another, Profusiana the third, and Prudentia the fourth; their several Names denoting their respective Qualities.

thy Baronet, by a Lady very gay, but rather indif-

creet than unvirtuous, who took not the requifite Care of her Daughter's Education, but let her be over-run with the Love of Fashions, Dress, and Equipage; and when in London, Balls, Operas, Plays, the Park, the Ring, the Withdrawing-Room, took up her whole Attention. She admir'd nobody but herfelf, flutter'd about, laughing at, and despising a Crowd of Men-Followers, whom she attracted by gay, thoughtless Freedoms of Behaviour, too nearly treading on the Skirts of Immodesty: Yet made she not one worthy Conquest, excitings on the contrary, in all fober Minds, that Contempt to herfelf, which the fo profusely would be thought to pour down upon the rest of the World. After she had several Years flutter'd about the dangerous Light, like some filly Fly, the at last finged the Wings of her Reputation; for, being despised by every worthy Heart, she became too easy and cheap a Prey to a Man the most unworthy of all her Followers, who had Resolution and Confidence enough to break through those few cobweb Reserves, in which she had incircled her precarious Virtue; and which were no longer of Force to preserve her Honour, when she met with a Man more bold and more enterprifing than herfelf, and who was as defigning as the was thoughtless. And what then became of Coquetilla? - Why, the was forced to pass over Sea. to Ireland, where nobody knew her, and to bury herfelf in a dull Obscurity; to go by another Name. and at last, unable to support a Life so unsuitable to the natural Gaiety of her Temper, she pin'd herself into a Consumption, and dy'd unpity'd and unlamented, among Strangers, having not one Friend hut whom she bought with her Money.

Poor Lady Coquetilla! faid Miss Goodwin; what a fad thing it is, to have a wrong Education; And how happy am I, who have so good a Lady to supply the

Place of a dear distant Mamina! - But be pleased,

Madam, to proceed to the next.

PRUDIANA, my Dear, was the Daughter of a Gentleman who was a Widower, and had, while the young Lady was an Infant, bury'd her Mamma. He was a good fort of Man; but had but one Lesson to teach to Prudiana, and that was, to avoid all manner of Conversation with the Men; but never gave her the right Turn of Mind, nor instilled into it that Sense of her religious Duties, which would have been her best Guard in all Temptations. For, provided the kept out of the Sight and Conversation of the Gentlemen, and avoided the Company of those Ladies who more freely converfed with the other Sex, it was all her Papa defired of her. This gave her a haughty, sullen, and reserved Turn; made her stiff, formal, and affected. She had Sense enough to discover early the Faults of Coquetilla, and, in Dislike of them, fell the more easily into that contrary Extreme which her recluse Education, and her Papa's Cautions, naturally led her. Pride, Reserve, Affectation, and Censoriousness, made up the Essentials of her Character, and she became more unamiable even than Coquetilla; and as the other was too accessible, Prudiana was quite unapproachable by Gentlemen, and unfit for any Conversation, but that of her Servants, being also deserted by those of her own Sex, by whom she might have improv'd, on account of her censorious Disposition. And what was the Consequence? Why this: Every worthy Person of both Sexes despising her, and she being used to see nobody but Servants, at last throws herself upon one of that Class: In an evil Hour, the finds fomething that is taking to her low Taste in the Person of her Papa's Valet, a Wretch so infinitely beneath her, (but a gay Coxcomb of a Servant) that every body attributed to her the Scandal of making the first Advances:

vances; for, otherwise, it was presumed, he durst not have looked up to his Master's Daughter. So here ended all her Pride. All her Reserves came to this! Her Censoriousness of others, redoubled People's Contempts upon herself, and made nobody pity her. She was, finally, turned out of Doors, without a Penny of Fortune: The Fellow was forced to set up a Barber's Shop in a Country Town; for all he knew, was to shave, and dress a Peruke; and her Papa would never look upon her more: So that Prudiana became the Outcast of her Family, and the Scorn of all that knew her; and was forced to mingle in Conversation and Company with the Wretches of her Husband's Degree!

Poor, miserable Prudiana! said Miss.— What a fad, sad Fall was hers!—— And all owing to the Want of a proper Education too!—And to the Loss of such a Mamma, as I have an Aunt; and so wise a Papa, as I have an Uncle!—How could her Papa, I wonder, restrain her Person as he did, like a poor Nun, and make her unacquainted with the generous

Restraints of the Mind.

I am sure, my dear good Aunt, it will be owing to you, that I shall never be a Coquetilla, nor a Prudiana neither. Your Table is always surrounded with the best of Company, with worthy Gentlemen, as well as Ladies; and you instruct me to judge of both, and of every new Guest, in such a manner, as makes me esteem them all, and censure nobody; but yet to see Faults in some to avoid, and Graces in others to imitate; but in nobody but yourself and my Uncle, any thing so like Perfection, as shall attract one's Admiration to one's own Ruin.

You are young yet, my Love, and must always doubt your own Strength; and pray to Goo, more and more, as your Years advance, to give you more and more Prudence, and Watchfulness over your

Conduct.

But yet, my Dear, you must think justly of yourfelf too; for let the young Gentlemen be ever fo learned and discreet, your Education entitles you to think as well of yourfelf as of them: For, don't you fee, the Ladies who are so kind to visit us, that have not been abroad, as you have been, when they were young, yet make as good Figures in Converfation, fay as good things, as any of the Gentlemen? For, my Dear, all that the Gentlemen know more than the Ladies, except here and there such a one as your dear Uncle, with all their learned Education, is only, that they have been disciplin'd perhaps, into an Observation of a few Accuracies in Speech, which, if they know no more, rather diffinguish the Pedant, than the Gentleman: Such as the avoiding of a falfe Concord, as they call it, and which you know how to do, as well as the best; not to put a was for a were, an are for an is, and to be able to speak in Mood and Tense, and such-like valuable Parts of Education: So that, my Dear, you can have no Reason to look upon that Sex in so high a Light, as to depreciate your own: and yet you must not be proud nor conceited neither; but make this one Rule your Guide:

In your maiden State, think yourself above the Gentlemen, and they'll think you so too, and address you with Reverence and Respect, if they see there be neither Pride nor Arrogance in your Behaviour, but a Consciousness of Merit, a true Dignity, such as becomes Virgin Modesty, and untainted Purity of Mind and Manners, like that of an Angel among Men; for so young Ladies should look upon themselves to be, and will then be treated as such by the

other Sex.

In your marry'd State, which is a kind of State of Humiliation for a Lady, you must think yourself subordinate to your Husband; for so it has pleased God to make the Wife. You must have no Will

Gentleman of Sense and Honour, such a one as your Uncle, he will look upon you as his Equal; and will exalt you the more, for your abasing yourself.
—In short, my Dear, he will act by you, just as your dear Uncle does by me: And then, what a happy

Creature will you be !

So I shall, Madam! To be sure I shall!—But I know I shall be happy whenever I marry, because I have such wise Directors, and such an Example before me: And if it please God, I will never think of any Man, (in pursuance of your constant Advice to young Ladies at the Tea-table) who is not a Man of Sense, and a virtuous Gentleman. But now, dear Madam, for your next Character. There are two more yet to come, that's my Pleasure! I wish there were ten!

Why the next was Profusiana, you remember, my dear Love. Profusiana took another Course to her Ruin. She fell into some of Coquetilla's Foibles, but purfued them for another End, and in another Manner. Struck with the Grandeur and Magnificence of what weak People call the Upper Life, the gives herself up to the Circus, to Balls, to Operas, to Masquerades, and Assemblies; affects to shine at the Head of all Company, at Tunbridge, at Bath, and every Place of publick Refort; plays high, is always receiving and paying Vifits, giving Balls, and making Treats and Entertainments; and is so much above the Conduct which mostly recommends a young Lady to the Esteem of the Deserving of the other Sex, that no Gentleman, who prefers folid Happiness, can think of addressing her, tho' she is a fine Person, and has many outward Graces of Behaviour. She becomes the favourite Toast of the Places she frequents, is proud of that Distinction; gives the Fashion, and delights in the Pride, that she can make Apes in Imitation, whenever the pleases. But yet, endeayourendeavouring to avoid being thought proud, makes herself cheap, and is the Subject of the Attempts of every Coxcomb of Eminence; and with much ado, preserves her Virtue, though not her Character.

What, all this while, is poor Profusiana doing? She would be glad, perhaps, of a fuitable Proposal, and would, it may be, give up some of her Gaieties and Extravagancies; for Profusiana has Wit, and is not totally destitute of Reason, when she suffers herfelf to think. But her Conduct procures her not one folid Friendship, and she has not in a twelvemonth, among a thousand Professions of Service, one Devoir that she can attend to, or a Friend that she can depend upon. All the Women she sees, if she excels them, hate her; the gay Part of the Men, with whom she accompanies most, are all in a Plot against her Honour. Even the Gentlemen, whose Conduct in the general is govern'd by Principles of Virtue, come down to these publick Places to partake of the innocent Freedoms allowed there, and oftentimes give themselves Airs of Gallantry, and never have it in their Thoughts to commence a Treaty of Marriage, with an Acquaintance begun upon that gay Spot. What folid Friendships and Satisfactions then is Profusiana excluded from?

Her Name indeed is written in every publick Window, and prostituted, as I may call it, at the Pleasure of every Prosligate, or Sot, who wears a Diamond to engrave it: And that, it may be, with most vile and barbarous Imputations and Freedoms of Words, added by Rakes, who very probably never exchanged a Syllable with her. The wounded Trees are perhaps taught also to wear the Initials of her Name, linked, not unlikely, and widening as tney grow, with those of a Scoundrel. But all this while, she makes not the least Impression upon one noble Heart: And at last, perhaps, having run on to the End of an uninterrupted Race of Foilies, she

contained .

426 PAMELA; Or,

is cheated into the Arms of some vile Fortune-hunter; who quickly lavishes away the Remains of that Fortune which her Extravagance had left; and then, after the worst Usage, abandoning her with Contempt, she sinks into an an Obscurity, that cuts short the Thread of her Life, and leaves no Remembrance, but on the brittle Glass, and more faithful Bark, that ever she had a Being.

Alas, alas! what a Butterfly of a Day, said Miss (an Expression she remember'd of Lady Towers's) was poor Profusiana!—What a sad thing to be so dazzled by worldly Grandeur, and to have so many

Admirers, and not one real Friend!

Person of a gay and lively Temperto watch over it!
And what a Rock may publick Places be to a Lady's Reputation, if she be not doubly vigilant in her Conduct, when she is exposed to the Censures and Observations of malignant Crowds of People; many of the worst of whom spare the least, those who are most unlike themselves!

But then, Madam, said Miss, would Profusiana venture to play at publick Places? Will Ladies game, Madam? I have heard you say, that Lords, and Sharpers but just out of Liveries, in Gaming, are upon a Foot in every thing, save that one has nothing to lose, and the other much, besides his Reputation? And will Ladies so disgrace their Characters, and their Sex, as to pursue this pernicious

Diversion in publick?

Yes, my Dear, they will, too often, the more's the Pity! And don't you remember, when we were at Bath, in what a Hurry I once passed by some Knots of genteel People, and you asked, what those were doing? I told you, whisperingly, they were. Gaming; and loth I was, that my Miss Goodwin should stop to see some Sights, to which, till she arrived at Years of Discretion, it was not proper to familiarize

familiarize her Eye; in some sort acting like the ancient Romans, who would not assign Punishments to certain atrocious Crimes, because they had such an high Idea of human Nature, as to suppose it incapable of committing them: So I was not for having you, while a little Girl, see those things, which I knew would give no Credit to our Sex, and which I thought, when you grew older, should be new and shocking to you: But now you are so much a Woman in Discretion, I may tell you any thing.

She kiss'd my Hand, and made me a fine Courtesy—And told me, that now she long'd to hear of Prudentia's Conduct. Her Name, Madam, said she, promises better things, than those of her three Companions; and so it had need: For how sad is it to think, that out of four Ladies of Distinction, three of them should be naughty, and, of course, unhappy—These two Words, of course, my Dear, said I, were very prettily put in: Let me kiss you for them: Since every one that is naughty, first or last, must

be certainly unhappy.

Far otherwise than what I have related, was it with the amiable PRUDENTIA. Like the industrious Bee, the makes up her Honey-hoard from every Flower, bitter as well as fweet; for every Character is of use to her, by which she can improve her own. She had the Happiness of an Aunt, who loved her, as I do you; and of an Uncle, who doted on her, as yours does: For, alas! poor Prudentia lost her Papa and Mamma almost in her Infancy, in one Week: But was so happy in her Uncle and Aunt's Care, as not to miss them in her Education, and but just to remember their Persons. By reading, by Observation, and by Attention, she daily added new Advantages to those which her Education gave her. She faw, and pitied, the fluttering Freedoms, and dangerous Flights, of COQUETILLA. The fullen Pride, the Affectation, and stiff Reserves, which PRUDIANA assum'd.

assum'd, she penetrated, and made it her Study to avoid. And the gay, hazardous Conduct, extravagant Temper, and Love of tinsell'd Grandeur, which were the Blemishes of Profusiana's Character, she dreaded and shunn'd. She fortisses herself with the excellent Examples of the past and present Ages, and knows how to avoid the Faults of the Faulty, and to imitate the Graces of the most Perfect. She takes into her Scheme of that suture Happiness, which she hopes to make her own, what are the true Excellencies of her Sex, and endeavours to appropriate to herself the domestic Virtues, which shall one Day make her the Crown of some worthy Gentleman's earthly Happiness; and which, of course, as you prettily said, my Dear, will secure and

heighten her own.

That noble Frankness of Disposition, that sweet and unaffected Openness and Simplicity, which shine in all her Actions and Behaviour, commend her to the Esteem and Reverence of all Mankind; as her Humility and Affability, and a Temper uncenforious, and ever making the best of what is said of the abfent Person, of either Sex, do to the Love of every Lady. Her Name indeed is not proftituted on Windows, nor carved on the Barks of Trees in publick Places: But it smells sweet to every Nostril, dwells on every Tongue, and is engraved on every Heart. She meets with no Address but from Men of Honour and Probity: The fluttering Coxcomb, the inveigling Parafite, the infidious Deceivery the mercenary Fortune-hunter, spread no Snares for a Heart guarded by Discretion and Prudence, as hers is. fee, that all her amiable Virtues are the happy Refult of an uniform Judgment, and the Effects of her own Wisdom, founded in an Education to which the does the highest Credit. And at last, after several worthy Offers, enough to perplex any Lady's Choice, the bleffes some one happy Gentleman, more distinguish'd than the rest, for Learning, good Sense, and true Politeness, which is but another Word for Virtue and Honour; and shines, to her last Hour, in all the Duties of domestick Life, as an excellent Wise, Mother, Mistress, Friend, and Christian; and so confirms all the Expectations of which her Maiden Life had given such strong and such edisying Presages.

Then folding my dear Miss in my Arms, and kissing her, Tears of Pleasure standing in her pretty Eyes, Who would not, said I, shun the Examples of the Coquetilla's, the Prudiana's, and the Profusiana's of this World, and choose to imitate the Character of PRUDENTIA!—the Happy and the Happy-making Prudentia!

O Madam! Madam! faid the dear Creature, fmothering me with her rapturous Kisses, PRUDENTIA is YOU!—Is YOU indeed!——It can be nobody else!—O teach me good GOD! to follow your Example, and I shall be a SECOND PRUDENTIA—Indeed I shall!

God send you may, my beloved Miss! And may He bless you more, if possible, than Prudentia was blessed!

And so, my dear Lady G. you have some of my Nursery Tales; with which, relying on your kind Allowance and Friendship, I conclude myself:

Your affectionate and faithful

P. B.

CON-

CONCLUSION.

THE Editor thinks proper to conclude in this Place, that he may not be thought to deserve a Suspicion, that the Extent of the Work was to be measured but by the Patience of its Readers. But he thinks it necessary, in order to elucidate the Whole, to subjoin a brief Note of the following Facts.

Mr. B. (after the Affair which took Date at the Masquerade, and concluded so happily) continued to be one of the best and most exemplary of Men, an Honour to his Country, both in his publick and private Capacity; having, at the Instances of some of his Friends, in very elevated Stations, accepted of an honourable Employment abroad in the Service of the State; which he discharged in such a manner, as might be expected from his Qualifications, and Knowledge of the World : And on his Return, after an Absence of Three Years, resisting all the Temptations of Ambition, devoted himself to his privater Duties, and joined with his excellent Lady in every pious Wish of her Heart: Adorning the married Life with all the Warmth of an elegant Tenderness: Belov'd by his Tenants, respected by his Neighbours, rever'd by his Children, and almost ador'd by the Poor, in every County where his Estates gave him Interest, as well for his own bountiful Temper, as for the Charities which he permitted to be difpensed, with so liberal a Hand, by his Lady.

She made him the Father of Seven fine Children, Five Sons, and Two Daughters, all adorned and accomplished by Nature, to be the Joy and Delight of such Parents; being educated, in every Respect, by the Rules of their inimitable Mother, laid down in that Book which she mentions to have been written

by her for the Revisal and Correction of her Confort; the Contents of which may be gather'd from her Remarks upon Mr. Locke's Treatise of Education, in her Letters to Mr. B. and in those to Lady G.

Miss Goodwin, at the Age of Eighteen, was married to a young Gentleman of fine Parts, and great Sobriety and Virtue: And both she and he, in every material Part of their Conduct, and in their Behaviour to one another, emulated the good Ex-

amples set them by Mr. and Mrs. B.

Lord DAVERS dying Two Years before this Marriage, his Lady went to reside at the Hall in Lincolnshire, the Place of her Birth, that she might enjoy the Company and Conversation of her excellent Sister; who, for Conveniency of the Chapel, and Advantage of Room and Situation, had prevailed upon Mr. B. to make that the chief Place of his Residence; and there the noble Lady lived long (in the strictest Friendship with the happy Pair) an honourable Relict of her affectionate Lord.

The worthy Mr. ANDREWS, and his Wife, lived together in the sweet Tranquillity, set forth in their Letters, for the Space of twelve Years, at the Kentish Farm: The good old Gentlewoman died first, sull of Years and Comfort, her dutiful Daughter performing the last pious Offices to so beloved and soloving a Parent: Her Husband surviving her about a Year only.

Lady G. Miss DARNFORD that was, after a happy Marriage of several Years, died in Childbed of her Fourth Child; to the inexpressible Concern of her affectionate Consort, and of her dear Friend Mrs. B.

Lord H. after having suffered great Dishonour by the ill Courses of his Wise, and great Devastations in his Estate, thro' her former Debts, and continued Extravagance, (intimidated and dispirited by her perpetual Insults, and those of her gaming Brother, who with his bullying Friends terrify'd him into all their Measures) threw himself upon the Protection of Mr. B.

who,

432 CONCLUSION.

who, by his Spirit and Prudence, faved him from utter Ruin, punish'd his Wife's Accomplices, and obliged her to accept of a separate Maintenance; and then, taking his Affairs into his own Management, in due Course of Time intirely re-established them: And, after some Years, his Wife dying, he became wifer by his past Sufferings, and married a second, of Lady Davers's Recommendation; who, by her Prudence and Virtue, made him happy for the Remainder of his Days.

Mr. Longman lived to a great Age in the worthy Family, much esteemed by every one, having train'd up a diligent Youth, whom he had recommended, to ease him in his Business, and who, answering Expec-

tation, succeeded him in it, after his Death.

He dying rich, out of his great Love and Gratitude to the Family, in whose Service he had acquired most of his Fortune, and in Disgust to his nearest Relations, who had perverfely disobliged him, he bequeathed to Three of them One hundred Pounds a-piece, and left all the rest to his honoured Principal, Mr. B.; who, as foon as he came to know it. being at that time abroad, directed his Lady to call together the Relations of the old Gentleman; and, after touching them to the Heart with a just and effectual Reproof, and finding them filled with due Sense of their Demerit, which had been the Cause of their suffering, then to divide the Whole, which had been left him, among them, in greater Proportions, as they were more nearly related: An Action worthy of so generous and ennobled a Spirit; and which procured him the Prayers and Bleffings, not only of the Benefited, but all who heard of it. For it is easy to imagine, how cheerfully, and how gracefully, his benevolent Lady discharged a Command so well fuited to her natural Generofity.

The END.



1 of it re